THE GREAT RULER

BOOK 01

Heavenly Silkworm Potato

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

The Great Ruler

(大主宰)

by

Heavenly Silkworm Potato

Tian Can Tu Dou

(天蚕土豆)

Synopsis

The Great Thousand World. It is a place where numerous planes intersect, a place where many clans live and a place where a group of lords assemble. The Heavenly Sovereigns appear one by one from the Lower Planes and they will all display a legend that others would desire as they pursue the road of being a ruler in this boundless world.

In the Endless Fire Territory that the Flame Emperor controls, thousands of fire blazes through the heavens.

Inside the Martial Realm, the power of the Martial Ancestor frightens the heaven and the earth.

At the West Heaven Temple, the might of the Emperor of a Hundred Battles is absolute.

In the Northern Desolate Hill, a place filled with thousands of graves, the Immortal Owner rules the world.

A boy from the Northern Spiritual Realm comes out, riding on a Nine Netherworld Bird, as he charges into the brilliant and diverse world. Just who can rule over their destiny of their path on becoming a Great Ruler? In the Great Thousand World, many strive to become a Great Ruler.

Acknowledgement

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Thyaeria @ WuxiaWorld

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ Hasseno Blog

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 1 – Northern Spiritual Academy

The scorching sun was like a flame. The burning sunlight poured down from the sky, causing the entire land to be in transpiration. The slightly drooped willows and the disappearing leaves made it seem like it was sickly in appearance.

Within the clearing where the sunlight projected through the branches and leaves, several hundred figures were quietly sitting cross-legged. It was a group of young men and women. At that time, all of them have a serious expression while they closed their eyes. They would let out their breaths periodically, showing a rhythmic beat. As they breathe in and out, subtle lights which are difficult to be seen with the naked eye would appear in their surroundings.

The gentle breeze blew quietly and caused their clothes to flutter. It was quite a spectacular sight.

In front of the hundreds of shadows, there is a stone platform. On top of the stone platform, there, too, was a figure quietly sitting cross-legged. His hands were attuned to each other; his fingers were overlapping as he closed his eyes. It was as if he had entered a certain state of cultivation.

The figure also had a youthful appearance. He had a soft and slightly disheveled black hair, yet his seemingly innocent face was a little thin. It gave off a very comfortable feeling when others looked at him.

At this moment, many lights that could be seen with the naked eye were surrounding the boy. And from those lights, a mysterious energy seemed to be rushing into his body.

Below the stone, many youths suddenly opened their eyes. They looked at the lights surrounding the boy on the stone platform and could not resist licking their lips. An envious expression appeared on their faces and whispers began to destroy the earlier silence.

“Brother Mu really is amazing. All of us are still sensing the Spiritual Aura within the world, but he has already successfully entered the Spiritual Movement Stage. As expected from the number one person in our East Branch Earth Class.”

“Heh, that’s of course. Don’t just mention the East Branch, I think that there aren’t many people of the same age who can compare with Brother Mu in the entire Northern Spiritual Academy.”

A boy in grey clothes that was close to the front seemed to be quite familiar with the boy on the stone platform. He could hear everybody’s whispers and could not help but smile. He lowered his voice and said “Brother Mu is a person who was selected and participated in the “Spiritual Road”. Within the entire Northern Spiritual Realm, only Brother Mu obtained the right to participate in it. You should know that the ones who participate in the “Spiritual Road” are all monsters, right? Back then, the entire Northern Spiritual Realm was bustling because of that matter. The people that came out from there will basically be accepted by the “Five Great Academies.”

“Five Great Academies?” Many youths heard the words which were extremely dazzling to them and could not help but swallow. A boiling desire filled their eyes. That place could be regarded as the ultimate dream for all the youths. Not only was the selection for the “Five Great Academies” harsh, the ones that could enter them were all geniuses. No matter who enters it, they would have a promising future.

“Brother Mu really is amazing...B...But Brother Mu only seemed to have participated in it for a year...I heard others say that Brother Mu is the first person to be kicked out of the “Spiritual Road” before the time was over...”

A boy hesitated and quietly said that. However, he soon added: “All of us know Brother Mu’s abilities, even those geniuses that came from all over the world and are inside the “Spiritual Road”,

Brother Mu will not be inferior to them. He must have been kicked out because he received an unfair treatment!”

Many boys and girls looked at each other. This matter was not something secret within the Northern Spiritual Academy and even within the entire Northern Spiritual Realm. While they felt regret from it, they were also quite curious. They wanted to know the reason why the brilliant and slightly arrogant Brother Mu that they believed in would be kicked out of the “Spiritual Road”.

The boy in grey clothes pouted his lips and said in disapproval: “Hmph, it must be that the people in the “Spiritual Road” were jealous of Brother Mu and they used various means to force him out. But’s that’s fine, with Brother Mu’s abilities, he will be able to enter the “Five Great Academies” eventually. At that time, people will naturally understand.”

The youths all understood the message. Although they knew that the Brother Mu that they were talking about was extremely talented, but the Five Great Academies wasn’t that easy to enter. After all, he had only trained in the “Spiritual Road” for one year. It cannot be mentioned as a successful training. Compared to the geniuses that truly came out of the “Spiritual Road”, there should be quite a bit of a difference.

“BAM!”

However, just when they were discussing about this, a piece of shattered wood suddenly flew down from the stone platform and hit the forehead of the boy in grey clothes. A scolding voice soon followed: “Su Ling, did you really just treat me as a decoration? You don’t think I will inform Teacher Mo and make all of you stay in the East Branch for Tutorial Training during the next vacation?”

Many boys and girls hurriedly looked up. They could see that the boy, who was training on top of the Stone Platform, had opened up his eyes. The pair of pitch-black eyes were like the night sky. The

place where the Spiritual Aura was at the fullest was at the mouth. It was showing a slight smile. The smile was warm and bright and like a finishing touch, it made the boy's face appear to be more handsome.

They must admit that the boy had quite the taste.

"Hehe, Brother Mu, don't. We finally have a break, I still want to head back for some fun. If my father knew that I did something this disgraceful, he would definitely beat me to death." The boy in grey clothes clutched his forehead and let out a smile.

The boys and girls in the surrounding all let out sounds of laughter, causing the atmosphere to become quite lively.

"You also know that your father is quite vicious. If you are not able to advance into the Spiritual Movement Stage in 3 months, you're just waiting to be hit." The boy called Mu Chen shook his head and said with a sigh.

"How is it that easy to advance into the Spiritual Movement Stage. I am not a monster like you, Brother Mu, who could casually participate in the "Spiritual Road"." Su Ling pouted his mouth and immediately blocked his mouth. Although this matter was not a secret within the entire Northern Spiritual Realm and Mu Chen did not forbid it, the matter of being kicked out was not a glorious act.

The boy called Mu Chen let out a smile. His expression did not change much and he raised his head slightly. He stared at the branches that were mangled with light spots and his eyes clearly showed a complex and nostalgic appearance.

The Spiritual Road, huh...

I wonder how those people are doing, they should have finished their training already. If that's the case, they will soon be able to enter the "Five Great Academies".

She, too...

Mu Chen bit his lips. A girl in black dress with a cold and pretty face as well as a slim figure; who would carry a dark black long sword on her back at any time, flashed through his mind.

As the image of the beautiful girl moved, her bright silver hair that shone like the milky way danced along with the wind.

It was this mysterious and cold girl, who would make others feel like she was insane once she started training, who chased him for over half a year in the Spiritual Road in order to kill him. The reason behind it was that he saved her once. This was also the reason why Mu Chen bit his lips.

However, when he was finally forced to leave, she was the first one to wield her sword and block the person in front of him without any hesitation.

Thinking about the face, which never held a hint of expression and had the potential to cause a disaster, display a slight, cold killing intent, Mu Chen could not resist and fell into a trance.

How nostalgic.

“Ohhh, isn’t it little Brother Mu, who was the only one in the Northern Spiritual Realm to participate in the “Spiritual Road”? You were bringing others to train again? No wonder Teacher Mo would think highly of you.”

Just when Mu Chen was immersed in these complex feelings, a slightly stingy voice rang out. His calm face looked up and he could see a dozen figures walking over slowly. The leader was a boy with an arrogant face. At this moment, he was chewing on some grass and smiled as he looked at Mu Chen.

“Liu Che, what are the West Branch people planning to do over here at the East Branch? Are you looking for a beating?!” The boy, who Mu Chen referred to as Su Ling, stood up and sneered when he saw the group of people.

The hundreds of East Branch students in the open space also

stood up. They showed an unwelcoming gaze towards the people that are approaching. With numbers, they had quite the momentum.

Within this Northern Spiritual Academy, it is divided into East Branch and West Branch. The two Branches would often have many competitions. But overall, the West Branch has always been stronger than the East Branch in the past. In front of the West Branch, many East Branch Students would avoid them. However, during this one year, the situation changed a lot. The reason behind this change was because of the presence of Mu Chen.

Three months ago, in a competition between the two Earth Class Students of the Two Branches, the number 3 of the West Branch, Xue Dong, had lost to Mu Chen. This allowed many East Branch students to finally vent out their feelings and also caused the West Branch to become less arrogant.

And now, the people from the West Branch actually ran over to provoke Mu Chen. Su Ling and the others could not endure this.

“Oh, so the East Branch is actually becoming more and more cocky. Did you think that with just Mu Chen, you can challenge the West Branch?”

Liu Chen saw the group of people from the East Branch, yet he did not show any fear. Instead, he lifted up the corner of his mouth and pointed at a high platform nearby and said as he grinned: “Do you dare to test it out with a fight?”

Su Ling and the others looked over. They could see many figures standing at the high platform. These figures were all looking over towards this side and after seeing the familiar faces, the expression of Su Ling and the others changed.

“It’s the West Branch’s Heaven Class seniors...”

Within the Northern Spiritual Academy, it is not only split into East and West Branch. It is also divided into Earth and Heaven

Class and Mu Chen and them were only in the Earth Class. The people standing on the high platform were all seniors of the West Branch Heaven Class. Their strength is naturally much more powerful than them.

The moment the expression of Su Ling and the others changed, the Heaven Class seniors all laughed at them from above and began to talk with each other.

“So that is the East Branch’s Mu Chen? He is currently someone famous within the Northern Spiritual Academy and even within the Northern Spiritual Realm. I can’t believe he advanced to the Spiritual Movement Stage at such an age. Although it is only the Initial Phase of the Spiritual Movement Stage, but he has the qualifications to ascend to Heaven Class. That’s quite amazing.”

“That’s pretty good. So a talent finally appears out of the East Branch. When he ascends to the Heaven Class, there will probably be a bit of pressure for us, West Branch Heaven Class.”

“It was said that this boy was selected to participate in the “Spiritual Road”. However, he was kicked out for an unknown reason. It’s quite funny, it’s the first time I’ve heard of such a thing.”

“Could it be that it selected the wrong person, so it threw him out?”

“Haha”

Among the group, there was a girl in red clothes. She had a slender figure and skin that was just like snow. Her beautiful oval shape face was somewhat charming. She leaned against the railing and looked at the open space with her beautiful eyes. Then, her gaze stopped at the boy called Mu Chen as if she had great interest in him.

“Ah, Hong Ling, you seem to know Mu Chen right?” A senior from the Heaven Class smiled as he asked. From everyone’s

position, it is evident that she was the central figure of this small group.

“Yes, his father is one of the Territory Lords within the Northern Spiritual Realm. It can be considered that we have some relationship with each other. We played together when we were young.” The girl called Hong Ling said casually.

“It was said that he seemed to like you at first?”

Hong Ling blinked. She looked at the boy that was sitting straight-legged nearby. At this moment, a beam of sunlight pierced through the branches and leaves and landed directly on the boy’s face. It formed a faint light arc and it was extremely pleasing to the eyes. This caused the girl to stare blankly for a bit. She seemed to vaguely recall the boy that chased after her butt when she was little. Only back then, he did not have any compelling features. She, too, did not pay much attention to him. However, who would have imagined that this boy, who had grown apart from her, would actually become the only one to receive the qualifications to participate in the “Spiritual Road” in the Northern Spiritual Realm. Back then, Mu Chen was quite the celebrity, but that too, began to fade when he was suddenly kicked out of the “Spiritual Road”.

“That was when we were young, how could that be considered as liking me?” Hong Ling let out a smile as if she did not care, but her eyes stared at Mu Chen once more. Right now, the latter had followed her and entered the Northern Spiritual Academy. He then began to reveal his outstanding talents. Although he has not become the number one in the Northern Spiritual Academy, the fact that this excellent person liked her gave her some face. Even if she knew that deep inside, this matter was more like a rumor, but a girl would still feel some pride in it at this age.

“Haha, Hong Ling’s taste isn’t that normal. Although this Mu Chen is quite good, but he still hasn’t made Hong Ling fall for him. Could it be that you didn’t see that even Lin Xiu failed? That is a

superb individual who is ranked seventh in the Northern Spiritual Academy. He has already advanced to the Spiritual Movement Middle Phase. There is quite a gap between him and Mu Chen."

"It seems that the only one within the Northern Spiritual Academy, who could make Hong Ling take a second look, is Big Brother Liu Mubai."

The moment the name Liu Mubai was mentioned, even the expressions of the Heaven Class seniors paused for a bit as if they felt a little pressure.

Ranked first in the Northern Spiritual Academy, Liu Mubai, his father is also the largest Territory Lord in the Northern Spiritual Realm and he was famed for his great strength.

Whether it was appearance or strength or even his background, it is a name that would easily attract a number of infatuated girls within the Northern Spiritual Academy.

In the eyes of the West Branch students, everybody knew that Liu Mubai and Hong Ling were quite close. Although he has not yet plucked the prideful flower of the West Branch, but it should just be a matter of time before that happens.

If Mu Chen were to successfully pass through the trial of the "Spiritual Road" and obtain the qualifications to enter the "Five Great Academies", that fame would naturally surpass Liu Mubai. Unfortunately, he was somehow kicked out of there.

As a result, no matter who, when they compared the two of them, they would only laugh at Mu Chen.

Chapter 2 – The Boy Kicked Out From the Spiritual Road

Su Ling and the others stared at the west branch seniors on the high platform. Their imposing manner also became slightly weaker, especially when they saw the girl known as Hong Ling. Their eyes became passionate at first, then shrank down. She is a truly influential person within the Northern Spiritual Academy. There are quite a few followers even within the east branch for her.

“Oi, Brother Mu, that is the west branch’s senior Hong Ling. There was a rumor that you liked her as a child…” Su Ling leaned over to Mu Chen and whispered as he chuckled.

After hearing this, Mu Chen could not help but bat an eye towards him. He, indeed, had some sort of relationship with Hong Ling when he was young, but at that age, who would know what love is? He simply wanted to find a playmate. However, his father and Hong Ling’s father started to get in a discord quite often for the past few years. The relationship between both sides had gradually grown apart. It was unknown how this kind of rumor came up.

Mu Chen could only helplessly shake his head. Then, he stared at Liu Che, who had a provocative look on his face. A faint light of Spiritual Energy began to come out of his body and he slowly clasped his palms.

“If you have something to say, then hurry up and say it.”

Mu Chen looked at the few individuals standing at the high platform nearby. His gaze stopped for a moment on that slender figure, then he retracted his sight: “Even though they are here, but if I want to beat you up, you would still suffer pain on your flesh even if they stop me.”

Towards the arrogant bastards from the west branch, he did not like them as well.

“You!”

After Liu Che heard Mu Chen’s words, his eyes suddenly showed fury. However, just after he shouted out angrily, he noticed that Mu Chen’s mouth lowered slightly. The originally soft and brilliant face suddenly had a cold feeling coming out of it. This cold feeling was like a wild and ice-like knife.

This feeling was like the awakening of a storm and it, inadvertently, revealed an extraordinary sharpness.

This feeling was absolutely something that an innocent youth would not be able to possess at this age.

Liu Che swallowed the cry within his mouth. He stared in surprise at Mu Chen and his facial color changed. He was definitely slightly afraid of the latter’s strength. When Mu Chen defeated Xue Dong from the West Branch Earth Class, he was there at the scene.

“Oh, he really is quite insolent.”

The seniors of the West Branch Heaven Class, who were standing at the high platform, heard these words as well. They immediately began to frown and felt that they lost some face, especially because Hong Ling was present.

Hong Ling also looked a little surprised at Mu Chen. She did not imagine that the seemingly gentle boy would also have such a masculine side to him. He seemed to be quite different than the boy back then.

A couple of the West Branch Heaven Class Seniors could not endure it, jumped down the high platform and walked over slowly. Seeing them come over, Su Ling and the others all took a step back and were completely alert.

Noticing this, Hong Ling did not stop them. After all, she was a

person from the West Branch and she, too, wanted to see whether the boy, who seemed ordinary to her before, would truly be dazzling after leaving his childhood.

“Brother Tong.” After Liu Che noticed that these people were walking over, he felt happy. Then, his eyes showed off a prideful feeling again as he looked at Mu Chen and the others.

Seeing this, Mu Chen frowned slightly. However, there was not much fear within his expression. Although they were Heaven Class Seniors, their strength was only at the Spiritual Movement Stage Initial Phase. If they were to really fight, then they wouldn’t be in an advantage either.

The leading senior called Brother Tong nodded his head. His eyes stared at Mu Chen. But just when he wanted to speak, a sudden shout rang out from nearby.

“Tong Guan, you, West Branch Heaven Class people, actually came to the East Branch to bully our Earth Class Students. You really don’t put the East Academy within your sights, huh?”

The sudden shout made everybody freeze. After turning their heads around, they could see many figures rapidly coming from nearby. In the very front was a tall girl. Her black clothes were like ink and it outlined a graceful curve. Her face was extremely pretty and her long bluish black hair was tied into a ponytail. Her long legs were slender and slim and her beauty was in no way inferior to Hong Ling.

At this moment, the girl had a cold expression as she stared at Tong Guan and the others. The people behind her also had an unwelcoming expression.

“It’s Senior Qian’Er”

When Su Ling saw the girl in black clothes, he immediately became excited. A little bit of his innocent, youthful face turned slightly red. This person was known as one of the two flowers of

the northern spiritual academy along with Hong Ling. Their suitors were numerous, he did not imagine that he would actually meet her here.

“Ohh, so it’s Qian’Er.”

When Tong Guan saw the girl in black clothes, he was also startled. His expression did not seem natural. Not only did Tang Qian’Er have many suitors within the Northern Spiritual Academy, her strength had also reached the Spiritual Movement Middle Phase. Within the Heaven Class of the Northern Spiritual Academy, she was considered to be quite excellent.

The girl named Tang Qian’Er came to the side of Mu Chen. Her narrow eyes looked at Tong Guan, then she looked at Hong Ling, who was at the high platform. The two girls stared at each other unyieldingly and sparks seemed to fly from their eyes.

“Why did you come over here?” Tang Qian’Er retracted her gaze and coldly asked.

“Look at this point. Although we are people from the west branch, the west branch is still part of the northern spiritual academy. Thus, it shouldn’t be illegal for us to come over here, right.” Tong Guan shrugged and smiled.

Tang Qian’Er issued out a cold hmph sound, then she extended her slender hands and patted on Mu Chen’s shoulders. She lowered her pointed chin and said: “Mu Chen is one of the east branch’s people, if you dare to cause trouble for him, then don’t blame me for not being polite.”

As she talked, her black ponytail bounced valiantly and she seemed to have a style of a Big Sister.

“It seems that your luck with the ladies is quite good.” Tong Guan smiled at Mu Chen. The smile had a bit of mockery and a bit of jealousy. He also had some thoughts towards Tang Qian’Er, only that he never obtained any good intentions from her.

“Having luck with the ladies is also a type of strength.” Mu Chen smiled as if he did not hear the mockery within his words. Compared to those guys from the Spiritual Road, Tong Guan was really too inexperienced.

From the high platform, Hong Ling looked at Mu Chen. She was somewhat disappointed and retracted her gaze. Was he still so lazy and cowardly like before?

“Forget it, we did not come here to cause trouble to you today. We only wanted to inform you of one thing.”

Seeing that he would not be able to incite Mu Chen’s fury, Tong Guan also felt bored. He waved his hand towards Liu Chen and the latter, let out a cold smile and said: “Mu Chen, I am representing Big Brother Liu Yang to deliver you a message. Ten days later, during the competition between the two branches, he will select you as his opponent.”

“Liu Yang?”

Hearing this name, the color on Su Ling and the others’ faces changed. Liu Yang is the true number one within the west branch earth class. It was said that he recently advanced to the spiritual movement stage.

“Ah, that’s right. I’ll tell you something else as well. Three days ago, when Big Brother Liu Yang was tested, they discovered that he possesses a Spiritual Pulse. Although it is only Human Level…” Liu Chen gloated as he stared at Mu Chen and smiled.

“Human Level Spiritual Pulse?!”

When these words were said, not only did Su Ling and the other’s facial complexion change, even Tang Qian’Er was slightly moved. Within the entire Northern Spiritual Academy, there will never be more than a handful of students who possess a Spiritual Pulse. Who would have imagined that Liu Yang actually had it too?

“Human Level Spiritual Pulse…” Tong Guan smacked his lips and

gave a pitiful stare at Mu Chen. Liu Yang also had the strength of a Spiritual Movement Initial Phase, but if you include the Human Level Spiritual Pulse, it would be difficult for a Spiritual Movement Middle Phase to defeat him. It appears that Mu Chen was out of luck.

“Big Brother Liu Yang said that it is fine if you do not dare to accept it. But just don’t show up on that day, then he would not embarrass you.” Liu Chen had a strange smile. If Mu Chen did not appear on that day, then his reputation within the East Branch would shatter instantly.

“You’re bullying him way too much!” Tang Qian’Er frowned as she shouted.

“Senior Qian’Er, you shouldn’t blame us. A person should always maintain a low-profile. He shouldn’t believe that he could be proud because he obtained the qualification to the “Spiritual Road” due to luck.” Liu Chen said and curled his lips up.

“You!”

Tang Qian’Er flew into fury. But just before she headed forward, a hand gripped onto her shoulder. She turned her head around and saw that a brilliant smile appeared on Mu Chen’s face: “Yes, go tell Liu Yang that I will be waiting for him.”

“How courageous! Then we will wait to see your excellent performance.”

Liu Chen gave a thumbs up to Mu Chen and grinned. He then laughed as he turned away. With his expression, it was evident that he could not wait until the competition ten days later.

After Liu Chen, Tong Guan and the others left, Hong Ling, who was on the high platform, stared at him for a while before turning around leaving as well.

“Brother Mu, are you really going to accept that Liu Yang’s challenge? It won’t be easy to deal with him now since he has a

Spiritual Pulse.” Su Ling and the others stared at the departing Tong Guan and asked in concern.

“I’ll do my best.” Mu Chen casually said.

“Oi, you’re so stupid. They were obviously provoking you. Now, you must accept the challenge!” Tang Qian’Er said with an irritated voice.

“Relax, Sister Qian’Er, I know what I’m doing.” Mu Chen smiled.

Tang Qian’Er frowned in puzzlement. Her eyes stared at his innocent face. He seemed to have a bright and gentle smile, but she did not know why she felt something hidden deep inside his eyes.

“Hmph, anyways, I won’t be the one to be disgraced when that happens.” Tang Qian’Er let out a sigh and said with dissatisfaction.

“Sister Qian’Er seems to be very concerned about me?” Mu Chen stared at the irritated, yet beautiful face and could not help but laugh as he said that.

“I don’t care if you are dead.” Tang Qian’Er’s face flushed for abit. She immediately batted her eye at Mu Chen and said: “I was only worried that you were beaten half to death and will disgrace the East Branch’s face.”

Mu Chen smiled. Tang Qian’Er’s father is also one of the Territory Lords within the Northern Spiritual Realm and had an excellent relationship with his father. The two families always contacted each other, so his relationship with Tang Qian’Er was also very good.

“That’s right, there was one news that I heard recently.” Tang Qian’Er waved at Su Ling to move them out of the way and then her eyes stared at Mu Chen: “I heard it from the principal. It seems that the “Spiritual Road” has finally ended.”

Mu Chen’s body trembled and he looked up. He let out a breath, so it was finally over…

“It was said that there were many insane individuals that appeared in the Spiritual Road this time. Among them, there is one that is extremely terrifying. He seemed to have the Heaven Level Spiritual Pulse that is rarely seen even within ten thousand years. The Five Great Academies were fighting so much for him that they were bleeding.”

The Spiritual Pulse is divided into 3 types: Heaven, Earth and Human. It will bring numerous benefits to their training. In general, a person who possesses a Spiritual Pulse would have a much faster training speed compared to normal individuals. They would also experience many shortcuts. And for so many years, there was never an Earth Level Spiritual Pulse that appeared within the Northern Spiritual Academy, not to mention even a Heaven Level Spiritual Pulse. From this, you can see just how rare a Spiritual Pulse is.

Tang Qian’Er stuck out her red tongue and was extremely cute and lovely: “A Heaven Level Spiritual Pulse. I’ve never seen one before. As expected, the ones that participated in the Spiritual Road are all insane people. That’s right, that’s right, you also participated in the Spiritual Road, do you know who that person is?”

“He should be ...Ji Xuan, right? Mu Chen said in a faint voice. It was a name that was etched deeply into his memory.

“You know him?” Tang Qian’Er said in surprise.

“Yes, I know him. He is indeed quite an amazing person.” Mu Chen smiled, lowered his eyes and said: “I nearly killed him”.

Tang Qian’Er’s beautiful eyes widened up. She stared at the innocent face in front of her that suddenly turned cold. She stammered as she asked: “Is that true?”

“It’s a lie, you actually believed in it? I was a person who was kicked out in the middle, how could I compare with the superb individual that the Five Great Academies were fighting over to

get?” Mu Chen’s cold expression vanished instantly. He stared at Tang Qian’Er with a surprised expression and could not resist laughing.

Tang Qian’Er bit her teeth in resentment. She seemed to want to bite him twice, but she still endured it. She said with a sigh: “You only advanced to the Spiritual Movement Stage, you haven’t learned any Spiritual Arts yet, right? I heard that Liu Yang has already been practicing.”

“Spiritual Arts, huh. I will learn some when I go back this time. It’s just the right time, my dad told me to find him after I advanced to the Spiritual Movement Stage.” Mu Chen smiled as he spoke.

“Yes, then I’m leaving first.” Tang Qian’Er nodded. Mu Chen’s father was still one of the Territory Lords within the Northern Spiritual Realm. He should be able to prepare a decent Spiritual Art for Mu Chen. Thus, she did not say much more and waved her hand. Her ponytail swung as she twisted her body to leave.

“That’s right.”

Tang Qian’Er walked gracefully for a bit then turned her head back to stare at Mu Chen. She thought for a while and said: “If you do not think that you have any chance of winning, how about I beat that guy Liu Yang for you? Although his Big Brother Liu Mubai would be a bit troublesome…”

“Can’t you believe in me a bit more? Mu Chen said helplessly. How did she even think of such a method?

“Hmph, you fail to understand a person’s kindness.”

Tang Qian’Er said angrily. If other people in the Northern Spiritual Academy wanted her help, she would refuse to do so. But yet why would this guy be the only one to have a detestable expression. After thinking up to this point, she stormed away in anger.

Mu Chen watched Tang Qian’Er’s moving figure disappearing.

He also let out a smile and immediately muttered: “Since the Spiritual Road has ended, she should have entered the Five Great Academies as well, right? I wonder which one she has entered?”

Thinking back when he had to leave, among the lush forest, a girl with long, silver hair used a pair of green eyes and watched him quietly.

“I will wait for you at the Five Great Academies, if you do not come…”

Within the girl’s slender hand, she was holding a sword. She lifted it up until it was in front of his chest and gently poked him at the location of his heart. “I will kill him, but…”

The girl stared at him with her eyes as clear as glass.

“I do not like people who readily admit their failure, but this time, it can’t be considered as your loss, at least I liked it.”

The gentle wind blew and raised the girl’s proud and bright silver hair. On her cold, white face, a slight tint of red appeared. Although it was faint, it was still dazzlingly beautiful.

“So, you must come!”

Chapter 3 – Mu Territory

The Northern Spiritual Realm is split into Nine Territories. Each one is controlled by a lord and between these nine territories, they are either allied or oppose each other. That is also how the Northern Spiritual Realm has always maintained the situation of Nine Territories.

Aside from the Nine Territories, there is still a powerful force to be reckoned with in the Northern Spiritual Realm. That is the Northern Spiritual Academy. However, compared to the Nine Territories that caused many disputes, the Northern Spiritual Realm has always maintained neutral. They do not have any ambition for competing over the land. They would only stick to their area and attract students over. It is because of this that the Northern Spiritual Academy has such a high status within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

And the Northern Spiritual Academy also holds the spots which will allow them to enter the “Five Great Academies”. This is something that all the various lords want. Because they all understood, although they had a decent position within the Northern Spiritual Realm, but they could not compare to the “Five Great Academies”. Thus, they would send their children, once they are of age, to the Northern Spiritual Academy to train in order to obtain these spots.

Therefore, the force that one must not offend within the Northern Spiritual Realm is the Northern Spiritual Academy.

Mu Territory, Mu City.

The moment that Mu Chen walked out of the Transfer Spiritual Array, a bustling sound entered his ears. He looked at the prospering Mu City and let out a slight smile.

The Mu City is the main city within the Mu Territory and his father Mu Feng is the Mu Territory’s Lord.

“Little Lord?”

“Little Lord, you came back from the Northern Spiritual Academy?”

“Hurry and report to the Territory Lord!”

Near the Transfer Spiritual Array, there were a few Mu Territory guards protecting it. The instant that they saw the boy walking out of the Spiritual Array, they were surprised for a moment, but soon they suddenly rejoiced and came over.

“I’ve troubled all of you, but it’s fine if I go back myself.” Mu Chen directed a smile towards the guards. He grew up in this place and was familiar with many people. Although he was the son of the Territory Lord, his attitude was excellent. Thus, he was quite welcomed within the Mu Territory.

He said farewell to the passionate guards and flew off towards the center of the city. Shortly after, a large Estate appeared within his eyes. In front of the Estate, there were two large words “Mu Estate”.

It was evident that the Mu Estate was heavily guarded. However, Mu Chen did not care about it all and directly ran inside. The guards also let out a warm smile after they recognized him and bowed down to him. Following that, they no longer cared about it.

“Dad!”

Mu Chen charged into the Estate and stormed into the Living Room. He then noticed that there were two figures. On the seat of the host was a man with a black robe. He had an upright body and a determined expression on his face. The only thing that made him look slightly old was the white hair floating out of his head, but you could see vaguely that he must have been a handsome person when he was young.

That person is Mu Chen’s father, Mu Feng. He is also the Lord of the Mu Territory.

At the right-hand seat of Mu Feng, there was a slim, middle-aged man. Within that man's pupil was a hint of trouble and he seemed to be a little bit dark. His tiny lips revealed a stern atmosphere. But that stern atmosphere dispersed a lot after he saw Mu Chen rushing into the Living Room. Between his two brows, a gentle smile surfaced.

"It's fine if you come back, why did you have to shout?" Mu Feng placed down the things in his hand and looked at the boy that came in through the door. He could not help but scold him gently. However, there was warmth coming out from the depths of his eyes.

"Territory Lord, it is rare for Little Mu to come back. It is naturally that we would feel happy." The skinny middle-aged man smiled as he spoke.

"It seems like only Uncle Zhou understands." Mu Chen sat down on a chair and grinned at the skinny man. Through the way they spoke, you could tell that they were quite close. Uncle Zhou is named Zhou Ye, he is also a lifetime friend of his father. Back then, he followed his father and killed within the Northern Spiritual Realm and finally helped and supported him to become the Lord of the Mu Territory. He also watched as Mu Chen grew up and so, he has always treated Mu Chen as his own child. The feelings they shared between them were naturally superb.

"Huh? You advanced into the Spiritual Movement Stage?" Mu Feng smiled and said in surprise when he looked at Mu Chen.

Hearing this, Zhou Ye also looked at Mu Chen in surprise. As expected, he could detect the Spiritual Aura being emitted within Mu Chen's body.

"I advanced into it a while back then." Mu Chen nodded his head. Talking about this matter was a bit dull, there wasn't many exciting things about it.

"It seems that you came back for Spiritual Arts then." Mu Feng

smiled. Only after you advance into the Spiritual Movement Stage will you be able to learn Spiritual Arts. And by learning Spiritual Arts, you will then be able to release the true power of the Spiritual Energy.

“I have to fight against someone ten days later. It might be a little troublesome if I do not learn Spiritual Arts.” Mu Chen curled his lips and explained the matter about Liu Yang’s challenge when Mu Feng and Zhou Ye threw a suspicious gaze towards him.

“None of the people from the Liu Family are any good.”

After Zhou Ye heard about it, his eyes became a bit vicious and he said: “The Liu Family has become more and more arrogant these years. Although the Liu Territory can be considered as the Number One in the Northern Spiritual Realm, do they think that the Mu Territory is weak?”

Mu Feng let out a smile without care and said: “I can’t imagine that Liu Yang would actually have a Spiritual Pulse, the Liu Family truly is blessed.”

“It’s only a Human Level Spiritual Pulse.”

Zhou Ye said. However, he frowned a bit as he said this. He looked at Mu Chen and said: “That Liu Yang’s strength is also at the Spiritual Movement Stage Initial Phase. With the help of the Spiritual Pulse, it wouldn’t be easy for someone in the Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase to deal with him. Little Mu, do you think you can do it?”

Mu Chen smiled. He had already attacked someone with the Heaven Level Spiritual Pulse. Why would he care about a mere Human Level Spiritual Pulse? Compare to the insane individuals within the Spiritual Road, Liu Yang appears to be too inexperienced.

Mu Feng looked at the innocent face of Mu Chen. He could feel that his son changed after he came back from the Spiritual Road.

Although this little guy would seem gentle and modest, Mu Feng was still able to detect a cold and sharp aura hidden underneath that gentle and innocent face due to his experiences of killing people.

That sharp aura was like a dormant dragon. It's fine when it does not roar, but once it explodes out, it will definitely finish everything swiftly.

That change made Mu Feng a little bit surprised and also a little bit pleased. He was greatly concerned about his only son. As for why Mu Chen would be kicked out halfway through the Spiritual Road, he was puzzled, but he did not ask for more. He believed that his son would not do anything that would disappoint him.

"Let's go. I'll bring you over to select some Spiritual Arts." Mu Feng stood up and waved his hand to Mu Chen. Then, he walked towards the backyard. After Mu Chen greeted Zhou Ye, he swiftly followed.

He followed Mu Feng and passed through the backyard. In the end, they stopped near a heavily guarded stone door. A forceful Spiritual Aura spread out from Mu Feng's palms, turned into rays of light and filled the Stone Door.

Behind Mu Feng, Mu Chen was able to feel the forceful Spiritual Energy fluctuations. He could not help but lick his mouth. Dad is indeed a powerful individual at the Spirit Stage. The fluctuations were actually this strong.

Within the training, you will first start off at the Sensing Stage. You will sense the Spiritual Aura within the world. Following that is the Spiritual Movement Stage. At this level, you will be able to absorb the Spiritual Aura into the body. After the Spiritual Movement Stage is the Spiritual Rotation Stage. You will be able to condense the Spiritual Aura within the body into a cycle. The degree of Spiritual Energy would far surpass the Spiritual Movement Stage.

Passing through the Spiritual Rotation Stage, you will reach the Spirit Stage. This could be considered as the dividing level. Mu Feng is at this level. Once you stepped into the Spirit Stage, you could be considered to be a powerhouse within the Northern Spiritual Realm. The powerhouses at this level have battle power far beyond the Spiritual Rotation Stage. This is because you will be able to obtain a unique ability after reaching the Spirit Stage. It is the ability to ingest a Beast Spirit.

The so-called Beast Spirit is the Spirit of the million beasts of the world. Once you ingest it, you will be able to obtain some power from the Spiritual Beast. By combining it with your own Spiritual Energy, your combat strength will naturally soar.

Within this Heaven and Earth, there is a “Beast Record”. It divides the numerous Spiritual Beasts within the world into two rankings: Heaven and Earth. And the Spiritual Beast Spirit that Mu Feng had ingested was one that he found due to a lucky coincidence. It is known as the Dragonfire Bird. Within the Earth Ranking of the Beast Record, it is ranked 85. During the years when Mu Feng travelled throughout the Northern Spiritual Realm and becoming the Mu Territory Lord, the Spirit of the Dragonfire Bird has contributed a lot.

“Creak.”

While Mu Chen was distracted, the heavy stone door slowly opened up and the heavy, creaking sound rang out.

After the Stone Door opened up, a smell of dust rushed into their face. Mu Feng fanned using his hand and walked in. Mu Chen also hastened to keep up.

A chamber appeared after passing through the Stone Door. Within the chamber, there were many dim firelights and rows of Stone Shelves began to appear in front of one’s eyes. On the Stone Shelves, many scrolls of scripts began to flash faintly.

Mu Chen’s eyes shone as he looked at the various scripts within

the chamber. It was obvious that they were all Spiritual Arts...

Mu Feng clapped his hand. He looked at the chamber and stared at the deepest part for a moment. Then, he immediately said with a faint smile: “All the stocks of Spiritual Arts that your father has are here. You can pick any of them, I want to see which one you will select.”

Chapter 4 – The Great Pagoda Art

Mu Chen's black eyes shone as he stared at the inside of the Stone Chamber. As the Lord of the Mu Territory, Mu Feng could be considered as one of the strongest individuals within the Northern Spiritual Realm. The collection that he kept over the years would naturally not be weak.

Towards his father, Mu Chen did not act polite at all. He hurried into the Stone chamber and randomly picked up a script. He took a glance at it. Words of light emerged from the script.

Common Tier Middle Rank Spiritual Art, Cloud Flare.

Mu Chen blinked. A Spiritual Art will normally be divided into Gong Fa Spiritual Arts, Attack Spiritual Arts and Defense Spiritual Arts, etc. And these various Spiritual Arts will be divided into three tiers. Deity Tier, Spiritual Tier, Common Tier. Moreover, each of these Tiers will be divided into High, Middle, Low Rank. The Cloud Flare in front of his eyes is a Common Tier Middle Rank Gong Fa Spiritual Art.

Mu Chen fiddled with the script for a while before lowering it down. It was obvious that he was interested in it. He slowly wandered into the depths of the chamber, occasionally picking up a scroll, but immediately putting it down again.

Mu Feng followed behind Mu Chen slowly, allowing him to select any of the Spiritual Arts here.

Hundred Sword Spiritual Art, Common Tier High Rank.

Book of Broken Mountains, Common Tier High Rank.

The numerous Spiritual Arts filled Mu Chen's eyes. Although the majority of them were Common Tier, Mu Chen knew that these Spiritual Arts would attract many individuals if they were brought out. Mu Feng's collection isn't something ordinary within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

After walking around for quite a bit of time, Mu Chen finally reached the very depths of the stone chamber. However, he has not found the right Spiritual Art for him. He raised his head and stared at the final stone shelf. Three open Jade Boxes were displayed there.

“You’re quite ambitious, your dad risked his life in order to obtain these three Spiritual Arts.” Mu Feng saw the three jaded box that Mu Chen set his gaze upon and could not help but smile.

Hearing this, Mu Chen walked over curiously. He then removed a scroll from one of the jaded box. The script was glistening and there was a bit of heat coming from it when he touched it. It was clearly not a Common Tier.

“Dragonblaze Art...” Mu Chen scanned through the script. His eyes let out a tint of surprise: “It’s actually a Spiritual Tier Low Rank Spiritual Art?”

He understood the value of a Spiritual Tier Spiritual Art. If it was brought to an auction, it cannot be obtained unless they are willing to spend at least a million Spirit Coins.

“Yes, I train in this Dragonblaze Art too. It was something I obtained the Dragonfire Bird’s Spirit.” Mu Feng nodded as he spoke.

Mu Chen fiddled around with this script for a moment, then he took out the two other scrolls. One of the scrolls was called “Trembling Heaven Tactic” and the other scroll was called “Animate Appraisal”. Both of them belong to the Spiritual Tier Low Rank.

Mu Chen did not want to let go of those three scrolls. He hesitated for a moment as he decided which one he should pick.

“Have you chosen yet? These three Spiritual Arts are equal to each other. You can train in one of them first and switch if you find a more suitable Spiritual Art. Mu Feng said with a faint smile.

Mu Chen hesitated for a while. His hand floated on top of the three scrolls. In the end, it landed on the “Animate Appraisal”. Although this Spiritual Art wasn’t specialized in attacking, it had quite an effect on building the foundations.

Mu Chen’s hand was suspended on top of the “Animate Appraisal”, but just when he was about to make his selection, his heart suddenly trembled for a bit. Then, his gaze drifted unconsciously towards the shadow of the three jaded boxes. He noticed that there was a black script covered with dust.

“What is this?”

Mu Chen was startled for a moment. His hand extended out and grabbed onto the black script. He scrolled through it and only notice that a few blurred words floated up from the rough surface of the script.

“The Great Pagoda Art?”

Mu Chen stared at the four blurry words. His eyes were filled with doubt. Why did it not mention the Rank of the Spiritual Art?

Mu Chen gave a puzzled look towards Mu Feng, but he was surprised. At this moment, Mu Feng had a complex expression as he stared at the black script within his hand. It was an expression filled with yearning.

“Dad?” Mu Chen asked, he then waved the script in his hand: “What is this Spiritual Art? Why does it not state the Rank?”

“It’s just an ordinary Spiritual Art, you should pick another.”” Mu Feng retracted his gaze and said slowly.

Mu Chen frowned for a bit. His hand played around with the black script. After a short silence, he smiled and said: “I want this!”

Mu Feng’s body trembled. He stared at Mu Chen. He noticed that there was a stubborn expression within that boy’s innocent face.

“Do you really want to select this?” Mu Feng asked after a pause.

Mu Chen nodded his head and said: “I don’t know why but I feel that I would regret it if I do not pick this. Dad, just how did you get this Spiritual Art?”

Mu Feng had a complicated gaze as he stared at the script. After a moment, he let out a long sigh and let out a bitter laugh. Then with a voice that was only audible to him, he muttered: “Jing, he really is your son.”

“That script was left behind by your mother. To be accurate, she left it for you. However, she also mentioned that I should let it gather dust if you do not select it.” Mu Feng gently spoke.

“Mom?”

Mu Chen could not help but tremble a little bit. He muttered the unfamiliar, yet heart-shaking word. He has never seen his mother before. There was only a vague, but gentle figure within the depths of his heart.

Ever since he began to understand things, he did not inquire about his mother from Mu Feng. Mu Feng, too, did not mention her. It was as if the father and son tried to avoid the topic regarding a person important to them.

“Mom should still be alive, right? W…Where is she?”

Mu Chen held the script tightly. He hesitated for a moment before finally asking the thing he wanted to know the most. When he was young, he had carved many wooden sculptures. The wooden sculptures were exactly the same, but there wasn’t a clear face on them. This is because the origin of the wood sculpture came from the gentle figure within his heart.

Every single one of the wooden sculpture had traces of hope and longing.

“The matter regarding your mother is extremely complicated. It does not help if I tell you now. However, if you want to know about it, then you should train in this. Once you reached a certain

level in it, you will naturally know." Mu Feng was silent for a long time and he finally clenched his hands as he stared at Mu Chen.

"Did Mom leave because of me?" Mu Chen suddenly asked.

"You were the person that she was most worried about. Because of you, she was willing to throw away everything."

Mu Feng did not give a direct answer. He only rubbed Mu Chen's head and said with a self-deprecating voice: "It's all because your father did not have the ability. I was not able to let your mother stay together with you."

"I had tried before, but...I still failed. I'm sorry."

Mu Chen nodded. A brilliant smile appeared on his innocent face: "Dad, do you want to see mom again?"

"I want to, I really want to, I really want our family to finally reunite." Mu Feng lifted his head and murmured. A sense of longing also existed within it.

Mu Chen gripped his hands tightly. The rough, black script emitted a warm temperature. Shortly after, he lifted his head and gave a slight smile towards Mu Feng. "I'll select this. Don't worry dad, I will help you complete what you have failed at. If you believe in me, then I will let our family reunite with each other one day, nobody will be able to stop it!"

Mu Feng stared at the boy with an innocent face, but firm eyes. A rippling surge of bitterness appeared within his chest, causing his eyes to become red. He, then, nodded his head.

Jing, our son will not be someone ordinary.

Chapter 5 – The Great Thousand World

The sun shined into the courtyard with lush branches. It formed a beam of light. Within the beam, many tiny lights danced along with it. It made the whole courtyard seemed very transparent.

Mu Chen sat cross-legged on a stone chair. One of his hands was on his face; the other was fiddling with the black script. In the end, he selected the “Great Pagoda Art”. It was also a commitment that he made to his own father.

However, even Mu Feng did not know what rank this “Great Pagoda Art” was. He could only vaguely tell that this thing was extremely powerful. As to why he said it was very powerful, the reason he gave was that it was because your mother was very, very powerful…

Mother was very, very powerful?

Mu Chen blinked his eyes. Mu Feng was able to lift up the entire family and create this Mu Territory within the Northern Spiritual Realm. He became a famous powerhouse within the Northern Spiritual Realm. In fact, he could be considered as quite amazing. But if even he said that she was powerful, just how powerful was mother?

“If mother was that powerful, why did she fancy dad?” Mu Chen grinned. It looks like dad had a wonderful encounter with mom when he was young. It should be a good story.

Mu Chen organized his chaotic feelings for a while. Then he gazed at the black script within his hand. He would have to fight Liu Yang ten days later. That guy is also a person at the Spiritual Movement Stage Initial Phase and possesses the Human Level Spiritual Pulse. Although he had met monsters with a much more powerful Spiritual Pulse at the Spiritual Road, but the Spiritual Road was somewhat peculiar.

The so-called Spiritual Road is, in fact, a very enormous stage for a trial. The creators of the Spiritual Road are the “Five Great Academies”. Every three years, the Spiritual Road will activate. The entry selection for the Spiritual Road was also quite strange. It was not selected through human means, but it was searched out by a Divine Artifact known as the “Mirror of Judgment”. This search was quite strange, but the people that were selected by this Divine Artifact were mostly people with excellent talents. In general, they would be able to enter and train at the “Five Great Academies” once they successfully pass the Spiritual Road’s trial.

The Spiritual Road is formed in a world. In this strange world, nobody is able to use any energy. In other words, whether it is Spiritual Aura or Dou Qi and Yuan Li from Lower Planes, nobody can use them within the Spiritual Road.

The selected person would face many life and death experiences when they enter the Spiritual Road. Under the circumstance that they could not use Spiritual Energy, they could only use their own physical body and their own dexterity and wisdom to resolve a variety of dangers. This method of forcing them to a corner is the best way of tempering their willpower.

When entering the Spiritual Road, the selected person would be told that if they want more power, then they must have an unshakable resolve. Only by controlling this resolve, will they be able to become someone truly strong.

In the ten million years, 70-80% of the strongest powerhouses that came out of the “Five Great Academies” had participated in the Spiritual Road’s trial. Thus, you can see how important the Spiritual Road’s trial is. This is also why many geniuses would go after it like ducks.

“The Five Great Academies...”

Mu Chen clenched his fist tightly. He must enter that place. Not only did he promise her, but he would only obtain the

qualifications to stand in the outside world if he comes out from the “Five Great Academies”.

Towards the outside world, Mu Chen was not aware of it that much. However, he would occasionally hear about it from Mu Feng. The Great Thousand Worlds he currently resides in is a vast, endless place. Many clans live here. The Northern Spiritual Realm is just like a tiny speck of sand within an ocean. It is an insignificant place. Moreover, the Great Thousand Worlds interweaves with numerous worlds. However, those worlds could only be called Lower Planes. This is because this world seemed to be at a higher level than those worlds. The Great Thousand Worlds is the center of numerous planes.

However, the ones that were able to come from a Lower Plane to the Great Thousand Worlds all possess amazing talent. They must be the strongest individuals in their world. Otherwise, they would not be able to break through the shackles of the world.

Mu Chen had once overheard a conversation about the overpowered people that came from the Lower Planes in a higher up meeting at the Northern Spiritual Academy. There were two that were the most well-known. Mu Chen did not hear their names, but he could hear their titles.

Flame Emperor.

Martial Ancestor.

They were both domineering titles. They came from the Lower Planes, but according to Mu Chen’s speculation, they were probably considered as a true Sovereign within the Great Thousand World. That Martial Ancestor had once caused an enormous ruckus in the Great Thousand World. It was said that he charged into a rather powerful clan, the Ice Spirit Clan, within the Great Thousand World by himself. The Ice Spirit Clan could not stop the man, who was holding a Lightning Staff. That one battle trembled the heavens. When that was known, the entire Great

Thousand World was shocked. And it was rumored that he had done all of this in order to save the person he loved.

In contrast, the unworldly Flame Emperor kept a low-profile. However, it was rumored that he had gone to the Fire Spirit Clan and the Fire Spirit Clan even asked an Old Ancestor, who had lived for numerous years, to come out. Yet, he was not able to get the upper hand against the Flame Emperor and had to let the Flame Emperor leave. This stunned everyone from the Fire Spirit Clan.

The powerhouses that came from the Lower Planes would still be as amazing as before and were overbearing even after they came to the Great Thousand Worlds.

The outside world was really filled with excitement, making one extremely thrilled.

However, Mu Chen also understood that he has not reached that level yet. However, he truly believed that he would be able to reach it if he had enough time.

Mu Chen stared at the black script in front of his hand. A smile emerged on his innocent face. Then, everything should begin from this...

Mu Chen placed his hands together and slowly closed his eyes. The black script within his palm let out a warm glow.

His eyes were filled with darkness. Mu Chen moved using his mind and urged the Spiritual Aura within his body to flow through the meridians in his arm and eventually into the script within his hand.

Bzzzzt.

Soon after the Spiritual Aura was inserted inside, the script let out a subtle buzzing sound. Then the darkness began to be torn up and something seemed to enter Mu Chen’s body through his palms.

“Use your body as a Pagoda to witness the Road of a Spirit...”

The mysterious and obscure chant seemed like an ancient bell sound. It quietly echoed in Mu Chen's mind. Then, he quickly protected his mind and firmly memorized these chants.

The ringing sound gradually dispersed. The training chant contained way too many things. Many of them were things that Mu Chen had not touched before. Thus, he wisely decided to put it aside for now and accept the parts that he could understand. However, the chant was so obscure that his brain was still in pain. He had never seen such a mysterious and complex chant.

It was obvious that Mu Chen had extraordinary talents. Otherwise, he would not have qualified for the Spiritual Road. Within the mysterious chant, he understood the secret within it. Shortly after, he finally began to move the Spiritual Aura. Based on the chant, the route circulation within the meridians were all quite strange. If you were able to trace the lines, you would be able to discover that the path that it travels seemed like a strange tower shape formed within his body.

The Spiritual Aura followed this weird meridians route and began to circulate. The first circulation obviously uses up an enormous about of energy. However, Mu Chen was able to fight back the tiredness and tried to maintain and complete the Spiritual Aura circulation.

The strange meridian route was extremely difficult to circulate. Even if Mu Chen tries to desperately control, he would still fail repeatedly. However, he did not feel rash about it and maintained a calm state as he circulated it over and over again.

This process lasted an entire afternoon. After repeated failures, a tiny portion of the Spiritual Aura finally passed through the final meridian under Mu Chen's careful control.

When the Spiritual Aura passed through the final meridian, the originally transparent Spiritual Aura began to change. The color gradually became a dark and deep color.

Only now can the Spiritual Aura be truly called Spiritual Aura. And although this dark Spiritual Aura seemed quiet and reserved, Mu Chen could vaguely feel that underneath this quietness is a hidden overbearing an fierce feeling.

It was evident that the quality of the Spiritual Aura that came out through the Great Pagoda Art was extremely high. It was not something that an ordinary Spiritual Art could compare with.

The thing that mother left behind was truly amazing! Mu Chen secretly thought to himself in excitement while he was completely sweaty.

This dark Spiritual Aura quietly occupied Mu Chen's aurasea. As long as he insisted on training this Spiritual Aura, it would definitely become massive.

And in the moment that the dark Spiritual Energy occupied his aurasea, Mu Chen's body violent shook. A sudden burst of dizziness appeared within his mind. He could feel that something was resonating with it inside his body. It was a wonderful feeling. It started from within Mu Chen's heart, but it soon vanished.

"What was that all about?"

Mu Chen recovered quickly. He was quite alarmed and quickly began to probe around within his body. However, he did not find anything wrong with it. It was as if the early feeling was just an illusion.

However, Mu Chen firmly believed that it wasn't an illusion.

"Was it because of the Great Pagoda Art?"

Mu Chen thought quickly, then he looked at the dark Spiritual Energy within his aurasea. He pondered about it for a moment, but he did not find any clues related to it. Thus, he could only give up. The Great Pagoda Art was left behind personally by his mother. Although he had never seen her before, he believed one truth. His mother would not leave behind anything dangerous to him!

“Or is it because of this?”

Mu Chen suddenly moved his mind. He could only see that there was a black glow floating on top of the dark Spiritual Energy within his aurasea.

The black glow flashed and then it returned back to its original appearance. It was actually a piece of black paper. On top of the black paper, there wasn’t any writing, but you could vaguely see some extremely fuzzy lines.

The black paper quietly floated within his aurasea and let that dark Spiritual Energy warm it up. Within that simple and unadorned paper, a mystery that could not be described was revealed.

Mu Chen stared at the piece of mysterious, black paper. He was quite confused. That item was something that he obtained during the Spiritual Road. However, he did not see any effects from it ever since then. He was able to faintly tell that the mysterious, black paper wasn’t something ordinary. It was just that he didn’t have the strength to unlock its secrets now.

Was the previous resonance because of it?

Mu Chen thought for a moment, but he shook his head. Although the black paper was mysterious, it was obvious that it did not cause the earlier commotion…

He pondered seriously about it but to no avail. Mu Chen could only finally give up and put aside this issue. He stared at the dark Spiritual Energy within his aurasea again. Based on the chant, the Great Pagoda Art was divided into 3 Levels. First being Foundation, Second being Shape-Condensation and Third being Towerform.

However, he had not even reach the Foundation level yet. He could only be regarded as just entering the initial phase. If he wanted to advance to the Foundation Level, it would require quite a bit of effort.

Inside the courtyard, Mu Chen slowly opened his closed eyes. He looked at the sweat on his body and could not help but shake his head. The Great Pagoda Art was definitely difficult to train in. It was already this difficult considering that it was just at the starting line. He really did not know when he would be able to train it into the Towerform Level and just how difficult it would be.

“I wonder by how many levels will this Great Pagoda Art amplify my Spiritual Energy?”

Mu Chen’s heart trembled for a bit. He was curious about it. A Spiritual Art had another important role. That is to amplify the Spiritual Energy. In general, a Common Tier High Rank Gong Fa Spiritual Art would be able to amplify the Spiritual Energy by 5 levels. A Spiritual Tier Low Rank Gong Fa would be able to amplify the Spiritual Energy by 10 levels. The more levels it could amplify, the stronger the Spiritual Energy would be when it was released.

You could also use this method to roughly distinguish just what rank the Spiritual Art is.

Thinking up to this point, the curiosity within Mu Chen’s eyes began to increase. He spun his hand around and a dark Spiritual Aura emerged from his palm. Then he slowly gripped his palm and his eyes began to boil up.

He was going to test just how powerful this Great Pagoda Art is!

Chapter 6 – Spiritual Energy Amplification

Inside the courtyard, Mu Chen's body stood up straight. His palms bent slightly and a dark Spiritual Energy gathered quickly within his palms. A faint and sharp fluctuation came out from it.

Mu Chen sensed the Spiritual Energy within his palms. He could feel that subtle changes were happening within it. In the next moment, his eyes suddenly froze for a moment and the gentle, dark Spiritual Energy within his palms suddenly trembled violently.

It was like dropping a few water droplets into a boiling pan.

Within that quaking vibration, the Spiritual Aura fluctuations also rapidly increased.

Mu Chen's palms trembled slightly. He could feel that the Spiritual Energy was speedily amplifying...

One Level...Three Levels...Five Levels...Eight Levels...

When the Spiritual Energy had amplified to the Ninth Level, the vibrations within his hand became even more intense and there were signs that the Spiritual Energy was escaping his control.

"It's only the Ninth Level. This isn't enough."

Mu Chen frowned as he wrinkled his brow slightly. He could faintly feel that a wild horse-like Spiritual Energy was about to explode outwards!

The Thirteenth Level!

The black Spiritual Energy covered Mu Chen's palm. He solemnly looked at it. At the next moment, he moved his hand violently and bent all but two fingers. He then stabbed at the stone pillar in front of him at lightning speed.

The sound of the wind breaking could be heard!

Common Tier Middle Rank Attack Spiritual Art, Bone-Shatter

Finger!

Mu Chen's two fingers had penetrated the stone pillar deeply. Cracks began to appear from where his finger had stabbed into.

Mu Chen stared at the cracks as he retracted his fingers from within. He muttered to himself: "Thirteenth Level."

He nodded. He is only at the starting line for the Great Pagoda Art, yet he was already able to amplify his Spiritual Energy by thirteen levels. It was enough to prove how powerful the Great Pagoda Art is and Mu Chen could sense it that the amplification would only increase as he gets more skilled in it.

"The Great Pagoda Art is at least a Spiritual Tier High Rank Spiritual Art."

Mu Chen grinned. The item left behind by his mother really isn't something ordinary. It was probably difficult to find a Spiritual Tier High Rank Spiritual Art within the entire Northern Spiritual Realm. However, this Spiritual Art was quite difficult to train in. Mu Chen was confident in his cultivation talent, but even so, it would still be difficult to train in this Great Pagoda Art.

"However, I do not lack time." Mu Chen muttered and immediately clapped his hands as he turned back to return to his home. It looks like he must put all his effort into training this Great Pagoda Art."

Not far away from the courtyard, Mu Feng witnessed the events that happened. He could not help but let out a smile. Within that smile, you could see that he was quite satisfied: "Little Mu's cultivation talent truly is outstanding. I had once trained in the Great Pagoda Art before, but I was only able to the first batch of Spiritual Energy to circulate through after 5 days. And the first batch of Spiritual Energy only reached the Seventh Level of amplification."

"That boy actually successfully trained in it within half a day and

the level of amplification was that shocking. He really hurt my pride." Although he said this, Mu Feng could not conceal the prideful and delighted feelings within his eyes.

"Ohoho, Little Mu's talent is truly amazing. He would definitely be someone that far surpasses the outdated fellows like us in the future." Zhou Ye also smiled as he nodded his head. His voice held a bit of longing.

"That's right. The Northern Spiritual Realm may seem very significant to us, but for Little Mu, it is way too small..."

In the next few days, Mu Chen focused all his efforts on training the "Great Pagoda Art". The boy may occasionally look like he was lazy, but deep down inside, he was extremely stubborn. It was this stubborness that allowed him to have a distinguished reputation within the Spiritual Road. In the end, he even caused the massive event, which even numerous geniuses were stunned about."

By focusing all his efforts, the Spiritual Energy within Mu Chen's aura sea had rapidly become thicker in just seven short days. He was able to obtain a deeper insight regarding about the Great Pagoda Art. However, it seems that he was still some distance before he reached the Foundation Level. This made him let out a sound of disapproval. The Great Pagoda Art was truly something extraordinary.

As his training in the Great Pagoda Art was going well, Mu Chen relaxed a bit. Then, he began to multi-task and searched through numerous scrolls to find a few suitable Attack Spiritual Arts for him to learn.

Although he has strengthened the base of his Spiritual Energy, it is still essential to have a few Attack Spiritual Arts to enhance his combat abilities.

And Liu Yang was not an ordinary person as well. He is ranked first in the Northern Spiritual Academy Earth Class. This was enough to prove just how powerful he is. At the same time, his

father was the Liu Territory's lord. The Liu Territory is the strongest territory within the Northern Spiritual Realm. It is even slightly stronger than the Mu Territory. They often had many disputes with the Mu Territory over the past few years and did not like each other. Although the Liu Territory could not extend their reach to the Northern Spiritual Academy, they would still be able to give the best support to Liu Yang...

However, was it really that easy to step on Mu Chen? Even the numerous geniuses within the Spiritual Road couldn't do that, a mere Liu Yang was far from being able to.

At the training ground filled with stone blocks, a figure caused the dust to scatter around. Within his hands, a dark Spiritual Energy was constantly rotating and it emitted faint fluctuations.

Only two of his fingers weren't bent. Under the dark Spiritual Energy, an extremely sharp, black stab landed onto a block of stone.

KACHA!

The shattered rock pieces exploded outwards and cracks quickly spread through the block of stone. Within the boy's black eyes, a cold atmosphere passed through. The two fingers that were deep inside the block of stone moved violently and with a muffled ringing sound, the waist-sized block was directly pierced through.

The block of stone shattered. The boy did not stop and changed his hands from just fingers to a palm. With a faint sound of thunder, the Dark Spiritual Energy surged through and he hit a stone block using his backhand.

The moment the palm landed onto the stone bloc, the boy stood on just one leg. The other leg lashed out with power at another block of stone.

BANG! BOOM!

The two muffled sounds rang out. Two stone blocks shattered

and crashed straight down. The gravel from it flew off to the open space. The boy slowly lowered his leg and maintained a calm atmosphere. The dark Spiritual Energy within his palms quietly dispersed.

Clap Clap.

Sounds of applause rang out from the side. Mu Chen looked and saw Mu Feng standing outside of the training ground with a smile. He was quite satisfied with the performance that Mu Chen had done earlier. It was like a tempest, the killing intent was hidden within the sharpness. It was in no way inferior to those his men that had honed it through battles of life and death. It looks like his son did not waste the year when he entered the Spiritual Road.

“Dad.”

Mu Chen patted the dust off his arm and walked towards Mu Feng.

“Are you returning to the Northern Spiritual Academy tomorrow?” Mu Feng asked with a smile.

Mu Chen nodded.

“If you are able to pass through the competition this time, you should be able to advance to the Heaven Class of the Northern Spiritual Academy. At that time, you will be qualified to compete for a place within the “Five Great Academies”. Mu Feng patted Mu Chen’s shoulder as he spoke with a smile.

“A place within the Five Great Academies, huh.”

Mu Chen stretched his waist and a smile emerged on his face. “Dad, relax. I will definitely obtain that place…”

Chapter 7 – Mu Yuan

Northern Spiritual City. A city that was born because of the Northern Spiritual Academy. The city is basically like the Northern Spiritual Academy and it maintains absolute neutrality within the Northern Spiritual Realm. Furthermore, the one in control of this place is the Northern Spiritual Academy.

This is why none of the disputes within the Northern Spiritual Realm would spread over here. Thus, the Northern Spiritual City is a bustling location. Aside from a few cities in the major territories, it could be considered as one of the top cities within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

As the Northern Spiritual City was born due to the Northern Spiritual Academy, it was naturally a heavenly-like location for the students of the Northern Spiritual Academy. In this city, very few individuals would go against the Northern Spiritual Academy's students even without mentioning about the status of the Northern Spiritual Academy. After all, many of the students that came to train at the Northern Spiritual Academy would have some sort of a background. Furthermore, the sons and daughters of various territory lords would be among them. It would not be a pleasant thing if they offended these youths.

When Mu Chen stepped out of the Transfer Spiritual Array, he saw the scene of a bustling city. He rubbed his head, which was slightly dizzy due to the transfer, and then looked at the Transfer Spiritual Array behind him.

The arrangement of the Transfer Spiritual Array is extremely troublesome. There are only a handful of large cities that had the ability to position it. It was obvious that the Northern Spiritual City had the ability to do so with the Northern Spiritual Academy's power.

Mu Chen walked away from the Transfer Spiritual Array and

passed through a lively street. He went straight to the Northern Spiritual Academy located at the center of the city.

On both sides of the street, there were many stores. Amongst them, the Spiritual Arts vendors shouted out. However, Mu Chen did not have the slightest idea of staying there. His father is one of the nine Territory Lords within the Northern Spiritual Realm. His collection would naturally be decent. Thus, the Spiritual Arts from these places naturally would not enter Mu Chen's sights.

After turning around a couple of street corners, the magnificent Northern Spiritual Academy could be seen. Many groups of students from the Northern Spiritual Academy could be seen on the streets. As the boys and girls gathered together, sounds of laughter could be heard. It was filled with youthful vitality.

In his surroundings, many people would gaze toward Mu Chen. A couple beautiful girls would send a curious and shy gaze towards him. Within the Northern Spiritual Academy, Mu Chen could be considered as a celebrity.

Without mentioning anything else, it would already cause others to tremble slightly within their hearts just by the fact that he had once obtained the qualifications to the Spiritual Road. After all, he was the only one to have obtained a spot for it.

Although they did not know why Mu Chen was kicked out after being in the Spiritual Road for one year, but how could a person be ordinary if they obtained an entry for the Spiritual Road?

Mu Chen did not care about the gazes that were thrown to him, he even smiled back. He had a handsome appearance. A gentle and brilliant smile and eyes that were as black as the evening sky. Although he was roughly the same age as the other students, he possesses a unique disposition that the other innocent teenagers did not have.

It was this disposition, coupled with the comforting face, that made the girls' cheeks slightly hot as they looked at him in secret.

All of a sudden, a commotion rang out in the street in front. Many students quickly dispersed and a couple figures with a depressed expressed ran over. They looked anxiously at the surroundings and an astonished expression appeared shortly after.

“Brother Mu!” Several surprised shouts escaped from their mouth.

“Luo Dong, what are you guys doing?” Mu Chen saw a few familiar people and was slightly bewildered. They were in the same cultivation class as him and their daily relationship was quite good.

“Brother Mu, hurry and help out Su Ling. He was hit by Mu Yuan!” The boy named Luo Dong quickly responded.

“Mu Yuan?”

The surrounding students were shocked when they heard that name. The one that was Number 2 in the Northern Spiritual Academy Earth Class, Mu Yuan? He was an aggressive fellow who was only slightly weaker than Liu Yang. Why would Su Ling dare provoke him?

“What happened?” Mu Chen frowned. Su Ling could be considered to be his best friend within the Northern Spiritual Academy.

“A while ago, Mu Yuan came over to talk about nonsense. He said that Brother Mu would definitely lose tomorrow. Su Ling could not endure it and said a few things back at him. Then, he was hit by Mu Yuan. The West Branch really is too arrogant...” Luo Dong said bitterly.

Mu Chen’s lip creased slightly. This made Luo Dong, who was beside him, shocked. He was quite familiar with Mu Chen and naturally knew that once Mu Chen did this action, he was probably quite angry.

“Bring me there.” Mu Chen said.

“Ah” Luo Dong and the others were stunned. They quickly said: “Brother Mu, we should still find a Teacher first. There are many people over by Mu Yuan’s side. Xue Dong, who you defeated before, and the Xiao Kun who is ranked number 6 in the Earth Class is also…”

“It’s alright. Lead the way.” Mu Chen smiled and gently patted Luo Dong’s shoulder.

Seeing Mu Chen’s smile, Luo Dong and the others looked at each other. They immediately bit their teeth and nodded. At most, they would only be hit, but how could they allow those guys from the West Branch to think that the East Branch were all softies?

Several people surrounded Mu Chen as they headed over there. Only a few stunned students were left on the street. However, they soon recovered and stared at the direction that Mu Chen and the others have departed for with a fiery passion. They quickly followed them and flew off.

Judging from Mu Chen’s earlier appearance, could he be planning to pick a fight against three violent individuals within the Top Ten of the West Branch Earth Class by himself? This was quite an explosive event.

A muffled sound rang out and a figure was blown away fiercely. His body stopped only after it left a long trace on the ground.

“The people from the East Branch seem to be bursting with too much self-confidence now. Even an unknown person would dare to yell in front of me, Mu Yuan. I really want to know just who gave you guys that confidence.”

A boy in black clothes crossed his arms and sneered at the ten helpless individuals on the ground. The one that was leading those ten men was Su Ling. At this moment, he was staring at the boy in black clothes as he gritted his teeth.

Behind the boy in black clothes were two similarly aged boys.

They, too, had a sneer on their face. They could not conceal the arrogance within their eyes.

Surrounding them was a circle of students. However, they did not dare to speak. It was obvious that there weren't many who would dare to provoke these three individuals.

"Bah, Mu Yuan, stop acting so proud. You were lucky that Brother Mu wasn't here today, otherwise, your second rank in the Earth Class would disappear!" Su Ling said in anger.

"Mu Chen" Mu Yuan raised an eyebrow as if he was challenging him and a boy behind him let out a cold harrumph. He was the one that lost to Mu Chen, Xue Dong.

"That guy has a bit of skill, but I'm not afraid of him. Ohoho, I can't wait until tomorrow when the competition between the two Branches is over. The East Branch would behave themselves then." Mu Yuan grinned and said: "Brother Liu would let him know that it would be better off if he remained a low profile. Within the Northern Spiritual Academy, we, the West Branch, is the strongest!"

"I really can't wait to see his appearance when that guy loses." Xue Dong said with a sneer.

"Only before that, I think I want to take care of you East Branch trashes." Mu Yuan interweaved his fingers and gently gripped it. It issued out a clear cracking sound and he headed towards Su Ling and the others with an evil expression.

Noticing that Mu Yuan refused to stop, Su Ling and the other looked slightly pale. He soon shouted out: "Let's desperately fight against him"

"Fight!"

These boys were still a bit courageous. If they showed no resistance in front of such a big crowd, it would be too shameful. They gritted their teeth and lifted their body as they charged

towards Mu Yuan.

“A group of guys, who haven’t even advanced to the Spiritual Movement Stage, dare to attack me? How overly confident.” Mu Yuan laughed as he saw this. A faint Spiritual Energy rose from his palms.

“BANG!”

He stomped heavily on the ground and darted out like an arrow. He jumped over the numerous charging figures and appeared directly in front of the panicking Su Ling. With a sneer, his fist brought a sharp wind and he smashed directly at Su Ling’s face.

Su Ling stared at the swift wind coming from Mu Yuan’s fist, yet it was simply too late to resist. He could only watch as the fist rapidly became bigger in his eyes. He closed his eyes as if he gave up and thought to himself that it looks like he had to lie down for a few days...

Ah...

Just when he closed his eyes, he seemed to hear a few screams coming from the surroundings. Then a muffled sound rang out and the blast shook his face a bit. It didn’t hurt as much as he imagined.

He opened a tiny bit of his eyes and was stunned. A long white arm suddenly appeared from behind him and it easily stopped the blast of wind coming from Mu Yuan’s fist.

Su Ling hurriedly turned around. He, then, saw the boy who made him feel relaxed.

“Brother Mu!” Su Ling shouted in joy.

“You did a good job. At least, you did not disgrace the East Branch’s face.”

Mu Chen smiled at him. Then, he looked at Mu Yuan and the others, whose expression changed slightly, and said: “I was the one

that gave them that confidence, is there a problem?”

Chapter 8 – Liu Yang

“I was the one that gave them that confidence, is there a problem?

When Mu Yuan and the others looked at the smiling boy in front of him, their expressions changed slightly. The sneer that they had in their eyes became a little bit more dignified. Apparently, they still held a bit of fear towards Mu Chen.

“Hmph, how arrogant.”

However, Mu Yuan was the first to recover. He stared at Mu Chen and let out a cold hmph. He also advanced to the Spiritual Movement Stage Initial Phase seven days ago. The two individuals behind him, Xue Dong and Xiao Kun, was also about to advance. What would Mu Chen dare to do when there was such a formation against him?

Xue Dong and Xiao Kun also quickly thought of this point. A tint of fierceness passed through their eyes and the fear within them was weakened by a lot.

“I was only teaching them a little lesson today. In the Northern Spiritual Academy, it isn’t the turn of the East Branch to butt in when we, the West Branch, are talking.” Mu Yuan clapped his hands and let out a sneer towards Mu Chen: “As for you, I think you would not dare to say such words after tomorrow.”

The surrounding students were all frozen and did not dare let out a sound. They stared at the arrogant Mu Yuan. The group of East Branch students were all furious within their hearts, yet they kept the resentment to themselves.

After he said these words, he waved his hand as if he wanted to left together with the others. He had already displayed their authority and power today in order to weaken the authority and power that the East Branch had.

Su Ling and the others were extremely angry and clenched their fists. However, the other side had a powerful momentum now. Even if Mu Chen had finally arrived, he would not dare to fight back against him now.

“I’m going to ask…”

A sound came from behind them. Mu Yuan and the others paused for a moment and turned back to stare at the boy standing in front of Su Ling. At this moment, Mu Chen had a smile on his face.

“Are you not intending…to apologize before you leave?

The surrounding sounds seemed to have become quiet. Many boys and girls stared at the smiling boy in a daze. Although Mu Chen had a brilliant smile on his face, they could feel a sharp chill from it.

Su Ling and the others also froze for a moment. Then their face turned red. They did not believe that Mu Chen would still come forward for them when it was like this.

“Apologize?”

Mu Yuan’s face turned grim. He let out a mocking smile and said: “Why?”

He was used to being arrogant in the Northern Spiritual Academy. Is this guy crazy for asking him to apologize?

“Looks like it’s useless to talk.”

Mu Chen nodded his head. Without saying anything more, he slowly walked towards Mu Yuan and the others.

Mu Yuan and the others stared at the approaching Mu Chen with a dismal expression. Their eyes made contact for a moment and they could see a hint of coldness within those eyes.

Within the Northern Spiritual Academy, Mu Chen had always remained relatively low profile. Aside from defeating Xue Dong, he had not done any remarkable deeds. However, no students within

the Northern Spiritual Academy Earth Class would dare to underestimate him. Even unruly people like Mu Yuan would still fear him. How could a person, who qualified to participate in the Spiritual Road, be an ordinary person?

That's why...

"Do it!"

A cry came out from Mu Yuan's mouth. The Spiritual Energy violently surged through his arms. He stomped onto the ground and charged directly to Mu Chen. Behind him, Xue Dong and Xiao Kun followed him and kept to his side. These movements had quite the chemistry.

A commotion broke out from the surroundings. It was evident that they did not imagine Mu Yuan and the others to be so straightforward. They did not hesitate to let out a combined attack. Moreover, they were all aggressive individuals within the top ten ranks of the West Branch Earth Class.

Mu Yuan was the strongest out of the three. He had already advanced to the Spiritual Movement Stage Initial Phase. Thus, his offensive was also the most ferocious. The Spiritual Energy wrapped around his palms and the winds coming from it were like blades. He hacked angrily at Mu Chen.

However, just when the palm winds were about the hit Mu Chen, he gently took half a step to the side and his body passed by Mu Yuan. The eyebrows on his handsome face were slightly lowered and just like a sharp sword become unsheathed, the originally gentle face instantly became cold and aggressive.

He did not directly go against Mu Yuan and instead went straight to the Xue Dong and Xiao Kun, who were slightly behind Mu Yuan, as he avoided Mu Yuan. The dark Spiritual Energy surrounded his fingers as he opened up his palm. A sharp sound of the wind could be faintly heard as the Spiritual Energy surged. He let off a smack towards Xue Dong and Xiao Kun.

Xue Dong and Xiao Kun were surprised by this move of Mu Chen. However, they did not have any time to avoid it. They immediately bit their teeth and fired off a punch with all their strength.

As long as they were able to stop Mu Chen for an instant, Mu Yuan would be able to turn back and aid them. When that happens, Mu Chen would be completely surrounded and opened to attacks.

Xue Dong and Xiao Kun had a ranking within the West Branch Earth Class. Naturally, they weren't just any ordinary individuals. However, they still slightly misjudged the strength of the boy in front of them and the proficiency in his attacks.

When the two fists exploded outwards, Mu Chen's palm suddenly skimmed through the surface of their punches. It violently went further down and landed on their wrists. He, then, pulled powerfully.

The two of them had their bodies fly forward due to being pulled and the momentum of their punch. Their bodies became unstable. Mu Chen's palm wind passed through their arms and like a snake charging out of a hole, it landed directly on their chest without any mercy.

A deep sound rang out. Xue Dong and Xiao Kun's body suddenly flew backwards when they let out an astonished expression. They landed heavily on the ground and issued out a scream. The clothes in front of their chest were completely destroyed.

Just by exchanging blows once, Xue Dong and Xiao Kun lost with ease.

After Xue Dong and Xiao Kun let out a cry, the surrounding students finally recovered. They could not help but grin carelessly. Wasn't it too fast?

"Mu Chen!"

An angry roar came from behind. When Mu Yuan noticed this

scene, he was so angry that his face turned red. He did not imagine that Mu Chen would actually avoid him and take care of Xue Dong and Xiao Kun first.

“Flame Palm!”

A fiery red Spiritual Energy erupted above Mu Yuan’s palms. As the Spiritual Energy rise, it was like a fire and made the air become a little bit hotter.

The surrounding students exclaimed loudly. Is this the strength of the second rank of the West Branch Earth Class?

Mu Chen also turned around at this moment. He stared at the fierce Mu Yuan as he approached. His fingers clenched into a fist. There wasn’t the slightest evasive action done and a punch surrounded by a dark Spiritual Energy was fired out.

The fist and palm bombarded heavily with each other. A surge of air expanded from it. The Red and Dark Color intersected. However, Mu Yuan’s face instantly turned blood red. His body violently trembled and with a Puchi sound, he spat out fresh blood from his mouth. He staggered a few steps backwards and finally sat down on his butt.

With just one move, the victory was decided.

Although they were both at the Spiritual Movement Stage Initial Phase, but it was evident that Mu Chen’s Spiritual Energy was more condense and sharp. Mu Yuan could not compare to it at all.

Xue Dong and Xiao Kun, who was beaten to the ground earlier, let out an astonished expression. Mu Yuan had the strength of a Spiritual Movement Stage Initial Phase, why couldn’t he even receive one of Mu Chen’s punches?

“How is this possible!” Mu Yuan also had a look of disbelief as he sat on the ground awkwardly. He did not even remember to wipe off the blood from his mouth.

“Brother Mu is amazing!”

Su Ling and the others were completely stunned. Soon, they let out a face filled with ecstasy. They did not expect Mu Chen would still be able to achieve an overwhelming advantage when he was fighting against three of them.

However, Mu Chen had a calm expression. He stared at the awkward Mu Yuan and smiled: “Now, can you apologize?”

Mu Yuan’s face changed slightly. He gritted his teeth and shouted: “Dream on!”

Mu Chen seemed to have expected that he would say that. The smile on his face became even more splendid. He nodded his head and strode off towards Mu Yuan. A dark black Spiritual Energy slowly appeared once again on his palms.

Mu Yuan stared at Mu Chen who was approaching. He did not know why he could feel a chill when he looked at Mu Chen’s magnificent smile.

Mu Chen approached Mu Yuan. The dark black Spiritual Energy above his palm became more and more dense. However, when his foot stopped in front of Mu Yuan, a gentle clapping sound rang out beside him.

“Ohoho, as expected from a person that had participated in the Spiritual Road before. However, your actions seemed like you do not care about the West Branch at all?”

Mu Chen tilted his head. He looked at the crowd as it separated. From there, a figure slowly came forward with a smile. When the nearby students saw him, they could not help but take a step back and fear appeared within their eyes.

Under the fearful gazes, the boy stood in front of Mu Chen. He had a somewhat handsome appearance. However, the corner of his lips revealed a sense of stubborness as well as pride that could not be concealed. At this moment, he crossed his arms and within the gaze that stared at Mu Chen, there was a disposition as if he was

looking at his prey.

It was the number one person of the West Branch Earth Class, Liu Yang.

Chapter 9 – Confrontation

“Liu Yang…”

Mu Chen glanced at the boy who crossed his arms. He did not seem surprised and only calmly said: “You’ve watched the show for half a day now. So you finally couldn’t resist coming out?”

Mu Yuan, Xue Dong and Xiao Kun looked at Liu Yang. They were overjoyed and immediately shouted Brother Liu. When they turned their gaze at Mu Chen again, it had become a little bit more arrogant and aggressive.

Mu Chen’s reputation was not weak within the Northern Spiritual Academy Earth Class. Furthermore, he had defeated the three of them together just a while ago. However, there was still a bit of a gap between the person who was Number One in the Earth Class. With Liu Yang backing them up, they naturally did not feel afraid of Mu Chen.

Liu Yang stared at the humiliated trio. He frowned and gave a cold stare at Mu Chen: “Mu Chen, you probably have to give an explanation to the West Branch about this matter today?”

“An explanation?”

Mu Chen stared at the boy, who had the largest reputation in the West Branch Earth Class, and smiled: “They harmed the students from the East Branch for no reason. From what I see, you should be the one that gives an explanation to us.”

The surrounding student secretly grinned as they noticed the two of them confronting each other. These two individuals were probably the most outstanding ones within the Northern Spiritual Academy Earth Class. They originally planned on deciding the victor tomorrow; nobody expected that they would face off each other today.

Liu Yang narrowed his eyes slightly. A cold chill appeared in his

eyes. Nobody would dare to be so rude to him within the Northern Spiritual Academy Earth Class. Although he had heard stories about Mu Chen, he is still the number one person among the Northern Spiritual Academy Earth Class.

“You’re still so arrogant…”

Liu Yang revealed a mocking smile. He stared at Mu Chen: “I’m really curious. For a person who obtained the Spiritual Road’s qualification by luck and was kicked out forcibly, where did this arrogant spirit of yours come from?”

Anger appeared in Su Ling and the others’ eyes as they heard these harsh words. However, they knew that Liu Yang wasn’t someone that they could defeat. They could only hold in their hatred and gritted their teeth.

“You will know whether it is luck when you test it out.” Compared to their anger, Mu Chen only gently smiled as he spoke.

Liu Yang’s pupil shrank. It was evident that he did not think that Mu Chen would dare speak to him like this. His voice gradually became colder: “I originally planned on fighting against you during the competition between the two Branches tomorrow. However, it seems that you are impervious to the situation you’re in. I will take care of you now so I don’t have to waste time tomorrow.”

After saying this, Liu Yang took a step forward. The Spiritual Energy that arise was many times stronger than Mu Yuan in terms of density.

Seeing Liu Yang’s imposing manner, Su Ling and the others were surprised. That Liu Yang actually dared to attack now?

They looked at Mu Chen worriedly, yet they were only able to see a similarly aged, innocent face without the slightest fear. The black eyes reflected off dark light that people could not see through.

Seeing Mu Chen’s calm appearance, Su Ling and the others’ concerns faded a bit. Although Liu Yang was the number one

individual of the Northern Spiritual Academy Earth Class, Mu Chen was not someone that weak as well. It would not be easy for him to take care of Brother Mu.

“You really are…pushing your luck too much.”

Mu Chen shook his head and curled his lips. The brilliant smile on the innocent face gradually became cold. On his palm, a dark black Spiritual Energy began to circulate around his fingertips.

The atmosphere between the two of them became tense. Many students could not help but widen their eyes. The two individuals in front of them were the strongest within the Northern Spiritual Academy Earth Class. They, too, were curious about who was stronger.

“Stop!”

Just when they were about to fight, a cry came out from a distance. Afterwards, the sound of the wind breaking rang out and a burly figure appeared in between the two of them.

“Teacher Mo!”

When the students saw the person that arrived, they were suddenly surprised and hurried to let out their greetings.

The middle-aged man that was referred to as Teacher Mo had a determined expression. Within his body, a striking amount of Spiritual Energy fluctuations were looming. It caused the nearby students to feel a little bit of pressure.

And when they noticed him, even the arrogant Liu Yang straightened up a bit. The person in front of him is a genuine Spirit Stage powerhouse. Even within the Northern Spiritual Academy and Northern Spiritual Realm, he could be considered as a first-class individual. Naturally, he did not dare to offend him.

“If you want to fight within the academy, you can do so at the Martial Stadium. Do you want to be punished for disgracing others outside?” Teacher Mo looked around and said in a stern voice.

“Oh, what is Teacher Mo saying? We were just doing an exchange.”

Liu Yang smiled. He knew that he would not be able to take any actions today. He looked at Mu Chen and extended a finger towards him. He gave a faint nod and said: “I’ll be waiting for you at the competition between the two branches tomorrow.”

After he said that, Liu Yang turned around and brought the people away with him. However, you could hear a faint murmur: “He’s only just a person who was kicked out of the Spiritual Road halfway…”

Su Ling and the others heard the deliberate murmur from Liu Yang. They face turned pale and they said as they gritted their teeth: “Brother Mu, isn’t he being too arrogant? At least you were able to qualify for the Spiritual Road, who the f*ck does he think he is?”

Mu Chen looked at the angry Su Ling. He could not help but let out a smile as he patted his shoulder. He said: “Why are you getting so angry? If a dog bites you, do you have to bit him back?”

“Even so, it doesn’t feel good at all.”

“True, it feels pretty terrible.” Mu Chen chuckled and a coldness appeared on the boy’s innocent face. “Although I won’t bite him, but I enjoy beating them to death with a stick. I will beat him up so that he will not dare to make such noise again.”

“That boy from the Liu Family is truly shameful like his father.”

Teacher Mo stared at the direction where Liu Yang departed to. He frowned as if he was slightly dissatisfied. He then turned to Mu Chen and let out a smile and said:

“Well said, that suits my taste as well.”

“However, it was said that Liu Yang is also at the Spiritual Movement Stage Initial Phase currently. He also possesses the Human Level Spiritual Pulse, so his strength is comparable to a

Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase. Are you certain that you would defeat him at the competition between the two branches tomorrow?"

"Teacher Mo, please rest assured. I will not disgrace you." Mu Chen smiled. Teacher Mo managed the East Branch. If the East Branch lost too poorly at the competition, he would lose some face.

"We're going to head back first, Teacher Mo."

Teacher Mo stared at Mu Chen, who was leaving together with Su Ling and the others, and waved his hand. He also smacked his lips. That boy is still quite young, yet there is something that could not be seen by others within him. You could not see the slightest bit of arrogance within the boy, but you are able to vaguely feel the sharpness hidden within his gentleness. That boy...

"He is indeed someone that can overwhelm the individuals from the Spiritual Road...If he was to successfully complete the Spiritual Road's trial, he would probably be like hotcakes to the Five Great Academies. How would he still be here..."

Teacher Mo sighed. He was actually looking forward to the competition between the two branches tomorrow. It was said that the guy from the Liu Family had made sufficient preparations. Who knows who would be the one to have the final laugh at the competition to determine the Number One of the Earth Class?

The color of the night became darker. Within his room, Mu Chen quietly sat in a cross-legged position. His hands formed a seal. It was obvious that he had entered the state of cultivation. Near his body, the Spiritual Aura within the world fluctuated. Then, they followed his breath and entered his body.

As more and more of the Spiritual Aura entered Mu Chen's body, a faint, dark black light flashed on the surface of his body.

Within his aurasea, the dark black Spiritual Energy flowed. The density of it was many times stronger than what he had first

started to train. It was evident that Mu Chen had placed quite the effort in cultivating it during this period of time.

A trace of the Spiritual Energy circulated through the cultivation route of the Great Pagoda Art. In the end, it turned into a dark black Spiritual Energy and entered his aurasea. It caused a vigorous feeling as it became more intense.

Currently, Mu Chen had gradually become skilled in the Great Pagoda Art, but he has not been able to reach the Foundation Level yet. However, he could faintly feel that step would not be very far away...

Mu Chen did not become rash or impatient. He quietly exerted restraint on the Spiritual Energy that was being infused to his aurasea. When the final traces of the Spiritual Energy entered his aurasea, he could feel a tremble within it. The dark Black Spiritual Energy within his aurasea surged. It actually swelled up at an alarming rate and strength began to flow through his limbs.

Mu Chen was a little bit startled by the change within his aurasea. He could not help but chuckle loudly. It really was unexpected that he actually broke through at this moment...

Chapter 10 – Academy Competition

The following day. When the hot sunlight showered down onto the Northern Spiritual City, gradual signs of hotheadedness appeared within the Northern Spiritual Academy.

The Northern Spiritual Academy is divided into East and West Branches. There is considerable competition between the two branches. However, it must be mentioned that there will only be growth when there is competition. This is why the Northern Spiritual Academy had produced many outstanding students during the past two years.

Among the competition between the two branches, the Academy Competition, held once every couple of months, was the most fiery and fierce. The rankings of many individuals within the Academy would be decided during the Academy Competition. A youth will ultimately seek to prevail over others. In addition, who wouldn't want to show off in front of the many beautiful female seniors and juniors? Because of this, many students would put in a lot of effort to obtain decent results at the Academy Competition.

At the west area of the Northern Spiritual Academy, there was a vast arena-like space. Many rings for martial competition were distributed through it. Near the rings, there were many stone staircases that acted as seats. Right now, these seats were all completely filled with a sea of humans.

All kinds of sound such as conversation and whispers gathered together. Moreover, it was mixed with a tinkling sound of laughter from the young girls and it filled the atmosphere with a youthful vigor.

Within the large stadium, there were many people. However, it was clearly divided into two sections. That is the West Branch and the East Branch students. Because of the competitive relationship they shared, the two sides would occasionally provoke each other,

making the atmosphere particularly lively.

“We, the East Branch, only occupied four seats out of the top ten within the Earth Class. Moreover, the top three were all occupied by the West Branch. I really don’t know if there will be any changes after this Academy Competition.”

“We the East Branch also have a number of powerful individuals. Liu Feng and Tan Qingshan are rumored to soon reach the Spiritual Movement Stage. If they succeeded, then it would be possible for them to reach the top five.

At the seats of the East Branch, a few students talked to each other. On the side, Su Ling heard the conversation and pouted his lips. He said: “You’re not even aware of the main point of the Academy Competition. It doesn’t matter how many seats the East Branch is behind, as long as Brother Mu obtains first place, the West Branch would not dare to bark at us.”

The East Branch students looked at each other and immediately sighed. Although what he said was correct, Mu Chen would still need to defeat Liu Yang in order to become number one of the Earth Class. It was rumored that he possesses a Human Level Spiritual Pulse...

“Brother Mu, this time, we, the East Branch, are all counting on you.” Su Ling grinned at the boy in front of him as he spoke.

Mu Chen only smiled but his eyes remained at the stadium. Although it had not officially begun, there were already a few students beginning to fight in the ring.

Just when Mu Chen stared at the stadium, a ruckus sounded out from behind him. Then, a fragrance came over as a graceful and slender figure appeared by his side. A sweet voice appeared: “Oi!”

Mu Chen tilted his head to stare at Tang Qian’Er, who appeared beside him. The latter wore a jaded green outfit. Her bouncing black ponytail and extremely pretty face attracted many fervent

stares over from the surroundings.

Tang Qian'Er was a student from the East Branch Heaven Class and she was extremely beautiful. She had an amazing personality as well. Thus, so there was no shame for her to be considered as one of the Flowers within the East Branch. No matter where she goes, she would naturally attract a variety of envious eyes.

"Why did you come?" Due to Tang Qian'Er appearing here, Mu Chen was a little surprised. This should be the period when the Heaven Class students are training, right?

"I came here to cheer for you." Tang Qian'Er smiled. She joked around and said: "And in case you were beaten down completely, I can still carry you back."

"Why thank you." Mu Chen shook his head sourly.

"Hey, will you be fine? You had a conflict with Liu Yang yesterday, so he probably made up his mind to cause trouble for you today." Concern filled Tang Qian'Er's eyes. Although teasing is just teasing, she also understood the importance of today's events. Otherwise, she would not throw aside her cultivation course and run over here.

"I'll do my best." Mu Chen smiled. Just when he started to speak, his expression suddenly changed. He raised his head up to stare at the other side. In the center of the West Branch's seats, a cold gaze stared directly at him. It was Liu Yang.

Others such as Mu Yuan and Xue Dong gathered near Liu Yang's side. At this moment, they were all sending out challenging sneers over to this side.

Mu Chen and Liu Yang exchanged gazes from afar. At the place where the gazes intersect, sparks seemed to flash over there.

The two of them were both well-known individuals within the two branches. And many people knew what the main show was for today. This is why their confronting gazes made them grin. It

seems like the today's show would not escape them.

Liu Yang stared at Mu Chen. Then his attention turned to Tang Qian'Er, who was beside him. He could not help but grit his teeth. When he looked at Mu Chen again, the gaze turned colder again.

"How troubling..." Mu Chen was able to discover all these subtle changes. He then looked at Tang Qian'Er as he spoke. Everybody in the Northern Spiritual Academy knew that Liu Yang liked Tang Qian'Er. However, he had never gotten a good look from her. Aside from the grudge held between their fathers, Mu Chen would sometimes think that Liu Yang was against him so often because of the jealousy that Tang Qian'Er was close to him.

"If you dislike me giving you trouble, then I'll leave." Tang Qian'Er said with a straight face.

Mu Chen could not resist laughing. His black eyes stared at Tang Qian'Er. The boy's bright eyes made the girl blush slightly, but, as a stubborn person, she still managed to stare directly at Mu Chen.

"If it's him...He shouldn't be considered trouble." Mu Chen said with a smile.

"Hmph, you just know how to boast. Say that after you won."

Tang Qian'Er pouted her lips and she glanced at the stadium with her beautiful eyes. Her pretty face suddenly changed and she whispered: "That guy actually came as well..."

Mu Chen's line of sight followed hers over. His expression was also startled for a moment. Not only him, the entire East Branch seats instantly became a little quieter.

Their gaze landed at the West Branch seats. There were a couple individuals at the age of 17 to 18. They were older than the other Heaven Class students by a bit. At this moment, these individuals were all leaning on the rail and lazily stared at the ring within the stadium and would occasionally crack jokes. It was obvious that their attention was not on the stadium.

At the center of those individuals, there were two figures that stood out the most. A boy and a girl. The girl had a bright red dress and her peach-like eyes were extremely attractive. It was Hong Ling from the West Branch.

The other figure was a person dressed up in white. He had a tall stature and a handsome appearance. At this moment, he vaguely glanced through the West Branch area. The areas that he glanced upon instantly became quiet, it was evident that their momentum was oppressed.

“Kuh…It’s actually Liu MuBai. I didn’t think that he would come as well…” Su Ling gulped and said with a dry voice.

If they were facing Liu Yang, they would still be able to have a bit of fighting spirit within their heart. However, in front of Liu MuBai, they were not able to produce the slightest bit of courage.

Because Liu MuBai is the true number one within the Northern Spiritual Academy. Ever since he entered the Northern Spiritual Academy, nobody was ever able to shake his number one position.

Mu Chen’s gaze stared at the dazzling figure in white. His black eyes exchanged gazes with him. Even from a distance, it still seems that there was an oppression enveloping them.

The four eyes exchanged gazes. However, within Mu Chen’s eyes, the fear that the other students have did not appear. This calm exchange of gazes made the figure in white a little surprised and he frowned.

“Oh, that boy has quite the charisma.” Beside Liu Mubai, the seniors from the West Branch actually noticed that Mu Chen was not afraid of Liu Mubai and was a little shocked.

Hong Ling’s eyes also stared at Mu Chen when he exchanged gazes with Liu Mubai. The boy’s face seemed to be slightly immature, but it made others feel calm. It felt that even the genuine number one of the Northern Spiritual Academy was not

able to impact him.

She could not help but become entranced. The timid boy that had follow her back then really changed a lot...

“Big Brother!”

A sound came over from nearby. Liu Yang stared happily over to this side.

Liu Mubai gave a nod towards Liu Yang. Then, his hands clenched onto the railing. He did not say anything, but the atmosphere at the East Branch shrank a bit. On the other hand, the West Branch’s momentum expanded by taking advantage of this.

It was evident that Liu Mubai purposely came over to subdue their momentum. With his position in the Northern Spiritual Academy, even the East Branch Heaven Class seniors would not dare to confront him.

And just when Liu Mubai’s imposing manner oppressed the audience, a crisp bell sound rang out suddenly. This made many students recover their focus. The Academy Competition was finally about to begin.

Chapter 11 – Tan Qingshan

The crisp sound of the bell rang out through the skies. Beneath it, the lively atmosphere also reached its peak.

Directly at the north of the stadium, three figures were sitting side by side. The person at the left was Teacher Mo that appeared yesterday. The person at the right was a middle-aged man with a skinny face. His face was tense and his eyes were slightly sunken. He seemed to be quite strict.

“Oh, the Academy Competition this time seemed to be livelier than ever.” In the main seat between the two individuals was a white-haired old man. He smiled as he stared at the fiery atmosphere below and laughed.

“The situation was mostly clear for the past Academy Competitions, but this one is somewhat difficult to predict.” Teacher Mo said with a smile.

“Why is it difficult to predict? Liu Yang is currently at the Spiritual Movement Stage Initial Phase. Coupled with his Human Level Spiritual Pulse, he would probably be ranked rather high up even within the Heaven Class. Although that Mu Chen is pretty good, there is still a bit of a difference between him and Liu Yang. “The stern middle-aged man seated at the right curled his lips. He was the highest level instructor for the West Branch. He naturally wanted the West Branch students to get the best results.

“Teacher Xi, it is not wise to look down on a person who qualified for the Spiritual Road.” Teacher Mo muttered.

“Unfortunately, that is only said for the ones that successfully passed through the trial within the Spiritual Road.” The stern middle-aged man shook his head as he spoke.

The white-haired old man heard the dispute between the two of them and smiled. Apparently, he had long been accustomed to it.

His muddle eyes looked at the seat within the East Branch and stopped at a boy with a thin body. He said: “It’s a pity. Our Northern Spiritual Realm haven’t had a person who qualified for the Spiritual Road for over ten years…This Mu Chen obtained the qualifications, yet he was kicked out halfway. He never experienced the final stage of the Spiritual Road, so his one year trial within the Spiritual Road was considered in vain. This even wasted one year’s time of training for him.

Teacher Mo nodded regretfully. They weren’t able to cultivate Spiritual Energy within the Spiritual Road. However, they were able to obtain Spiritual Energy Empowerment if they successfully passed through the final stage of the trial. If they were extremely talented individuals, it wasn’t impossible for them to advance to the Spiritual Rotation Stage or even the Spirit Stage within one night. Originally, Mu Chen would have become the strongest individual within the younger generation in Northern Spiritual Realm if he passed through the trial. The space for the Five Great Academies would also be properly delivered to his hand and nobody would be able to compete against him for the qualifications.

At that time, even a person like Liu Mubai could only be below him.

However, who would have expected this unforeseeable event of being kicked out halfway. Mu Chen failed to obtain the most valuable Spiritual Energy Empowerment from the Spiritual Road and was kicked out halfway. Because of this, he had wasted an entire year of time to cultivate Spiritual Energy.

“Principal Xiao, what on earth did Mu Chen do in the Spiritual Road? Why would he be kicked out halfway through? I know that boy’s talents, his disposition is also excellent. He would never have been kicked out due to poor results.” Teacher Mo frowned, he could not help but ask. He only knew that Mu Chen caused some sort of commotion within the Spiritual Road, but he was not aware

of the details.

When he heard this question, the stern middle-aged man also looked at the Principal of the Northern Spiritual Academy. It was obvious that he was also curious about it.

On the other hand, Principal Xiao gently stroked his beard and gave a bitter smile when he heard this question. He said: “I’m not too sure about it either, but I heard that the commotion that he caused in the Spiritual Road was not small…It even startled the higher ups of the Five Great Academy.”

Teacher Mo and the stern middle aged man were both stunned. Their eyes had suspicion within them. They never imagined that Mu Chen caused an event that would startle the entire world.

“Well, let’s not talk about this now. The bell has rung already, it is time to announce that the Academy Competition has started.” It was obvious that Principal Xiao did not want to say any more about it and immediately waved his hand as he spoke.

Teacher Mo nodded after he heard him speak. He stood up and glanced at the entire place. A deep, forceful voice echoed within every student’s ears.

“It is time now, the Academy Competition has started. Remember, you are not allowed to kill during the duel between the two branches!”

“You should all know the rules already. The ones that step onto the ring have an opportunity to challenge their opponents. However, you only have one chance, so you should know your limits and pick a suitable opponent.”

“Yes!”

Within the venue, the dense pack of human respectfully replied.

“Since it’s like this…” Teacher Mo nodded and waved his hand: “Let it begin.”

Right after his hand was lowered, another loud bell sound rang out. It almost spread through the entire Northern Spiritual Academy.

“Liu Xiong, hurry and come down here. I’ve disliked you for a long time!”

“Chen Tong, you should also come out as well. This time, I’ll pay you back from last time!”

Mu Chen stared at the messy scene within the venue. He could not help but smile. However, the majority of these duels were rather ordinary, so he did not care too much about it. He would only occasionally look in the direction of the West Branch’s Liu Yang. Liu Yang, too, was staring coldly at him.

By now, everybody in the Northern Spiritual Academy knew that Liu Yang had mentioned about selecting Mu Chen as his opponent during the Academy Competition. Thus, nobody in the West Branch dared to challenge him first. Of course with Mu Chen’s strength, the West Branch students also knew that the only one who was qualified to be his opponent was Liu Yang.

They were quite looking forward to the duel between the two most excellent students from the East and West Branch Earth Class.

Mu Chen did not care about the cold stare that Liu Yang gave towards him. He would occasionally talk softly with Tang Qian’Er who was beside him. However, this action only caused Liu Yang to grit his teeth even more.

The duels within the stadium were quite lively. However, the ones that attracted the most interest were the students ranked rather high up within the Earth Class. Because only those duels would be able to change the rankings.

“That’s our East Branch’s Tan Qingshan. Sure enough, he took action...”

Su Ling, who was beside him, suddenly let out an excited shout. Mu Chen's gaze also followed it over and looked. Not far away from them, a boy in black clothes stood up and walked towards a ring.

The boy looked quite skinny and his face looked slightly pale. However, he pursed his lips tightly to show his determination. He did not speak or smile. It was as if he didn't hear the sounds from his surroundings.

"Tan Qingshan..."

Mu Chen stared at the boy in black clothes and was slightly startled. He was somewhat familiar with him. Tang Qingshan was considered to be the strongest person within the East Branch Earth Class before he came to the Northern Spiritual Academy. Even now, he would be able to reach the top five among the Earth Class students.

Tan Qingshan also noticed Mu Chen's gaze. His body paused for a moment and he raised his head to glance at him. A faint smile appeared on his silent and unsmiling face.

"Good luck."

Mu Chen gave a smile to him. Although he was not particular close to him, they were still East Branch students. And so, he did not dislike Tan Qingshan.

Tan Qingshan nodded. Then, he jumped onto a ring. Suddenly, many eyes shot straight towards him. Within the East Branch, Tan Qingshan had quite a bit of reputation.

"I wonder who he is going to challenge..."

A few people whispered and their eyes were filled with curiosity. There probably aren't many individuals within the West Branch that Tan Qingshan would regard as an opponent, right?

"Liu Yang."

Under the many gazes, Tan Qingshan's gaze stared directly at a figure in front of the West Branch. His quiet voice caused a large uproar.

"He actually wants to challenge Liu Yang?"

Many students looked at each other. Although Tan Qingshan was considered to be someone ranked high up within the Earth Class, but there was still a large gap between him and Liu Yang. Nobody even imagined that he would take the initiative to challenge him.

Within the West Branch's seats, Liu Yang was also startled for a moment. His eyes soon became depressed. Currently, Mu Chen hasn't been challenged by anyone, yet he was already challenged. Wouldn't that make others feel that Liu Yang's intimidation was weaker than Mu Chen?

"Conceited guy."

Liu Yang stood up. That gloomy atmosphere caused the West Branch students nearby to shudder. It was obvious that Liu Yang was quite terrifying at this moment.

Liu Yang jumped straight into the ring. He stared at Tan Qingshan , then he looked at Mu Chen. He said with an expressionless appearance: "Did you find someone to test me out first?

When his voice dropped, he did not wait for Mu Chen's response and stared down at Tan Qingshan. The smile he gave was a bit ghastly: "Ignorant trash, do you still think that you're the number one person within the East Branch Earth Class?"

Tan Qingshan stared at Liu Yang. His eyes became a lot more serious. He was once the strongest student within the East Branch Earth Class. Although that title was transferred to Mu Chen later, his prideful self continued to work hard and train. The relationship he shared with Mu Chen was more like a competitive relationship. After all, they were both East Branch students, so he

would not cause trouble for Mu Chen. However, if he was able to defeat Liu Yang here, he should be able to retrieve back his first place.

Tan Qingshan grasped his palms tightly. A deep yellow Spiritual Energy surged throughout his body and finally wrapped around his arms. A fierce, imposing manner slowly emitted out from his body.

“This Spiritual Energy…”

Su Ling and the others were surprised as they stared at the Spiritual Energy above Tan Qingshan’s arms.

“He also advanced to the Spiritual Movement Stage!”

Chapter 12 – Action

“Spiritual Movement Stage?”

Many individuals issued a cry in surprise as they looked at the ring. Following that, astonished gazes began to gather at Tan Qingshan. No wonder he dared to challenge Liu Yang, so he, too, had advanced into the Spiritual Movement Stage.

“Amazing…” Su Ling also had a shocked expression. He stared enviously at Tan Qingshan’s back. Currently within the Earth Class, there were only three individuals that advanced to the Spiritual Movement Stage: Mu Chen, Liu Yang and Mu Yuan. And now, Tan Qingshan was the fourth.

Mu Chen also nodded his head slightly. It was evident that Tan Qingshan was quite talented as he was able to become the number one individual within the East Branch Earth Class before. Most importantly, his family environment wasn’t that good. All his achievements was something that he obtained through desperate training. Thus, Mu Chen actually had a favorable expression towards him. A person, who earned his own right to be arrogant, was someone worthy of respect.

“Oh, so this is why you have such courage. It turned out you also advanced to the Spiritual Movement Stage.” Liu Yang was slightly stunned by Tan Qingshan’s aura for a moment, he soon let out a sneer.

Tan Qingshan remained silent. His gaze towards Liu Yang gradually became sharp and the deep yellow Spiritual Energy on his arm exuded a heavy fluctuation as it rise.

Liu Yang stared coldly at Tan Qingshan, he extended a hand and gently curved it: “Let’s do this. Don’t say that I didn’t give you the chance.”

“How arrogant!”

Seeing Liu Yang act like this, Su Ling and the others cursed at him in anger.

Just when Su Ling cursed at him, Tan Qingshan's legs violent stomped onto the ground. His figure rushed out like a cheetah and the deep yellow flow mixed with a heavy force headed straight towards Liu Yang's chest.

Liu Yang stared at the approaching Tan Qingshan and issued out a sigh. The fiery red Spiritual Energy exploded out from his arms. He did not try to avoid and instead, his fingers clenched into a fist as it bombarded heavily against Tan Qingshan's palms.

A deep voice sounded out and blast enveloped the two individuals. Dust immediately stirred above the ground and the two bodies trembled. However, Liu Yang did not move at all while Tan Qingshan took a step back.

A serious expression helped stabilize Tan Qingshan's body. The deep yellow Spiritual Energy on his arms became denser and his entire arm showed a deep yellow color as if it was a rock.

"Mountain Fist!"

Tan Qingshan rushed out again. The speed that the arms lashed out was slightly slower, but the heavy force was like a rockslide. This made many people's faces stiffened with dismay.

BOOM!

Tan Qingshan's arms were like a rock. It let out a fast and sharp blast and waves of offensive were hurled towards Liu Yang. Yet Liu Yang's face remained cold. The fiery red Spiritual Energy seemed to wrap around his arms like a fire and he forcibly blocked all of Tan Qingshan's attacks.

The blast formed by the two Spiritual Energies as they collide cleared the entire ring. The people who were nearby even felt pain on their face.

"Tan Qingshan is pretty good. He is able to fight neck to neck

against Liu Yang!" Su Ling and the others let out a cry of joy as they watched the fierce battle.

"However, Tan Qingshan had only reached the Spiritual Movement Stage, it would not be easy for him to defeat Liu Yang." Tang Qian'Er gently shook her head. Although she disliked Liu Yang, she still had to admit that he had quite the skill.

"What Tan Qingshan trained in should be the Mountain Art. It is a Common Tier High Rank Spiritual Art from the Northern Spiritual Academy. However, Liu Yang might have trained in the Spiritual Tier Low Rank Spiritual Art Solarflame..." Mu Chen said as he stared at the ring.

Su Ling suddenly let out a sigh of regret when he heard those words. Apparently, he hoped that Tan QIngshan would be able to win. If that were to have happened, then Liu Yang probably wouldn't dare to act so arrogant from now on, right?

As they held a conversation with each other, the battle within the ring also became more intense. Tan Qingshan's face seemed to have turned dark red. It was obvious that he had pushed his strength to the limits. The attacks were also become more and more wild.

A rock-like punch suddenly soared and smashed heavily towards Liu Yang's belly. However, just when the fist was about to come into contact with Liu Yang's body, Liu Yang moved backwards using a strange step. He avoided the sharp blow that Tan Qingshan had been plotting for a long time.

When his fist was avoided, Tan Qingshan felt that he was careless. He, then, noticed that the corner of Liu Yang's lips went up and formed a cold smile.

"Solarflame Fist!"

Liu Yang's fingers formed into a palm. He suddenly let out a shot. The fiery red Spiritual Energy exploded outwards like a flame and

a powerful force and heat erupted out. It directly passed through Tan Qingshan's defense and fiercely landed on his chest.

The flame-like Spiritual Energy exploded outwards when Liu Yang's palms made contact with Tan Qingshan's chest. That enormous energy directly blasted away Tan Qingshan. Under many watchful gazes, Tan Qingshan fell heavily on the ring and immediately spat out blood.

Seeing that the situation changed instantly, an uproar suddenly burst out from the surroundings.

Tan Qingshan wiped the blood from his mouth and gritted his teeth. Liu Yang's Spiritual Energy was blazing and domineering. It was many times stronger than the Spiritual Energy that he had cultivated.

Liu Yang stared coldly at the helpless Tan Qingshan. He did not have any intentions of stopping. He pushed off with the tip of his toe and he charged out like an eagle. A leg lashed out at Tan Qingshan.

Tan Qingshan weaved around awkwardly and narrowly avoided Liu Yang's attack. His face was a little bit pale. It was obvious that he did not expect Liu Yang to pursue him relentlessly after he gained the upper hand.

However, he also had a stubborn attitude. Since Liu Yang acted so overbearing, he refused to admit his defeat. He only stared fiercely at Liu Yang.

"So there really is a bit of pride left within you?

Seeing this, Liu Yang shook his head and sneered. Hostility appeared within his eyes and he moved and appeared to the right of Tan Qingshan. Mixed with a blazing Spiritual Energy, the shadow of his leg flashed and he kicked directly at Tan Qingshan's chest.

Tang Qinshan's body skimmed along the ground for about ten

meters. Blood swelled up from his throat again, but he forcibly swallowed it back down.

“Motherf*cker, do you have any sense of shame? You hit him even after he lost!”

When they saw Liu Yang acting so oppressive, many East Branch students rallied their anger and shouted furiously as well.

“You bastard!” Su Ling also cursed angrily.

When Liu Yang heard the condemning shouts from the East Branch, his eyes darkened. Not only did he not stop, he took a big step towards Tan Qingshan and kicked with his leg again. He fired it towards Tan Qingshan as he retreated awkwardly.

A deep voice rang out. However, this time, Tan Qingshan did not move backwards. This is because a slender figure suddenly appeared in front of him. Liu Yang’s sharp leg strike was grasped tightly by that figure’s hand.

“Mu Chen?”

Tan Qingshan saw the familiar figure and was startled.

“Are you alright?”

Mu Chen turned around and asked him.

Tan Qingshan shook his head and the eyes that stared at Liu Yang were still fierce like a wolf.

“You are already very strong for being able to fight with him when you had just advanced into the Spiritual Movement Stage. If you train for a while longer, it would not be difficult to catch up to him.” Mu Chen said as he smiled.

He knew that Tan Qingshan may remain silent on the surface, but his personality was quite stubborn and prideful. This is why he did not tell him to surrender. If he blurted out those words, it would give a considerable blow to Tan Qingshan instead.

“Thank you.”

Tan Qingshan's heart calmed down because he heard Mu Chen's words. He stared at the handsome face covered with a brilliant smile and whispered with gratitude: "I'll leave this guy to you. However, I will personally defeat him by myself in the future."

After he said up to this point, he paused for a moment. He stared at Mu Chen and said: "You are stronger than me, so...please help the East Branch win the Number One place back!" When he finished saying these words, he did not stay here longer. He turned around and jumped off the ring.

Mu Chen stared at Tan Qingshan as he jumped off the ring. Afterwards, he turned his head towards Liu Yang, who had a sullen expression, and said: "Next up, I will be your opponent."

Liu Yang stared at Mu Chen. His mouth cracked open and revealed a sinister smile. Within his eyes, it was filled with ruthlessness and cruelty.

"I will entertain you well!"

On the ring, the atmosphere instantly became tense as the two of them confronted each other. Many students directed their gaze over to this side as well. This, right now, is the match between the strongest individuals within the Northern Spiritual Academy Earth Class.

Chapter 13 – Fighting Against Liu Yang

Around the ring, countless eyes gathered on the two juvenile figures on the ring. Their eyes were filled with expectation. So this is the strongest two individuals within the Northern Spiritual Academy Earth Class.

“That Mu Chen is finally willing to go onto the ring. I am quite curious if he would be a worthy opponent for Liu Yang.”

At the corner of the West Branch seats, a few boys from the West Branch Heaven Class stared at the two figures on the ring. They could not help but laugh. In fact, they were quite curious about Mu Chen. After all, he was the only one who qualified for the Spiritual Road within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

If it wasn’t for the fact that he was somehow kicked out of the Spiritual Road, Mu Chen would probably be at a level, where they would not be able to reach, right now. Perhaps even a genius like Liu Mubai would be inferior to him.

After they thought about this point, they snuck a glance at Liu Mubai, who was in front of them. However, they did not dare to say these words out loud.

Hearing those words, the handsome youth let out a faint smile. Within his eyes that stared at the thin boy, a cold radiance was hidden deep inside.

“The Spiritual Road is completely based on luck, so there are times that it would make a mistake. It could be possible that the place should have belonged to Brother Liu instead. In the end, a mistake was made and the place was given to Mu Chen. Otherwise, why would that person be kicked out?” A person, who was quite compatible with Liu Mubai, curled his lips and sneered.

The nearby West Branch Heaven Class students nodded their heads as they caught word of this. Although they did not agree

within their hearts, it was evident that it was irrational to offend Liu Mubai, who was at the summit of the Northern Spiritual Academy, for Mu Chen, who was kicked out of the Spiritual Road halfway through.

“Hong Ling, who do you think have a higher chance of victory?” Liu Mubai smiled and asked the charming girl with a red dress beside him.

The girl called Hong Ling stared at the ring. Her pretty eyes remained for a moment at Mu Chen’s body. At this moment, the boy has straightened his body like a spear and the previously seen laziness seemed to have disappeared a little. It was replaced by a gradually exposing sharp edge.

The little boy back then had definitely changed a lot.

“They are both at the Spiritual Movement Stage Initial Phase. Liu Yang trained in the Spiritual Tier Low Rank Solarflame that belongs to the Liu Territory. However, Mu Chen’s father is also a Territory Lord. The Spiritual Art that he gave him must not be something ordinary. In this case, they are equal in this category…”

Hong Ling’s eyes wavered, her somewhat lazy expression was even more charming: “However, Liu Yang possesses the Human Level Spiritual Pulse. If he were to activate it, he would have the strength comparable to a Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase. Mu Chen would be in a disadvantaged position due to it.”

Liu Mubai smiled when he heard those words. He stared at Mu Chen, who was inside the ring, and said: “Liu Yang’s abilities aren’t bad. It wouldn’t be injustice if Mu Chen loses to him. Actually, I was curious why he was able to obtain the Spiritual Road’s qualifications.”

Hong Ling glanced at him for a moment. It seems that Liu Mubai harbored ill-feelings to Mu Chen for obtaining the Spiritual Road’s qualifications. He had always been proud of himself and believed that he was the most outstanding person among the young

generation within the Northern Spiritual Realm. The Spiritual Road's qualifications should have landed on him instead. But the final results was somewhat beyond everyone's expectations.

"If he cannot even defeat Liu Yang here, then the selection of the Spiritual Road will have truly disappointed me."

Liu Mubai gently said as he gripped his hands tightly. A deep hand imprint was actually kneaded onto the railing made by fine iron and a chill flowed deep within his eyes.

He could not tolerate a useless person for stealing something that originally belonged to him.

"Brother Mu, good luck!"

"Brother Mu, take back the Earth Class Number One for the East Branch!"

The surrounding East Branch students all had an excited expression as they stared at the two individuals facing off. For the past two years, the East Branch has always been suppressed by the West Branch. It did not matter whether it was the Heaven Class or Earth Class, they were pressured by the West Branch and could not lift their heads up. And right now, a person finally appeared within the East Branch that could fight against the West Branch.

"A group of whimsical fellows."

When Liu Yang heard these voices, a hint of hostility appeared on his smile. He stared and Mu Chen and said in a mocking voice: "I really want to know what splendid expressions they would have when you lose."

Facing his taunt, Mu Chen did not have the slightest anger within the face. He only extended his hand out and said as he gave off a shallow smile: "You probably don't have that ability."

"You should know your limits!"

Anger flashed through Liu Yang's eyes. He grasped his hands

tightly and the flame-like, fiery red Spiritual Energy wrapped around his arms. In the next moment, he took a step forward and a subtle sound rang out from below his feet. His body charged out like a cheetah.

Wrapped in fiery red Spiritual, his fist instantly approached Mu Chen. The Spiritual Energy oppressed the air and let out a strange crunching sound.

Mu Chen's body moved towards the side. The moment the wind from Liu Yang's punch passed through his body, his right hand sprang up. A dark black Spiritual Energy surrounded his fingertips and like a sharp knife, it chopped Liu Yang's wrist mercilessly.

Mu Chen did not hold back, but Liu Yang definitely had some ability as he was able to become the West Branch Earth Class Number One. He immediately changed his fist into a palm and slashed heavily at Mu Chen using a backhand hand blade.

A deep sound rang out. The two of them took half a step back when the two Spiritual Energies collided.

"You actually want to compete with me in terms of density of Spiritual Energy?!"

Liu Yang let out a cold laugh and stomped with his feet. A fiery red Spiritual Energy actually wrapped around his legs as well. The strength of this Spiritual Energy was many times more powerful compared to Tan Qingshan earlier.

"Swish!"

Spiritual Energy was infused into Liu Yang's legs and his speed instantly increased. His figure shifted and others were able to see his body vaguely. By relying on this speed, he was able to let out an extremely ferocious offensive in an instant.

Bang, Bang, Bang!

Liu Yang's blurry figure seemed to surround Mu Chen like a whirlwind of fire. Fist, Leg, Elbow. A mixture of brutal attacks,

coupled with a savage Spiritual Energy overwhelmingly enveloped Mu Chen.

Outside of the ring, many students made a commotion as they saw Liu Yang instantly let out fierce attacks. Even Tan Qingshan, who was defeated earlier by Liu Yang, had a serious expression. This density of Liu Yang's Spiritual Energy was probably about to reach Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase. Along with the fact that the Spiritual Art that he trained was not a Common Tier, his combat ability was definitely shocking.

The excitement on Su Ling and the others' face faded a lot and a touch of concerned appeared within their eyes. They only recovered from their surprise now. That Liu Yang is truly a powerful individual.

"Don't worry. Mu Chen won't lose that easily."

Tang Qian'Er's beautiful eyes stared at the ring. After a while, she let out a smile. She had the strength of a Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase, so naturally, she would be able to see Liu Yang's speed clearly. Although Liu Yang's attacks were like a tempest, but a blue rock was standing firmly within that tempest.

Many eyes were firmly fixed onto the figure within the whirlwind of fire. The figure either avoided or countered the attacks and actually managed to counter all the violent attacks that Liu Yang sent out. That appearance of his seemed to have seen through every single hidden offensive of Liu Yang.

"As expected from a person that experienced the Spiritual Road's trial..." Within the main seat, Principal Xiao stared at this scene and a hint of admiration passed through his eyes.

"Mu Chen has an accurate vision and remained calm as he fought against his opponent. This disposition will not be inferior to veterans, who have fought hundreds of battles." Teacher Mo also nodded. His words were filled with praise. If his Spiritual Energy was weak, he would always be able to cultivate it. However, that

strong heart and mind isn't something that could be easily honed.

"His vision is indeed pretty good. He knows the weakness of Liu Yang's offensive. It could be considered as breaking through strength using techniques. However, there is also a phrase known as "A Power Breakthrough Ten Users" [1.It's a Chinese idiom stating how a person with enormous strength would be able to win against ten people who knows martial arts/techniques.]. By avoiding like this, it is obvious that his Spiritual Energy isn't as strong as Liu Yang. As long as Liu Yang gathers his energy for one attack, it would be difficult for Mu Chen to deal with it." The thin middle-aged Teacher Xi said nearby. As an instructor, they weren't just powerful, they also had accurate visions.

Principal Xiao and Teacher Mo also nodded when they heard these words. The situation was indeed like this, but...is Mu Chen currently just taking evasive action?

Within the flame whirlwind, a cry suddenly rang out. They could only see Mu Chen suddenly taking action. His two fingers were sharp like an unparalleled dagger and surrounding it was a dark black Spiritual Energy. Like a lightning bolt, it penetrated the whirlwind and stabbed onto the swift figure.

A cry sounded out. As the whirlwind suddenly became still, a figure staggered back a dozen steps. The clothes located at his shoulder was already destroyed, it was evident that this was caused by Mu Chen's finger.

The large commotion suddenly intensified around the ring. Both the East Branch and West Branch students had an astonished expression. It was clear that nobody expected Liu, who was still letting out a fierce offensive earlier, would be repulsed by Mu Chen.

"You!"

Liu Yang's face suddenly became depressed as if tears were about to come out. He stared at Mu Chen and took a deep breath. On his

right palm, a fiery red Spiritual Energy surged out.

The fiery red Spiritual Energy rose like a flame as it gathered on Liu Yang's palm. The Spiritual Energy quickly shrank and a palm-sized sun slowly appeared.

A violent fluctuation gradually emitted out.

The commotion outside of the ring quickly faded away. Many students watched in shock at this scene. It was obvious that Liu Yang has pushed the Spiritual Energy within his body to its very limits.

Mu Chen looked at Liu Yang, who had gone all out. He curled his lips and his eyes instantly turned cold.

His two palms swirled and he began to circulate the Great Pagoda Art. Within the aurasea in his body, the dark black Spiritual Energy quickly trembled and the levels of amplification ripped as it came out.

"First Level...Fifth Level...Tenth Level...Thirteenth Level...

The dark Spiritual Energy wrapped around Mu Chen's palms. A domineering atmosphere exploded outwards. There were faint signs that it had already surpassed Liu Yang's violent Spiritual Energy fluctuations.

When the Spiritual Energy amplification has reached the thirteenth level, Mu Chen did not stop. As he gradually got used to the Great Pagoda Art, the amplification limit of the Great Pagoda Art wasn't just this much!

Mu Chen narrowed his eyes. A razor sharp edge appeared within them.

Within the aurasea, a slight buzzing sound came out. Mu Chen's body violently shook.

The Eighteenth Level!

The dark Spiritual Energy violently stormed out of Mu Chen's

body. The pressure from this powerful Spiritual Energy instantly suppressed Liu Yang's Spiritual Energy.

"What a powerful Spiritual Energy!"

Principal Xiao, Teacher Mo and Teacher Xi all had a surprised expression. This degree of Spiritual Energy is almost equal to the Spiritual Energy of a Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase. And they could feel that the dark Spiritual Energy pouring out of Mu Chen's body contained an overbearing intention. It was clear that this wasn't something that an ordinary Spiritual Art would possess.

"Mu Chen, you're seeking your death!"

When his Spiritual Energy was actually suppressed, Liu Yang's face also showed some surprise. Then, he let out a angry roar and took a step forward. Afterwards, many of the audiences saw that fiery red lights actually lit up on his body. These lights spread throughout his entire body. They could vaguely see a strange vital energy channel rushing out like a snake.

"Spiritual Pulse?!"

Voices broke out around the ring again. They did not imagine that Liu Yang would actually be forced to activate his Spiritual Pulse. But with this, the situation should be reversed by him again!

Chapter 14 – Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase

Following the appearance of the fiery red lights, the fiery red Spiritual Energy violently expanded on top of Liu Yang's palms and the originally palm-sized sun doubled in size. At the same time, the Spiritual Energy surrounding the world seemed to attracted to these lights on Liu Yang's body. It further increased his momentum.

Surrounding the ring, many students' expression became serious as they watched this scene. It was obvious that Liu Yang has exhausted all his strength right now. This offensive would definitely be as powerful as a wild lightning.

He plans on defeating Mu Chen with this one move.

As Su Ling and the others stared at the ring, their expression was filled with nervousness. Beside them, Tang Qian'Er's beautiful eyes also became more solemn. Liu Yang's strength was not weak even within the Heaven Class.

"I would like to see how you counter this!"

Liu Yang's face became dark as he directed a smile towards Mu Chen. His body stormed out and the sun-like, fiery red Spiritual Energy was so violent that it was glaring.

Liu Yang's speed was extremely fast. He seemed to have instantly appeared in front of Mu Chen and fired off a palm. The sun-like Spiritual Energy on his palm was relentlessly smashed towards Mu Chen.

"Solarflame Palm!"

The violent Spiritual Energy brought over a gust of wind. It made Mu Chen's clothes flutter as his black hair constantly danced in the sky. Yet, there were no signs of anxiety within the black eyes that stared at Liu Yang.

“Despite all this, you’re still trying to pretend at this moment! Go to hell!”

Under Mu Chen’s calm gaze, Liu Yang’s heart trembled. The fury within him grew even further. I wonder if you would remain this calm after I step on you in front of everybody here?!

“You still want to step on me?”

Mu Chen looked at the quickly approaching Liu Yang. He could see the latter’s eyes clearly and his lips slowly erected an arc.

It was cold like a blade.

“Unfortunately for you, you don’t have the qualifications to do so…”

Mu Chen lifted his head boldly. The dark Spiritual Energy furiously rushed out from his body as he clenched his hands tightly together. The domineering black lights traveled back and forth at his fingers.

A powerful fluctuation erupted out.

“This Spiritual Energy fluctuation…” At the main seats, Principal Xiao and the two other instructors revealed a surprised expression.

“Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase?”

A fierce uproar broke out from the surroundings. This Spiritual Energy fluctuation revealed that it had truly entered into the level of the Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase. Mu Chen had actually broken through and advanced to the Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase.

“That boy…really has quite the skill.”

At the West Branch seats, the students from the West Branch Heaven Class also had a grave complexion. With the strength of a Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase, he would be rather high up among the Northern Spiritual Academy Heaven Class. They lamented within their hearts as they never imagined that an Earth

Class student would be able to achieve it. To be able to obtain the Spiritual Road's qualification, Mu Chen really had some ability.

Liu Mubai's handsome face did not show much movement. His eyes only stared at the ring calmly and others could not tell whether he is happy or angry.

The dark black Spiritual Energy seemed to flow out of Mu Chen's body like a stream. It wrapped around his right arm completely. He extended his ape-sized arm and a powerful fluctuation was formed by this fist as it blasted out!

Collapsing Fist.

Mu Chen's arm was like a spear that was stretched out to its extreme. It exploded out the most powerful energy it could muster at this short distance. Due to this, the air seemed to be collapsing due to this fist.

Although it was only just a Common Tier Low Rank Attack Spiritual Art, it was like a landslide under Mu Chen's use as it was mixed with the flowing Spiritual Energy. Under Liu Yang's slightly changing gaze, it collided fiercely against the violent palm winds.

A deep sound suddenly exploded out from the ring. The black and red lights collided viciously with each other and the air waves produced by it seemed to make the air tremble.

All the eyes were fixed to the point where the Spiritual Energy intersected. Over there, the black and red lights flashed rapidly. Then soon after this, everybody witnessed two figures retreating a few steps after they made contact with each other.

The two figures confronted each other on the ring. One had a dark expression while the other had a calm expression.

They were evenly matched?

Everybody looked at each other. The earlier collision was so powerful, yet it did not decide the victor?

While everybody was stunned about this, Liu Yang's dark face suddenly became pale. His body curved and fresh blood sprayed out onto the ring.

As the fresh blood was expelled out, Liu Yang's imposing manner seemed to have instantly become dispirited. The pale white face made everybody in the surroundings cry out.

Liu Yang lost!

After they stared at the pale Liu Yang and the calm Mu Chen, everybody was aware of the results of this match!

"Brother Mu won!"

"Good going, Brother Mu!"

"Haha, we, the East Branch, has finally retrieved back the title of Earth Class Number One!"

At the East Branch's side, Su Ling and the others stared at this scene. Then, a surprised and excited expression emerged on their faces. Cheers resounded out from the sky and instantly suppressed the silent West Branch.

Even Liu Yang has lost. This time, the West Branch, had really lost to the East Branch.

Mu Yuan, Xue Dong and the others from the West Branch Earth Class gritted their teeth as they were not able to accept it. However, they had to admit that Mu Chen was definitely powerful. They originally thought that he was only at the Spiritual Movement Stage Initial Phase, how would have imagined that... this guy would have advanced to the Middle Phase.

After hearing the deafening cheers from the East Branch, Mu Chen also smiled and his tense body gradually relaxed. He stared at the extremely sullen Liu Yang and asked: "There's no need to fight anymore, right?"

Liu Yang slowly raised his head and his darken eyes focused onto

Mu Chen. These cheers were like knives that stabbed into his heart and it trampled on his pride. His mouth twitched as savageness began to accumulate within his eyes.

Mu Chen stared at Liu Yang's expression and frowned. Through the immensely vicious trial within the Spiritual Road, he was able to detect a hint of danger.

"I'll kill you!"

A hideous expression suddenly appeared on Liu Yang's face. He gripped his hand and a red light seemed to appear within it. An extremely shocking Spiritual Energy fluctuation began to erupt out violently.

At the main seats, the expression on Principal Xiao, Teacher Mo and Teacher Xi changed. Then, Teacher Mo shouted out: "Liu Yang, what are you planning to do?!"

However, the instant that Teacher Mo shouted out, Mu Chen had dashed over with a cold expression. He charged directly in front of Liu Yang and a powerful wind appeared from his two fingers, which was wrapped with a dark black Spiritual Energy. He directly stabbed towards Liu Yang's throat.

"You!"

Liu Yang never thought that Mu Chen's reaction would be this fast. It seemed that Mu Chen did not show any signs of defending against him. Within Mu Chen's cold eyes, there was actually a cold intent to kill.

This killing intent made Liu Yang understood immediately. If the thing within his hand were to activate and kill Mu Chen, Mu Chen would also take away his life in the moment before he died.

He's using his life to trade for another.

A surge of panic appeared within Liu Yang's eyes. Apparently, he did not have the courage to truly trade life with Mu Chen. Thus, he could only grit his teeth and protect his throat using his palms.

Mu Chen's fingers were like a sharp dagger. It stabbed directly at Liu Yang's palms and blood splattered out. As Liu Yang screamed, the red light held within his hand also fell out.

Mu Chen's body jumped and caught the red light into his hand.

"Return it to me!"

When Liu Yang noticed Mu Chen seizing the red light, his face suddenly became pale.

Mu Chen ignored his outburst and retreated. Suddenly, the sound of the wind breaking could be heard and a vigorous Spiritual Energy fluctuation shot violently towards him like an arrow.

The sudden attack made Mu Chen frown. His toes touched the ground and he nimbly retreated back a dozen steps to avoid the attack. Then he asked at the slender figure appearing from outside the ring with a cold expression: "What are you doing?"

That handsome and slender figure landed beside Liu Yang. It was Liu Mubai. At this moment, he held out his hand and stared expressionlessly at Mu Chen: "Hand over that item."

Mu Chen let out a cold laugh. He lowered his head to look at the red light within his hand. But when he saw the item within the red light, his mouth gently lifted up.

"As expected from the Little Young Master of the Liu Territory, you are able to bring out even this item..."

Chapter 15 – Spirit Destruction Bead

The change in the ring occurred in a split second. When many people recovered, they noticed that Liu Mubai had already appeared in the ring. Their faces instantly became surprised. What is this situation?

Mu Chen did not care about the expressionless Liu Mubai. He only lowered his head to stare at his hand. The red light faded away and it revealed a fiery red bead at the size of a longan. The surface of the bead was filled with an obscure pattern. Within it, a violent Spiritual Energy seemed to flow like a tidal stream.

“Spirit Destruction Bead…”

Mu Chen’s slender fingers pressed against the smooth red marble. He let out a faint smile, only that the smile was a little bit cold. The Spirit Destruction Bead was not something that is used for self-cultivation. It was an extremely destructive Spiritual Artifact. When a powerhouse reached a certain degree of strength, they would be able to compress that immense Spiritual Energy within this tiny bead. Then, the user would only need to activate it and an extremely powerful Spiritual Energy attack would burst out.

Creating the Spirit Destruction Bead requires a special metal called Spirit Gold. This metal is extremely expensive. Coupled with the fact that creating the Spirit Destruction Bead requires precise control and it has a high rate of failure, the Spirit Destruction Bead was rather rare. Looking at the one within Mu Chen’s hand, the extent of the Spiritual Energy being condensed was strong even to cause a grave injury to a person at the Spiritual Rotation Stage.

This Liu Yang wanted to kill him.

“Return it back to me!”

Liu Yang became clear-headed at this moment and his face

became even paler. He knew that his behavior broke the rules and if he was punished, it would not be light. Therefore, he immediately glared fiercely at Mu Chen and extended his hand.

“Big Brother, hurry and snatch that item back, don’t let him have the evidence!

When he heard Liu Yang’s words, Liu Mubai’s eyes flashed. After all, their status wasn’t low. If there wasn’t any evidence within Mu Chen’s hand, they would be able to get through it.

“If you dare move recklessly, this Spirit Destruction Bead might explode on your body.” Before Liu Mubai was able to take any action, Mu Chen smiled and said with the Spirit Destruction Bead tucked between his fingers.

“This time, Liu Yang was indeed a bit too reckless. Return the Spirit Destruction Bead back to him. You should do others a favor sometimes and it would benefit both of you, wouldn’t you say?” Liu Mubai’s eyes became serious and he stared at Mu Chen as he slowly spoke.

Mu Chen declined to commit on it and let out a smile.

“What is this all about?” At this moment, Teacher Mo also stepped onto the stage. He stared at the three people and shouted out.

When Liu Yang noticed Teacher Mo appearing over here, his face instantly became white. He stared fiercely at Mu Chen and attempted to threaten him to keep his mouth shut.

However, Mu Chen completely ignored his threat. He lifted up the Spirit Destruction Bead towards Teacher Mo.

Teacher Mo stared at the Spirit Destruction Bead within Mu Chen’s hand. His face instantly turned grim and he turned his sight towards Liu Yang. Anger could be heard within his voice as he shouted: “You actually dared to use the Spirit Destruction Bead during the match?”

“Spirit Destruction Bead?”

Many students were paying attention to this side. When they heard the words, Spirit Destruction Bead, they instantly made a big commotion.

“He really is shameless. He actually brought out the Spirit Destruction Bead!”

“As expected from the young master from the largest territory in Northern Spiritual Realm, how rich, ohoho.”

Sounds of fury and sneers came from the surrounding audience. Liu Yang’s face also became unusually hideous. This time, he really shamed his own family as well.

At this moment, Principal Xiao and the West Branch’s Teacher Xi also rushed over here. Teacher Mo went over to explain the situation a bit and everybody noticed Principal Xiao’s expression becoming more disgusted.

“Principal, Liu Yang only did this on an impulse. However, he did not harm anyone. This matter should be excusable.” Liu Mubai hurried and said when he noticed this.

“Senior Liu, are you trying to say that it should be considered inexcusable only after I was seriously wounded by his Spirit Destruction Bead?” Mu Chen let out a slight smile and said.

Liu Mubai’s eyes glanced coldly at Mu Chen and he said: “What do you want then?”

“It is not what I want, but the Northern Spiritual Academy has rules within it. We should deal with this matter in accordance to the rules.” Mu Chen said with a casual smile.

Liu Mubai’s eyes flashed. But just when he was about to speak, he was interrupted by Principal Xiao. Principal Xiao looked at Teacher Mo and Teacher Xi and asked: “How should we deal with this situation?”

“Based on the rules, Liu Yang would be disqualified from ascending to the Heaven Class this time.” Teacher Mo thought for a while and said.

Liu Yang’s face instantly changed. If he could not ascend to the Heaven Class, he would not be able to compete for a place within the Five Great Academies. This would be a fatal blow to him.

“Isn’t this a bit too serious? There aren’t many individuals within our Northern Spiritual Academy that has the qualifications to compete for the Five Great Academies spots...” Teacher Xi pondered for a moment. Then he lowered his voice and said: “And if this were to happen, Liu Yang’s father probably would not let it go. Although we, the Northern Spiritual Academy may not fear this, but it would still be troubling if we form a bad relationship with the number one Territory within the Northern Spiritual Realm.”

“However, Mu Chen’s father is also the Mu Territory’s Lord. If we let this go, the Mu Territory might be quite angry with us.” Teacher Mo also said out loud.

Principal Xiao shook his head helplessly. If they were just ordinary students, then it would not be so troubling. However, both of them are the sons of Territory Lords within the Northern Spiritual Realm. It would not be good for them to favor one over the other.

“Ohoho, Mu Chen.”

Principal Xiao suddenly looked at Mu Chen, who was beside them. He smiled and said: “About this matter right now, would you say...”

Mu Chen saw Principal Xiao’s smile and he knew what the latter was trying to say. He immediately smiled and said: “Principal, Liu Yang was indeed quite rash this time. However, I am willing to forgive since I wasn’t hurt...”

After they heard Mu Chen's words, not only was Principal Xiao stunned, even Liu Yang was shocked. It was evident that he did not expect Mu Chen would let him go like this. However, when he saw Mu Chen's smile, his heart suddenly calmed down. This boy may look mild normally, but his methods were extremely ruthless. He still remembered about the ruthlessness he showed when Mu Chen snatched away his Spirit Destruction Bead through the act of trading lives.

"However, he still violated the rules. How about this, I'll treat this Spirit Destruction Bead as an apology gift and will not return it to him. Then, I will not make a fuss about this issue." Mu Chen smiled as he said.

He knew that this matter was troubling to Principal Xiao and the others. However, he also knew that it wouldn't have much effect if he were to keep at it. If that's the case, he might as well take advantage of this and sell a favor to Principal Xiao at the same time.

"You!"

When Liu Yang heard that Mu Chen actually wanted to take his Spirit Destruction Bead, his eyes popped out in anger. The Spirit Destruction Bead was made personally by his father and was something left to him in order to protect his life when necessary. It was an extremely valuable item.

"You're not willing? Then let's just punish you according to the rules." Mu Chen glanced at Liu Yang and said helplessly.

The corner of Liu Yang's eyes jumped. He could only hold it in. Although the Spirit Destruction Bead was valuable, it was nothing compared to a place within the Five Great Academies.

"Oh, since you've taken a fancy to this Spirit Destruction Bead, we will give it to you." It was apparent that Liu Mubai was more calculating than Liu Yang. He took a deep look at Mu Chen and said with a faint smile.

Mu Chen smiled as he glanced at him. Although Liu Mubai hid it very well, he could see a hint of resent within his eyes. This guy is definitely more troubling than Liu Yang.

“Since Mu Chen would not make a fuss about it, then this matter will be over now. However, if Liu Yang dares to do this again in the future, the Northern Spiritual Academy will not care who your father is and handle it according to the rules!” When Principal Xiao noticed that Mu Chen was willing to remain silent on this, his heart was slightly relieved. Since he did not have to be troubled about this matter, his favorability towards Mu Chen increased slightly. Then, he immediately said in a strict voice towards Liu Yang.

Liu Mubai’s face changed from red and green alternately. He did not dare say anything more. Although the Northern Spiritual Academy maintains neutral within the Northern Spiritual Realm, they were not afraid of the Liu Territory.

“Thank you, Principal.”

Liu Mubai smiled. Then, he extended a hand towards Mu Chen and said: “I have to thank you as well, Junior Mu Chen. That’s right, you will be a Heaven Class student soon. I am quite interested in you, so I hope that I would have an opportunity to have an exchange with you in the future.”

His handsome face had a smile plastered on it. However, a few individuals were able to perceive a dark cold chill swirling in the depths of his eyes.

“Senior Liu, you’re joking with me.”

Mu Chen stared at Liu Mubai. A sunny smile emerged on his thin and handsome face as well. He extended his hand to shake with Liu Mubai. Then, he retracted it back. His eyes still showed calmness deep inside.

Liu Mubai was indeed outstanding and he also knew how to

endure it silently. However, he was still inferior to the monsters within the Spiritual Road, who would smile harmonious for one moment and would not hesitate to kill in the next moment.

In the ring, the two of them shook hands. Although both of them had a smile, the ones that are sensitive were able to faintly feel a confrontation underneath this peacefulness.

“That Mu Chen...really is quite amazing. He actually did not retreat back in front of Brother Liu.”

Not far away, the West Branch Heaven Class Seniors watched the scene. They could not help but mutter this. Even without mentioning about Mu Chen’s strength, just by having the courage to stand against Liu Mubai was shocking enough.

“In the future, this person will rise up in our Northern Spiritual Academy Heaven Class. It will probably become livelier...”

Hong Ling rolled her black hair a bit. She stared at the boy standing in front of Liu Mubai in the ring. The boy’s slender body, handsome face and disposition was completely different than the lazy boy in the past. This gap entranced her slightly.

Without her knowing, the person that she neglected had actually become this outstanding.

After the matter about Liu Yang had calmed down, Principal announced the results of this Academy Competition on the spot. The East Branch naturally was in the center of attention. Mu Chen, Liu Yang, Tan Qingshan and the others Earth Class members that had advanced into the Spiritual Movement Stage successfully ascended to the Heaven Class.

Mu Chen watched as the Academy Competition ended and he stretched his waist. He was getting closer to the Five Great Academies. The grudge that he had not settled in the Spiritual Road, he will resolve it during the Five Great Academies.

Mu Chen lifted his head and stared at the blue sky. He let out a

chuckle.

Ji Xuan…This time, let us have a good fight.

Chapter 16 – Heaven Class

The curtains gradually closed for the Academy Competition. However, the aftereffects created by the Academy Competition continued to envelop the Northern Spiritual Academy. For a few days, the entire Northern Spiritual Academy was discussing about that fierce battle at the Academy Competition.

In the Northern Spiritual Academy, Mu Chen would always remain modest. If it wasn't because of the matter regarding about the Spiritual Road, perhaps many students wouldn't even pay attention to him. Although he had quite a powerful background, there was still a bit of gap in terms of reputation when you compare it with a dazzling figure like Liu Yang. Before the match between Mu Chen and Liu Yang, many individuals did not feel that Mu Chen was promising.

But something unexpected appeared in front of their eyes.

Mu Chen, who seemingly remained a low profile, triumphantly defeated Liu Yang. He managed to successfully ascend to the Heaven Class with the title of Earth Class Number One. Moreover, everybody knew that he would be able to have a decent rank in the Northern Spiritual Academy Heaven Class with his Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase strength.

This shocked many individuals. Only now, they felt that it wasn't so unbelievable for Mu Chen to be able to obtain the only one Spiritual Road's qualification within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

At the Northern Spiritual Academy, the Heaven Class could be considered the gathering place for all the outstanding students. In other words, the weakest members of the Heaven Class would still have the strength of a Spiritual Movement Stage Initial Phase.

Every single student would treat Heaven Class as their goal. This is because it was the only path to enter the "Five Great

Academies". They would only be qualified to compete for a place within the "Five Great Academies" if they ascend to the Heaven Class.

The selection for the "Five Great Academies" was extremely harsh. The first condition was that the student must have reached the Spiritual Rotation Stage before the age of 18. Just this one condition, many youth's dreams were stopped.

Within the current Heaven Class in the Northern Spiritual Academy, there are probably no more than five individuals who reached this requirement.

Therefore, you could see how terrifying the acceptance conditions are for the "Five Great Academies". Despite the harsh conditions, many talented youths would flock to it like moths flying towards a flame. This is because of the powerful might of the "Five Great Academies". Even Mu Chen knew clearly about it. Even this vast Northern Spiritual Realm was less than an ant in the eyes of the "Five Great Academies". The Territory Lords at this place were at most at the level of a Spirit Stage. This strength would probably be easily surpassed by any instructor inside the Five Great Academies.

Moreover, genuine Sovereign powerhouses exists in the "Five Great Academies". These individuals are big shots that could easily upturn the world.

If they would like to emerge out of the countless geniuses throughout the Great Thousand World, even gifted youths like Mu Chen would not be able to become someone big without proper guidance. Even the most unrefined diamond would only shine through a master's careful engraving. This high-end cultivation guidance was something that neither the Northern Spiritual Academy nor Mu Chen's father could give him.

Based on Mu Feng's description, if Mu Chen's mother was by his side, perhaps she could do it, but unfortunately...

So the Five Great Academies was a stepping stone for becoming strong.

“Oi, the two of you should hurry…You’re heading for the first time to train at the Heaven Class today, yet you are still fooling around.” At a gravel road covered by tree’s shadows inside the Northern Spiritual Academy, Tang Qian’Er muttered as she stared in dissatisfaction towards the two boys behind her.

Mu Chen looked at the slim figure of Tang Qian’Er and said lazily: “Why are you so impatient…Isn’t there still some time?”

“You idiot, all the good locations would be taken at the Cultivation Field since you’re so slow.” Tang Qian’Er batted an eye at Mu Chen and spoke.

Mu Chen helplessly shook his head. Beside him, Tan Qingshan scratched his head and said: “Mu Chen, let’s listen to Senior Qian’Er and speed up a bit.”

He stared at the graceful and exquisite figure of the girl and his stern expression turned slightly red.

Mu Chen glanced at his red face in surprise. He could not help but laugh and say: “Do you like Sister Qian’Er?”

Tan Qingshan’s face instantly turned red. Sweat began to emerge on his forehead.

“BANG!”

Before Mu Chen had a chance to say more, he noticed Tang Qian’Er turning back and walking over here in anger. Her slender leg was raised and she directly kicked Mu Chen’s knee.

“If you keep talking nonsense, do you believe that I will hit you?” Tang Qian’Er raised her eyebrow and asked.

The pain coming from his knee made Mu Chen grin. However, he seemed to have noticed that the girl was a bit angry from the fact that she raised her eyebrow. He immediately let out a dry cough

and quickly said: “Let’s go. Let’s hurry to the Cultivation Field.”

Tang Qian’Er let out a quiet hmph. She walked forward again while she talked: “You two have only just entered the Heaven Class, so you are still considered to be newbies. In the future, you should be more attentive. The Heaven Class is quite troublesome and there are many irritating individuals. Although your father may be the Mu Territory Lord, many individuals would not care about it within the Northern Spiritual Academy.”

“Sister Qian’Er, do I look like a person who enjoys using my father’s identity to oppress others?” Mu Chen chuckled and said.

Tang Qian’Er thought for a moment, then she nodded. Mu Chen never did mention about his father’s identity. The reputation he had within the Northern Spiritual Academy was earned by himself.

“It’s best if you know it…” Tang Qian’Er chided.

“You should also know that you should not tease those old farts in the Heaven Class. They are not qualified to continue higher, but this is why it is a hassle.”

Mu Chen nodded. He knew what Tang Qian’Er was referring to by those old farts. It was the veteran students that have not left the Northern Spiritual Academy and are already disqualified from entering the “Five Great Academies”.

Because these students failed to reach the Spiritual Rotation Stage by 18, they lost the qualifications to enter the “Five Great Academies”. Without this goal, there were some that muddle around aimlessly like a mixed taste that hasn’t departed from your mouth yet. It was these individuals who do not care about the Northern Spiritual Academy’s rules. Thus, in most cases, very few were willing to provoke them.

“I do not like to provoke others.” Mu Chen shook his head and did not say anything more. However, Tang Qian’Er understood the

meaning behind those words as they were quite close. He would not provoke others, but if others were to provoke him, this seemingly good-natured boy would let them understand a person isn't like their appearance.

"Relax, I will protect you. Within the East Branch Heaven Class, I was never afraid of anyone." Tang Qian'Er smiled tenderly. The girl's smile was like a flower, it was quite moving.

Seeing their informal conversation, Tan Qingshan could not get a word in and he could only just follow them.

The three of them walked towards the east side of the Northern Spiritual Academy. Ten minutes later, they finally stopped. They stared directly in front. Located there was an enormous Great Hall. Outside of the Great Hall, there was a crowd of students hurrying inside.

Mu Chen stared at the Great Hall and a touch of surprise passed through his eyes. At the location, he could feel that the Spiritual Aura within the World seemed to be attracted and gathered at the center of the Great Hall continuously. The Spiritual Aura within the world seemed to be many times denser compared to the outside.

"Is this a...Spirit Convergence Array?" Mu Chen asked.

Tang Qian'Er nodded and said with a prideful voice: "This Cultivation Hall is an important location for the Northern Spiritual Academy. Only the Heaven Class students are qualified to enter this place. The Northern Spiritual Academy paid a great price in order to invite a Spirit Array Master from the Five Great Academies to arrange a Third Rank Spirit Convergence Array inside this Cultivation Hall. This is also the only Third Rank Spirit Convergence Array in the Northern Spiritual Realm."

"A Third Rank Spirit Convergence Array."

Mu Chen smacked his lips. A Spirit Convergence Array was a

Spiritual Array that is extremely beneficial for cultivation. As the Young Master of the Mu Territory, he naturally understood the value of a Third Rank Spirit Convergence Array. This level of Spiritual Array was not something that the Mu Territory could arrange. Without mentioning about the enormous amount of rare ingredients it required, even a Spiritual Array Master wasn't something that many forces could afford in the Northern Spiritual Realm. The Northern Spiritual Academy must have performed many favors in order to invite one over.

"It is said that there are Spirit Convergence Arrays at the Sixth Rank or higher in the Five Great Academies. The cultivation speed at those locations is simply incomparable." Tan Qian'Er said with a longing voice. A Third Rank Spirit Convergence Array was already this amazing, then it was impossible to imagine how amazing a legendary Sixth Rank Spirit Convergence Array would be.

"When you enter the Five Great Academies, you will naturally be able to experience it. Come on, let's enter now." Mu Chen smiled and he led them inside the most precious hall within the Northern Spiritual Academy.

After passing through the heavily guarded doors, a vast plaza appeared in their eyes. Many stone pillars with complex spirit engravings were positioned inside the plaza. As the lights flashed, the Spiritual Aura within the World was gathered at this location.

"Huuu."

Mu Chen gently let out a light breath. He could feel the rich Spiritual Aura entering his body through his breath and could not help but letting out a praise. It truly is a Third Rank Spirit Convergence Array.

"The cultivation time is about to come. Let's hurry inside. The closer you are to the Spiritual Array, the denser the Spiritual Aura would be. We must find a good position." As she pulled Mu Chen, Tang Qian'Er walked quickly with Tan Qingshan to the inside off

the Cultivation Field.

There were already numerous Heaven Class students at the Cultivation Field. It was apparent that Tang Qian'Er's reputation was quite big within the East Branch Heaven Class. Many people shot a gaze over as they saw her actions.

"Who is that boy? He's actually getting so close to Tang Qian'Er."

"Oh, you don't even know him? He is that Mu Chen. A few days ago at the Academy Competition, he defeated Liu Yang and ascended to the Heaven Class with the title of the Earth Class Number One. It is said that this Mu Chen has already reached the Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase."

"Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase? That's quite amazing, he would be rather high up within the Heaven Class with that level of strength..."

"He's pretty good. However, it is not enough to become fearless within the Heaven Class... Heh, who knows how many people like Tang Qian'Er over here? Jiang Li, Teng Yong are also both at the Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase. This boy will probably cause a lot of trouble."

While these people spoke, they stared at the other direction within the Cultivation Field. A few figures were quietly sitting cross-legged over there. However, their face seemed to have slightly darkened and they stared sullenly at the source that caused this. It was Tang Qian'Er pulling Mu Chen.

As Mu Chen was pulled by Tang Qian'Er, he glanced around the location and saw the numerous gazes. He immediately let out a helpless smile, it seems that he underestimated Tang Qian'Er's popularity within the East Branch Heaven Class.

Chapter 17 – Rank 3 Spirit Convergence Array

"Let's sit over here."

Tang Qian'Er ignored the gazes coming from the Cultivation Field as she pulled Mu Chen directly inside the Cultivation Hall. Then, she stopped at a location near a golden stone pillar. Beside the stone platform that extended from the Stone Pillar, there were three jade-like rock cushions.

Mu Chen looked around, but his eyes still remained at the golden stone pillar. Following this, he was shocked. This is because he could feel a dense Spiritual Aura emitting from the golden stone pillar. It was evident that this golden stone pillar should be one of the many Spirit Convergence Pillars of the Rank 3 Spirit Convergence Array. The effects of a place near the Spirit Convergence Pillar were definitely better than anywhere else.

"This Spirit Convergence Pillar was probably created by Spirit Convergence Rocks. It, indeed, is a Rank 3 Spirit Convergence Array." Mu Chen let out a praise. The Spirit Convergence Rock was a material beneficial to cultivation and the price was not cheap. The cost of creating a Spirit Convergence Pillar completely through Spirit Convergence Rocks would be quite high. No wonder many people would treat Spirit Convergence Array as a sign of wealth.

Tang Qian'Er nodded and sat down cross-legged. Then, she extended her slender arms and puffed up her chest slightly. As her clothes showed a charming curve, it made many individuals sneak a peek at her.

"Qingshan, you should also start cultivating over here."

Mu Chen also sat down and directed a smile at Qingshan. He knew this cultivation spot was probably pretty good and many

would want to fight for it. However, he was not afraid. Although he did not want to be overly well-known, he would not act low-key purposely and insult himself.

Mu Chen's butt sat onto the jade rock cushion. He felt the surrounding Spiritual Aura become more and more dense. This made him immediately circulate the Great Pagoda Art. Traces of Spiritual Aura were absorbed into his body continuously. It turned into dark black Spiritual Power after it was refined by the Great Pagoda Art and flowed into his aura sea. The Spiritual Aura inside gradually became more vigorous.

Even with Mu Chen's calmness, this clear increase of Spiritual Energy made him feel joy within his heart. Then, he was immersed completely in cultivation.

Beside him, Tang Qian'Er noticed that Mu Chen had directly entered into the cultivation state. She pouted slightly and then closed her eyes and began the cultivation process.

But their cultivation state did not last long before it was disrupted by a noisy sound from the outside world. Mu Chen was the first one to open his eyes. He looked at his left towards Tan Qingshan. However, he noticed that the boy had a ghastly pale face. His hands were clenched tightly and it was obvious that he was suppressing his anger greatly.

In front of the boy, there were two slightly old youths. They were laughing and would point at Tan Qingshan from time to time.

"What are you doing?!" Mu Chen frowned and said with a cold voice as he looked at the two youths.

The two youths noticed Mu Chen and frowned as well. One of them let out a faint smile and extended a hand over: "So you're Mu Chen? I've heard your name a long time ago, I'm Jiang Li and he's Teng Yong."

Mu Chen stared at the hand extended by Jiang Li. However, he

did not stretch his hand to shake it. From the latter's eyes, he noticed a hint of hostility.

"What do you want?"

Seeing that Mu Chen did not react, Jiang Li and the Teng Yong's faces were quite unnatural. They immediately pointed at Tan Qingshan and smiled: "Nothing, we only wanted to exchange locations with him."

"We're not changing. Next time, you should come here earlier and take it." Mu Chen faintly spoke.

"Jiang Li, what are you doing!" At this moment, Tang Qian'Er also woke up. When she saw this scene, her beautiful eyes revealed anger. She shouted out as she lifted her eyebrow.

Jiang Li shrugged his shoulders and said: "Qian'Er, you should know the rules of this Cultivation Field. This location isn't a recently arrived newbie can sit in. In order to avoid others from being jealous, I was doing this for his own good."

Jiang Li said and glanced at Mu Chen. Although they disliked Mu Chen, they also knew that Mu Chen wasn't someone they should provoke. His strength wasn't any bit inferior to them and his background was not weak. Therefore, they did not cause trouble for Mu Chen directly and instead picked on Tan Qingshan, who was beside him. It was evident that he was planning to strike at Mu Chen indirectly through this.

"You!"Ch

Tang Qian'Er's eyes were filled with rage. She was about to speak, but was interrupted by Mu Chen. The latter frowned at Jiang Li and Teng Yong. He seemed to have thought for a moment before saying: "I know that only powerful individuals are qualified to sit in this position, I believe that I possess this right. Tan Qingshan is my friend so that is why he sat over here. If you have any opinions regarding about this or if you want to show off your

strength in front of me, I'll accompany you."

Their movements made many people watch them. Thus, Mu Chen's remarks also entered their ears completely. A commotion rang out instantly. This newcomer sure was amazing.

Jiang Li and Teng Yong's faces gradually turned unsightly as the commotion rang out. It was evident that they did not expect the seemingly mild Mu Chen would act so tough.

They stared furiously at Mu Chen's serious expression, but they did not dare to shout at him. They heard about the battle between Mu Chen and Liu Yang. Liu Yang, who possesses a Spiritual Pulse, was someone that they weren't sure that they could beat, yet Mu Chen succeeded. Therefore, they did not have any confidence that they would be able to defeat Mu Chen.

"Oh, as expected from the Mu Territory's Young Master. He really is prideful when he speaks."

Just when Jiang Li and Teng Yong had no way of backing down, a uncomforting laughter sound suddenly came from behind. Jiang Li and Teng Yong looked and a hint of happiness lit up in their eyes.

"Big Brother Luo!"

When he heard their surprised voices, Mu Chen also tilted his head. He only noticed a figure slowly walking over. That figure was around 18 years old with sunken eyes and his thin lips revealed a hint of mercilessness.

"Luo Tong!"

Tang Qian'Er stared at this person and her face sank slightly as she spoke.

"Luo Tong?"

Mu Chen frowned. This name was not new to him. This is because this guy's father was also a Territory Lord within the

Northern Spiritual Realm. However, Luo Tong already passed 18 years old last year, yet his current strength remained at Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase. In other words, he had already lost the right to enter the Five Great Academies.

This also means that he was an old fart that Tang Qian'Er mentioned before and was an extremely troubling individual.

"Mu Chen, it's been a while."

Luo Tong arrived in front of Mu Chen and smiled. However, this smile was not kind and gentle. The two of them knew each other from a long time ago, but they disliked each other.

Mu Chen glanced at him and said: "So you also came here to put on the airs? "

"How could I possibly dare to do that? You are a genius that obtained the qualifications for the Spiritual Road." Luo Tong curled his lips and pretended to be surprised. However, the jealousy within his voice could not be concealed. When he first heard that Mu Chen obtained the qualifications for the Spiritual Road, he was so jealous that his eyes turned red. Moreover, he is currently 18, yet he failed to reach the Spiritual Rotation Stage. This cut apart his wish of entering the Five Great Academies. When he thought about Mu Chen's talent and that it wouldn't be difficult for him to enter the Five Great Academies, the flames of jealousy raged within his heart.

Mu Chen retracted his gaze and was too lazy to care about this jealous and pitiful guy. Compared to Liu Mubai, this Luo Tong was nothing.

"Hand over your seat."

When Luo Tong saw that Mu Chen ignored him, the anger in his eyes grew. However, he did not directly challenge Mu Chen. Instead, he let out a cold shout towards Tan Qingshan.

Whether it was strength or background, it was obvious that he

did not put Tan Qingshan in his eyes.

“Luo Tong, you shouldn’t go too far.” Mu Chen’s voice became colder.

“What? You’re unwilling to listen? You want to fight with me?” Luo Tong also let out a cold smile as he spoke. He was at the Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase. Therefore, he was not afraid of Mu Chen at all. Instead, he wanted to stir up Mu Chen’s fury and take care of this person, who made him jealous.

Mu Chen’s black eyes stared at Luo Tong. When Luo Tong saw those unfathomable black eyes, Luo Tong’s imposing manner actually paused for a moment. It did not matter how jealous he got, he still understood what it represent when Mu Chen obtained the qualification for the Spiritual Road. If it wasn’t because Mu Chen was suddenly kicked out of the Spiritual Road, he probably wouldn’t have the qualification to yell in front of Mu Chen.

His imposing manner paused for a moment, but Luo Tong quickly recovered. No matter what Mu Chen experienced, he was still a person at the Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase. He simply wasn’t his opponent.

“Do you dare?” Luo Tong turned his embarrassment into fury and said.

“Luo Tong, what are you doing?!”

Before Mu Chen replied, a deep voice rang out from nearby. Everybody looked over and noticed a tall, burly figure approaching quickly. He, then, stood in front of Luo Tong and shouted out.

“Mo Ling, don’t you think you’re too controlling?” Luo Tong stared at the burly boy in front of him and frowned.

The person in front of him was a celebrity in the Northern Spiritual Academy. His ranking is only second to the West Branch Heaven Class’s Liu Mubai. Right now, he is also at the Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase, but he would most likely break

through to the Spiritual Rotation Stage in half a year. When that happens, he would be eligible to compete for a place at the Five Great Academies. He is someone who was the Northern Spiritual Academy would focus on nurturing.

“It will soon be the Cultivation Lesson. If you cause trouble here, Teacher Mo would not forgive you!” It seemed that Mo Ling did not like Luo Tong as well and he lifted an eyebrow as he spoke.

Luo Tong’s face instantly became ugly. However, he knew that Mo Ling did not fear him, so he could only bitterly grit his teeth. At this moment, a figure slowly entered the Cultivation Field. Everybody fell silent when they saw that figure. This is because it was Teacher Mo.

When Luo Tong noticed Teacher Mo’s appearance, he did not dare to keep at it and raised a fist toward Mu Chen. Then, he returned back to his seat unwillingly.

“Are you okay? That person is quite annoying, you just have to get used to it.” When Mo Ling noticed that Luo Tong departing, he smiled and asked Mu Chen.

“We’re fine. Thank you.” Mu Chen smiled kindly and replied.

“It’s fine, I’ve heard about you before. You are the only one that qualified for the Spiritual Road. Ohoho, it seems like I’ll have some pressure from now on.” Mo Ling smiled and waved his hand. Then, without saying anything more, he turned around and left.

Mu Chen stared at the back of Mo Ling and smiled. He had a good impression of that burly boy.

“Mu Chen, thank you.” Tan Qingshan also showed some gratitude as he spoke.

“We came here together, so we should take care of each other. Just ignore those individuals, you will become stronger than them soon.” Mu Chen gave a faint smile.

Tan Qingshan nodded strongly.

At this moment, Teacher Mo had always walked leisurely into the Cultivation Field. He glanced at Mu Chen, but he did not say anything at all. He only waved his hand and numerous lights flew directly into the stone pillars. Afterwards, everybody was able to feel that the Spiritual Aura within the Cultivation Field becoming denser. It was obvious that Teacher Mo had completely activated the Spirit Convergence Array.

Mu Chen felt the rich Spiritual Aura and smiled. Without saying anything, he closed his eyes and entered the cultivation state again. He absorbed the Spiritual Energy into his body and refined it.

The cultivation time of half a day quickly passed. Just when Mu Chen absorbed the final trace of Spiritual Energy into his aura sea and was about to end his cultivation, his body suddenly trembled violently. A wonderful feeling emitted from his aura sea.

Mu Chen was startled by this sudden feeling for a moment. Shortly after, a surprised feeling surged through his mind. Did the...Great Pagoda Art reach the Foundation Level?

Chapter 18 – Foundation

Surprise surged through Mu Chen's mind, it was evident that this sudden breakthrough was completely outside his expectation. He originally thought that it would take at least ten days before he broke through to the Foundation Level...

Mu Chen was surprised for a while. However, he gradually calmed down and did not dare to be careless. He hurried to recover his focus and began to sense the wonderful feeling vigilantly.

Within his aura sea, the dark black Spiritual Energy was bubbling. While it was bubbling, Mu Chen was able to feel that the density of the Spiritual Energy was increasing rapidly. Moreover, Mu Chen was able to sense that a powerful absorption seemed to have erupted inside his body and it greedily sucked in the Spiritual Aura outside. After being refined by the Great Pagoda Art, traces of dark black Spiritual Energy entered his aura sea.

While he was sensing the rapidly increasing Spiritual Energy within his aura sea, a comfortable feeling flowed through Mu Chen's four limbs.

And while Mu Chen was immersed in the pleasurable feeling of the Spiritual Art's breakthrough, the entire cultivation field also suddenly stirred. This is because everybody was able to feel a powerful suction erupting from within Mu Chen's body. It used an arrogant and forceful attitude to steal the dense Spiritual Aura within the cultivation field.

This movement instantly attracted everybody's attention. Many individuals glanced through the field with astonished eyes and it landed at Mu Chen's body in the end.

"What's happening?!"

"It was caused by that Mu Chen, what is he doing?"

"What a domineering absorption, he is actually to absorb the

spiritual aura of the world this outrageously. Is he not afraid of dying?"

Numerous whispers exploded throughout the cultivation field. Everybody had an alarmed expression. It was evident that it was their first time seeing this situation.

"Mu Chen."

Tang Qian'Er also widened her eyes and stared worriedly at Mu Chen.

"Do not panic."

At this moment, Teacher Mo's calm voice rang out. It overshadowed the whispers and calmed many Heaven Class students. Then, he turned his gaze towards Mu Chen and frowned slightly as he said: "It's not a big deal, the Spiritual Art he trained in had a breakthrough."

""The Spiritual Art he trained in?"

Many students were stunned once again. A Spiritual Art's breakthrough would actually cause such a commotion, just what is the level of the Spiritual Art that Mu Chen trained in? It seems to be a Spiritual Art that it is at least Spiritual Rank Middle Tier?

Jiang Li and Teng Yong both had a shocked expression as they stared at Mu Chen, who caused this great commotion. A hint of panic flowed through their eyes. Although they were also at the Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase, they could feel the enormous pressure coming from Mu Chen's body.

"Hmph, it seems that his father prepared a pretty good Spiritual Art for him."

Luo Tong let out a cold hmph. His words were filled with unwillingness and jealousy. The Spiritual Art that he trained in wasn't weak, it had reached the Spiritual Rank Low Tier, but it seems that there was still a gap between the one that Mu Chen trained in.

This made Luo Tong extremely frustrated. Compared to Mu Chen, he did not have any points that he would excel at, aside from...age.

Teacher Mo carefully watched Mu Chen, who was greedily sucking in the Spiritual Aura. He could not help but let out a sound of praise. He was able to sense that the Gong Fa Spiritual Art Mu Chen trained in was not something ordinary. However, he was different than a shallow person like Luo Tong. As the Spiritual Art becomes higher in rank, it would become harder to train. A breakthrough would be something even harder. Mu Chen had probably only trained in this Spiritual Art for no more than a month, yet he was able to have a breakthrough, this talent...is quite extraordinary.

“As expected from a person who obtained the qualifications for the Spiritual Road.”

Teacher Mo smiled. Although he lost a year of training when he was at the Spiritual Road, it would not be hard for Mu Chen to chase up with his talents. It seems that the West Branch’s Liu Mubai had finally met his opponent.

Mu Chen naturally did not know about the commotion in the cultivation field. He was still immersed in the wonderful feeling as his Spiritual Art made a breakthrough. The Spiritual Aura that flowed into his body turned into traces of dark black Spiritual Energy and entered his aura sea. This refreshing feeling made Mu Chen feel completely relaxed.

Mu Chen’s mind entered the aura sea. The traces of dark black Spiritual Energy had now become a small form. The Spiritual Energy would wrap around each other in spirals. It was like a black nebula, mysterious and unpredictable.

Above the Spiritual Energy, a piece of black paper quietly floated there. It let the Spiritual Energy flow around it and remained motionless as if it was a dead object.

The dark black Spiritual Energy circulated inside Mu Chen's aura sea. Suddenly, a buzzing sound rang out in the depths of his soul. This made him shocked and he immediately scanned inside his body. He actually discovered that dark black lights suddenly lit up in his body...

Swoosh.

The Spiritual Energy in his aura sea also seemed to activate at this moment. It surged out of his aura sea and flowed through his meridians smoothly. When the Spiritual Energy passed through the dark black lights, Mu Chen was able to feel vaguely that the black color lights absorbed some of the Spiritual Energy.

"What is this all about?"

This sudden turn of events shocked Mu Chen. These black lights appeared too suddenly and it seemed to be out of his control. He was not able to detect them as well.

"Could it be because of the Great Pagoda Art?"

Mu Chen thought quickly, then an idea flashed through his mind. It was obvious that this change was related to his Great Pagoda Art reaching the Foundation Level.

"These lights..."

Mu Chen's mind swept through the mysterious black lights across his body. He pondered for a while and then he violently trembled. He noticed that if he was able to connect the black lights, it seemed to be a bit like a...Spiritual Pulse?!

Spiritual Pulse?

This phrase flashed through Mu Chen's mind and flooded his mind with questions. He knew that he did not possess even the lowest level Human Level Spiritual Pulse. To confirm this result, he checked it many times. However, what on earth are these black lights that appeared in his body and seemed like a Spiritual Pulse?

When Mu Chen's mind was completely filled with shock, these black lights seemed to vanish quietly like an Epiphyllum. No matter how Mu Chen tried to sense it, he could not perceive it at all. It was as if had never existed in the first place.

"How could this be..."

Mu Chen muttered inside his heart and was completely confused. After a long time, he began to carefully analyze it. The scene earlier was definitely not an illusion. In the depths of his body, something that he could not detect was definitely hidden inside. And this concealment might have some relationship to the Great Pagoda Art.

"The Great Pagoda Art...Could it be mother?"

Mu Chen's heart trembled. The Great Pagoda Art was left behind by his mother. If that's the case, then it must be related to his mother. Perhaps his mother hid something within his body.

But why would she do that?

Mu Chen thought for a while, but he could not come up with any answers. He had too little memories about his mother. There was only a vague, yet gentle existence in the depths of his heart. However, he did not understand much about it, the hidden Spiritual Pulse feeling did make Mu Chen believe one point doubtlessly. His mother would never do anything that would harm him.

When he thought about this, Mu Chen's heart gradually calmed down. No matter how irrational his prediction was, it would be fine if he believed that it would not harm him.

As for the other points, he could ask his dad when he returned back home. He felt that his dad should know a bit about this, but he had not mentioned it to him yet.

While thinking about this, Mu Chen also circulated his state of mind. He allowed the traces of dark black Spiritual Energy to be

absorbed into his aura sea and left the cultivation state. His tightly closed eyes also slowly opened up.

When he opened his eyes, Mu Chen could feel that something was off. He was immediately surprised when he saw the numerous gazes fixed onto his body.

“What is it?”

Mu Chen blinked his eyes. He was quite puzzled about the gazes staring at him.

When the surrounding students heard his words, their faces were quite strange. You’ve caused such a big commotion, yet you didn’t even know?

“Mu Chen, are you alright?” Tang Qian’Er asked worriedly. Then, she explained the situation that previously occurred.

“I’m fine.” Mu Chen suddenly smiled as he shook his head. This Spiritual Art breakthrough must have been related to the Spirit Convergence Array. Otherwise, it would take a bit of time before he reached the Foundation Level. A Third Rank Spirit Convergence Array was definitely quite extraordinary.

“Today’s cultivation lesson will end now. You can make your own arrangements for the time, afterwards.” When Teacher Mo noticed that Mu Chen had woken up, he gave him a nod before he spoke to the crowd.

“Yes!”

Many students respectfully responded.

Teacher Mo waved his hand and he did not wait as he walked leisurely out.

As Teacher Mo left, the atmosphere within the cultivation field gradually relaxed. Sounds of laughter spread out, but many gazes were still fixed on Mu Chen.

Perhaps it was because the commotion caused by Mu Chen was

too shocking, even after Teacher Mo left, Luo Tong, Jiang Li and the others did not come looking for trouble with him. Instead, they glanced sullenly at him in fear and immediately shifted their gaze away.

“Let’s go as well.” Mu Chen stood up and clapped his hands as he spoke.

“Where are we going?” Tang Qian’Er asked.

“Let’s go take a stroll to the Spiritual Art Room.”

Mu Chen stared at the other side of the cultivation field and smiled slightly: “I am quite interested in a few Attack Spiritual Arts there, right now, I can finally train in them...”

Chapter 19 – Limitless Death Seal

The Spiritual Arts Room. It is the place where the Northern Spiritual Academy's Spiritual Art collection is located at. The Spiritual Arts Room is also divided into Heaven Level and Earth Level. An Earth Class student can only enter the Earth Level to search for Spiritual Arts; if they want to enter the Heaven Level, then they must ascend to the Heaven Class.

The Spiritual Art that Mu Chen wanted was in the Heaven Level collection. He had entered the Heaven Level once under Teacher Mo's guidance approximately half a year ago. There, he discovered a Spiritual Art that he liked. However, he could only temporarily give it up as he did not reach the requirements.

And now, Mu Chen, who had satisfied the requirements, would naturally think about this Attack Spiritual Art right away.

Mu Chen and Tang Qian'Er headed off to the Spiritual Arts Room. On the other hand, Tan Qingshan did not follow as he said that he wanted to train for a bit longer. He was a man of few words, but he was quite stubborn. When he was still in the Earth Class, he was considered quite outstanding, but once he entered the Heaven Class, he suddenly fell to the bottom. This difference became his motivation.

In the spacious Spiritual Arts Room, many Northern Spiritual Academy's students were reading the Spiritual Arts. After all, not every single person had a Northern Spiritual Realm's Territory Lord as their father. Therefore, many students could only obtain Spiritual Arts through the Spiritual Arts Room. However, it was naturally worse than the carefully prepared Spiritual Arts that Mu Chen and the others could access.

Of course, this does not mean that the Northern Spiritual Academy's collection is inferior to the Territory Lords within the Northern Spiritual Realm. It was the exact opposite. Based on what

Mu Chen knew, the true collection within the Northern Spiritual Academy was probably something that his father's collection couldn't compare with. However, those Spiritual Arts were not something that a common student can see.

The Spiritual Arts Room's Earth Level was lively and bustling. When Mu Chen and Tang Qian'Er entered, they attracted a lot of attention. It was evident that Mu Chen was known throughout the Northern Spiritual Academy after the battle during the Academy Competition.

"Brother Mu!"

It was fine when the West Branch students saw Mu Chen. Their eyes would be filled with fear and curiosity. However, the East Branch students would have thrilled expression and greeted him with excitement. A few charming girls would even peek at the boy with black hair and black eyes, handsome face and a brilliant smile which emitted warmth to their hearts as they flipped through the Spiritual Arts. Then, their faces would turn slightly red.

Mu Chen directed a gentle smile towards the East Branch students, but he did not remain there for long. He directly passed through the Earth Level with Tang Qian'Er and headed to the Spiritual Arts Room's second level, Heaven Level.

As the two individuals departed, whispers erupted in the Earth Level.

"Brother Mu really ascended to the Heaven Class. He is actually able to enter the Spiritual Arts Room Heaven Level."

"Haha, Brother Mu's performance at the Academy Competition was so perfect. Would it even be difficult for him to enter the Heaven Class?"

"There are many powerful individuals in the Heaven Class. It was said that the Heaven Class's Luo Tong tried to trouble Brother Mu today. That guy is at the level of a Spiritual Movement Stage Late

Phase.”

“Luo Tong? He’s only a person who would flaunt his father’s title around. How could he compare to Brother Mu? And that guy isn’t even eligible to enter the Five Great Academies.”

“Yes, the one, who is best qualified to compete with Liu Mubai in the Northern Spiritual Academy, is probably Brother Mu. Ohoho, I think that there would be a good show when they compete for a place in the Five Great Academies.”

“I didn’t expect you to be that popular in the Earth Class.” As the two of them walked up to the Heaven Level, Tang Qian’Er glanced below and said with a tender smile.

Mu Chen also smiled, but he was not willing to say anything about it. He turned his gaze towards the Heaven Level. This place was not as spacious as the Earth Level, there were also far less people here. However, they would still be able to see a figure walking around from time to time.

“What Spiritual Art did you want? I think that a Mu Territory’s Young Master would not care about a Common Tier Spiritual Art?” Tang Qian’Er’s eyes swept through the Heaven Level as she playfully asked.

“However, if it’s the Spiritual Tier Spiritual Arts, then based on what I know, there are only six of them in the Heaven Level. They are all Spiritual Tier Low Rank Spiritual Arts. Which one did you like? And if you want to read the Spiritual Tier Spiritual Art, you must have Teacher Mo’s consent.”

“It seems that you know this place quite well. However, the one I want aren’t the Spiritual Arts that you mentioned.” Mu Chen let out a mysterious smile and he walked to the west corner of the Spiritual Arts Room.

Tang Qian’Er was a bit puzzled as she followed him over. This location wasn’t where the High Rank Spiritual Arts were located at

in the Spiritual Arts Room. They were all just Common Tier Spiritual Arts. Although it included a few powerful Spiritual Arts, with Mu Chen's viewpoint, there should be many within the Mu Territory if he only wanted Common Tier Spiritual Arts.

"They are just a few ordinary Common Tier Spiritual Arts, it can't be that you wanted these Spiritual Arts, right?" Tang Qian'Er's slender hand picked up a jaded script and asked with a frown.

Mu Chen's face had a smile on it. His long fingers went across the cold stone surface and extended into the depths of the stone cabinet. When he pulled out his fingers, a dark red jaded script was stuck between his fingers.

"This is?"

Tang Qian'Er was stunned when she saw that. Her eyes immediately turned serious when she saw the color of the jaded script. This is because the Spiritual Arts with that color has a special title to it. It was known as Hazard Potential Spiritual Arts.

The so-called Hazard Potential Spiritual Arts represents that there is quite a bit of danger when training in this Spiritual Art. It might even harm the practitioners as well.

"Let me see that."

Tang Qian'Er extended her hand and snatched the dark red jaded script away from Mu Chen's hand. She glanced across it and saw that it emitted a few cold-blooded words on its surface.

Common Tier High Rank, Limitless Death Seal.

"Limitless Death Seal?"

Tang Qian'Er's face finally changed. Her eyes widened up and she stared furiously at Mu Chen as she spoke: "What are you playing? You dare practice this Spiritual Art?

The name of the Limitless Death Seal, she had naturally heard of

it before. Although it was a Common Tier High Rank Spiritual Art, it was a Spiritual Art that was extremely vicious within the Northern Spiritual Academy. This is not because it was incredibly amazing, but because two gifted and outstanding students had once trained in it. The result ended with their meridians snapping and they nearly became useless. Since then, nobody dared to train in this Spiritual Art.

“I’ve investigated this Spiritual Art before. It is actually quite amazing. However, there’s a condition for you to train in this Spiritual Art. That is it requires a domineering Spiritual Energy. The Spiritual Energy of the two seniors that trained in it before did not reach that level of domination. This is why they failed.” Mu Chen explained.

The dark black Spiritual Energy he had was far from any ordinary Spiritual Energy. With its overbearing nature, the Great Pagoda Art that he trained in right now should be capable of this Limitless Death Seal.

“Not allowed!” Tang Qian’Er had a straight face and she batted an eye towards Mu Chen and said: “And you don’t have the qualifications to read this Spiritual Art anyways.”

There were also rules regarding about reading the Spiritual Arts within the Spiritual Arts Room. If it was just any ordinary Common Tier, any students could read it, but if it was Spiritual Tier, you must ask for permission from the Teachers.

Although this Limitless Death Seal only seemed to be a Common Tier High Rank, it was classified as a Hazard Potential Spiritual Art. If you wish to read this Spiritual Art, you must be a student, who had stayed in the Heaven Class for half a year. Since Mu Chen had just ascended up, he clearly wasn’t qualified.

Mu Chen’s black eyes contained traces of a smile as he stared at Tang Qian’Er. He jokingly said: “That is why I brought you over here. I wanted you to help me borrow this Spiritual Art.”

Tang Qian'Er's beautiful eyes could not help but widen up. She stared at Mu Chen, gritted her teeth as she tilted her head away: "You want me to help you? No way!"

"Sister Qian'Er, help me out please."

Mu Chen's body leaned slightly forward. His handsome face was close to the girl's pretty face. The hot air that came from his breath landed on her bouncy cheeks.

Tang Qian'Er was startled by his action and retreated a few step backwards. Her face was like a sunset and she embarrassingly said:" You rascal!"

Mu Chen shrugged his shoulders and his black eyes stared at Tang Qian'Er. He softly said: "I really want to train in this Spiritual Art. Believe in me, it will be fine, okay?"

Tang Qian'Er nibbled her red lips as if she was hesitating. After all, this Spiritual Art had quite the vicious name. If Mu Chen also became like the two seniors from before, she really couldn't imagine how dire the consequences would be...

"Huh? Mu Chen, you're also here?"

And just when Tang Qian'Er hesitated, a soft voice rang out suddenly from behind. Mu Chen and Tang Qian'Er lifted their heads. They saw Hong Ling, who was extremely charming, in a red dress standing there.

When Mu Chen noticed Hong Ling, he was stunned for a bit. This seemed to be the first time that Hong Ling had greeted him since he had entered the Northern Spiritual Academy. Although they were rather close when they were young, they drifted apart later. Right now, she felt more like a stranger.

"Hello, Senior Hong Ling."

Mu Chen also smiled and called out Senior Hong Ling. This made Tang Qian'Er relaxed her straightened face. By greeting her this way, it was evident that they weren't close. It was more like being

polite.

Hong Ling's beautiful eyes flashed for a moment. She immediately looked at the dark red jaded script held within Tang Qian'Er's hand and seemed to understand something. She smiled and said: "What is it? You want to borrow this Hazard Potential Spiritual Art? Do you need my help?"

Mu Chen glanced at Tang Qian'Er for a moment. These two girls disliked each other. Sure enough, the latter had a cold expression. He turned his head back and smiled as he spoke: "Thank you for your kindness, senior. But Sister Qian'Er has already promised to help me."

Hong Ling nodded. She looked at boy with a gentle smile, handsome appearance and a long body. Her heart felt slightly sour. The ordinary boy that she did not pay attention to had suddenly become outstanding without her knowing.

"Then, that's okay. I won't disturb you."

Hong Ling directed a smile to Mu Chen. Then, she did not remain at this location. She turned her body around and left. Her slim and charming body attracted countless gazes from nearby boys, who were reading the Spiritual Arts. In the end, the boys all gave a jealous glance towards Mu Chen. This guy is really too lucky, he had some sort of relationship with both flowers of the Northern Spiritual Academy.

"When did I agree to help you? Seeing that Hong Ling departed, Tang Qian'Er let out a sigh and spoke.

"I guess I can only ask Senior Hong Ling then." Mu Chen said helplessly.

"You dare do that!" Tang Qian'Er hurried and said it out loud. But seeing Mu Chen's playful expression, her face turned red and she gritted her teeth in anger. She said: "I can help you, but you have to promise me this. If you find anything wrong with it, you

must immediately stop training in it!”

Mu Chen nodded his head.

“Also.”

Tang Qian’Er’s beautiful eyes swept across Mu Chen and her pretty face revealed a sweet smile.

“You have to form a team with me during the Northern Spiritual Field Training half a month later.”

Chapter 20 – Seal Formed

“The Northern Spiritual Field Training?”

When Mu Chen heard these words, he was slightly stunned. The Northern Spiritual Field was a famous danger zone within the Northern Spiritual Realm. It had a vast territory and a variety of fierce Spiritual Beasts were spread across it. There would be many Adventurer Teams that entered it to hunt Spiritual Beasts. Also, there were many rare materials and elixirs within the Northern Spiritual Field. It could be considered as a treasure place. Of course, if you want to take the treasure out, you must have sufficient strength to do so. Otherwise, you might not be able to obtain any treasure and lose your life there.

Because the Northern Spiritual Field was filled with resources, even Mu Chen’s father would personally lead his men into the Northern Spiritual Field from time to time. Every time they entered, they were bound to have many tragic fights.

“That’s right. We, the Northern Spiritual Academy’s Heaven Class, would organize the students and head to the Northern Spiritual Field for training every now and then. This is because only a true battle would have the effects of tempering oneself.”

Tang Qian’Er nodded and smiled as she spoke: “For the training, we are permitted to form a two-man team. And the top three teams that have the best results would have a special reward.”

“Reward? What is it?” Mu Chen lifted an eyebrow.

“It’s said that it would be Accumulation Elixir this time.” Tang Qian’Er thought for a moment and said.

“Accumulation Elixir?” Mu Chen was astonished. This elixir was said to be extremely beneficial for beginners like them, who had only started their training. The elixir’s medical effects were mild and it would not leave any aftereffects. With their Spiritual

Movement Stage Middle Phase strength, they would soon charge at the Spiritual Movement Strength Late Phase if they were to take it.

“Yes. If I am able to obtain an Accumulation Elixir, I should be able to advance into Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase. And I would begin my preparations to enter the Spiritual Rotation Stage in the future.” Tang Qian’Er said.

“How would they judge the results?” Mu Chen asked curiously. It was obvious that the Accumulation Elixir had piped his interest.

“It’s simple. They will look at who killed the most Spiritual Beasts and which ones is the highest rank.” Tang Qian’Er continued to speak: “Because all the students in the Heaven Class are allowed to participate, therefore, there is quite a bit of competition. This is also why I want to get you.”

“I only reached the Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase. Shouldn’t you look for someone stronger when you form a team? With Sister Qian’Er’s charm, I believe that many powerful individuals in both the East Branch and West Branch would want to form a team with you, right?” Mu Chen smiled and asked.

“You’re not willing?” Tang Qian’Er let out a slight hmph, then she waved the dark red jaded script within her hand.

“That’s something that I would wish for. However, if we fail to obtain the Accumulation Elixir, please do not blame me for dragging you down.” Mu Chen smiled. The words he said weren’t just common courtesy. After all, he only had the strength of a Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase. There are many candidates that were more suitable than him in the Northern Spiritual Academy.

Tang Qian’Er thought for a moment, then she let out a light laugh. “It doesn’t matter if we fail to obtain it. I am confident that I would reach the Spiritual Rotation Stage within a year even if I do not rely on the elixir.”

As she said this, her slender fingers gently twirled the jaded script. She glanced towards Mu Chen and said: “And I don’t like forming teams with others.”

“Since Sister Qian’Er thinks so highly of me. I will sacrifice my life and accompany you. Don’t worry, Sister Qian’Er. Even if I have to risk my puny life, I will definitely help you obtain the Accumulation Elixir.” Mu Chen had a smile on his face as he pretended to be heroic and patted his chest.

“What a sweet talker.” Tang Qian’Er blushed as she stared at him.

“Then, what about this Spiritual Art?” Mu Chen smiled as he stared at the jaded script in Tang Qian’Er’s hand.

“Don’t do this again next time.”

Tang Qian’Er grunted. She held onto the Spiritual Art as she turned around and headed towards the outside of the Spiritual Arts Room. When Mu Chen noticed this, he immediately followed.

At the door of the Spiritual Arts Room, Tang Qian’Er registered the Spiritual Art. When the old man that manages the Spiritual Arts Room noticed the dark red Spiritual Art, he glanced at Tang Qian’Er and hesitated for a moment. After all, this “Limitless Death Seal” had a vicious name attached to it. Although Tang Qian’Er met the requirements, he still did not want to see a beautiful girl being harmed by this Spiritual Art.

When Mu Chen noticed the old man hesitating, his heart was slightly anxious. He knew that the Spiritual Arts Room’s Old Man Qin was an extremely inflexible person. As long as he did not like a person, then that person would not be able to bring any Spiritual Arts away from his place. Also, don’t judge based on his appearance. He may seem like he is about to die, but his strength is at the level of Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase. He is just a step away from reaching the Spirit Stage. In the past, many cocky students suffered because of him.

Fortunately, Tang Qian'Er seemed to have some method on dealing with this old man. Her pretty face let out a pure smile and she called him "Grandpa Qin". This made the old man nod his head cheerfully. After he warned her repeatedly, he still handed the Spiritual Art to Tang Qian'Er.

Mu Chen followed Tang Qian'Er out of the Spiritual Art Room silently. The latter let out a triumphant smile and threw the jaded script towards him.

"It's all thanks to you!"

Mu Chen caught the jaded script and fiddled around with it for a moment. Joy appeared in his black eyes. Then, he gave a smile towards Tang Qian'Er. If it wasn't for Tang Qian'Er today, then it would still be difficult to borrow it out from that Old Man Tai even when he qualified for it.

Tang Qian'Er smiled. She stared helplessly at the jaded script in Mu Chen's hand. "You should be careful, if anything is wrong, you should immediately stop training in it."

"Yes, then I'll head back first." As Mu Chen held the jaded script, he already couldn't wait to start deep down inside. He waved towards Tang Qian'Er and quickly left.

The girl stared at Mu Chen's figure as it quickly vanished. She could not help but pout. That blockhead.

The cold moonlight poured down from the sky and turned into a beam as it landed in the quiet room. Inside this room, a boy was quietly sitting cross-legged. His black eyes stared at the dark red jaded script that was gripped tightly in his hand.

Mu Chen stared at the jaded script for a moment. Then, he gently let it touch his forehead. As the Spiritual Energy circulated, the jaded script's surface also flashed a dark red light.

And as the light flashed, a large amount of information flowed out from the jaded script and directly injected itself into Mu Chen's

brain.

Mu Chen closed his eyes tightly and accepted the training method for the “Limitless Death Seal”. Shortly after, he opened his eyes and let out a breath. Within his black eyes, it was filled with theories.

After all, the “Limitless Death Seal” had an extremely vicious name before. Therefore, Mu Chen did not dare to be too careless. Instead, he repeatedly looked at the training method before he began to start training in it.

Mu Chen sat down cross-legged and his hands were attuned to each other. His fingers wounded and formed an exquisite seal. He moved his mind and dark black lights flashed on his body. A trace of dark black Spiritual Energy began to linger around his palm.

The dark black Spiritual Energy was like a black snake. It would constantly twist in his palm as Mu Chen changed the seals. It gradually formed into a faint, black light seal.

However, condensing this light seal was not easy. Thus, a faint sound rang out and the twisting dark black Spiritual Energy shattered before the seal was condensed.

Mu Chen did not mind this first failure of his. If this “Limitless Death Seal” was successfully learned this easily, he would not have that big of an interest in it.

Mu Chen refocused his mind and began again.

Failed.

And failed.

The time passed by quickly, yet Mu Chen continued to train in it tirelessly. The seal that was formed in his hands were gradually becoming more proficient and the condensing speed of the Spiritual Energy also increased rapidly.

His slender hands were like a butterfly passing through flowers.

It changed at a curve. Within his palm, the dark black Spiritual Energy was being twisted. The black light seal was a lot clearer than before. A faint cold fluctuation emitted out from it.

Mu Chen firmly fixed his eyes onto the dark light seal that was about to be formed. His mind was strained to its limit. He had failed at this final step many times.

Mu Chen's fingers changed once again and a dark black Spiritual Energy flowed into the black light seal.

The black light seal suddenly trembled. A humming sound came from it. Afterwards, the black light began to converge and it directly formed into a dark black light seal and was imprinted onto Mu Chen's palm.

When the light seal was imprinted onto Mu Chen's palm, his entire body tensed up. This is because the next step was the most dangerous one. The two seniors that trained in the "Limitless Death Seal" had snapped their meridians at this step.

As the black light seal was imprinted onto his palm, Mu Chen was quickly aware of a violent fluctuation emitting from the light seal. Then, it rushed ferociously through the meridians at his palm.

This appearance was like it was trying to destroy the meridians.

"Hummm!"

However, it was lucky that Mu Chen was prepared for it. A dark black Spiritual Energy rumbled and rushed out from his aura sea. It then collided with the violent fluctuations.

A low humming sound erupted from within Mu Chen's body.

The fluctuations from the "Limitless Death Seal" were abnormally violent. It was like a wild beast as it charged towards the dark black Spiritual Energy which sealed it off. It attempted to destroy it.

However, the dark black Spiritual Energy that came from the

Great Pagoda Art was not like it imagined. It was obvious that it was not easy to deal with it.

Facing against the violent impact, the dark black Spiritual Energy completely exposed its domineering nature. It used an extremely powerful oppression and completely resisted the impact.

BAMMMM.

Waves of impacts continued. However, Mu Chen did not dare to relax the slightest bit. Cold sweat appeared on his forehead. If he failed to block them, he would probably be gravely injured.

Mu Chen drew out all the Spiritual Energy within his aura sea and tried his best to defend against the impacts. The impacts lasted approximately for ten minutes, then it finally began to weaken.

When Mu Chen discovered that the impact had completely vanished. His tensed body limped down. Sweat covered his clothes and he was breathing heavily.

Although his body was abnormally tired, Mu Chen still held excitement within his eyes. He trembled slightly as he opened his right hand. At the center of his palm, there was a dark seal engraving that made others feel a chill.

“Did I succeed?”

Mu Chen stared at the black seal engraving in the center of his palm. The corners of his lips were raised and a smile of relief appeared.

Chapter 21 – Disturbance at the Training Grounds

Northern Spiritual Academy, Training Ground.

Many students were sweating as if it had rained. A loud and clear cry, mixed with vitality, spread out far away.

Mu Chen was sitting under the shades of a tree. He lazily leaned on the trunk as he stared idly at the various heated duels. It was obvious that these duels did not interest him.

“Oi, although you have excellent results right now, you shouldn’t be so sloppy, right?” A slender figure suddenly blocked Mu Chen’s view. Then, Tang Qian’Er’s voice playfully rang out.

Mu Chen stared at the slim waistline in front of him. Then, he slowly moved his eyes up. The girl’s apricot color dress, slightly lifted up soft chest and slender figure made her quite attractive.

As he looked at the girl’s beautiful face, Mu Chen did a stretch and said: “It’s not that I’m acting sloppy, but these duels are useless to me.”

In the Spiritual Road, he did not know how many times he experienced battles of life and death. At that location, nobody was able to use any Spiritual Energy, thus they must push their minds to the limit and use their wisdom. Just a little bit of negligence and the cruel fate of being disqualified would occur. Then, they would only be able to wait at the safety zone until the trial was over.

And compared to that place, the gentle duels between students in the Northern Spiritual Academy would have no effects on Mu Chen.

“Hmph, you only know how to boast.” Tang Qian’Er hummed softly. Yet her beautiful eyes could not help but look at the comforting face of his. There was a gentle smiling intent in his black eyes as well as a sense of calmness deep inside that not many

people possess at his age. It made others slightly immersed in them.

Tang Qian'Er also sat down beside Mu Chen. She then stretched out her slender hands and unlocked her ponytail. Her bluish black hair suddenly poured down like a waterfall. The scene was so touching and it instantly attracted a lot of attention over. Envious looks were thrown to Mu Chen in the end. This person really is great to have such a treatment.

"That's right, how did your training in the Limitless Death Seal go? There weren't any problems, right?" Tang Qian'Er tilted her head and she asked with her eyebrow lifted.

Mu Chen smiled. He extended his palm over towards Tang Qian'Er. In his palm, a looming black seal slowly came out while emitting a cold chill.

"You succeeded?" Tang Qian'Er gently opened her mouth as she made a shocked expression. She could not help but immediately grabbed onto Mu Chen's hand and stared at the black seal on his palm. Her fingers poked at the black seal. A cold chill penetrated through it and made her body shiver.

"It can only be considered as succeeding the first step. But it must be continuously nurtured by my Spiritual Energy." Mu Chen shook his head and he moved his gaze. He noticed that a lot of eyes were heating up in the surrounding and immediately let out a soft cough. He said: "You'll pull in a lot of hatred for me if you continue to do this."

Only then did Tang Qian'Er recover, her face instantly turned red and she quickly let go of Mu Chen's hand.

Not that far away, Luo Tong stared at this scene. His eyes were a bit sulky. Tang Qian'Er was the East Branch's flower. He naturally liked her as well. Moreover, Tang Qian'Er's father was also one of the Northern Spiritual Realm's Territory Lord. His father had once mentioned that if he was able to obtain Tang Qian'Er's love, then

their strength would increase tremendously after the Luo Territory and Tang Territory teamed up.

This idea was definitely good, but Luo Tong did not manage to obtain this girl's heart like his father had wished for. Instead, Tang Qian'Er treated him quite cold. This made him extremely frustrated. And now, he saw how close Mu Chen and Tang Qian'Er were and he was naturally jealous.

"Brother Luo, that guy really is insolent." Jiang Li and Teng Yong stood beside Luo Tong and jealously stared at Mu Chen as they spoke.

Although they were unhappy seeing this scene, they knew that Mu Chen wasn't that easy to deal with. Therefore, they did not act arrogantly as they would usually and pick a quarrel with him.

"He is only just a newbie that recently entered the Heaven Class. Yet he dares put on airs in front of me."

Luo Tong's eyes were dark and his eyes immediately turned around. He stared at Tan Qingshan, who was sweating like mad as he trained nearby, and let out cold smile: "Jiang Li, go find Tan Qingshan and have a duel with him, remember, you must take good care of the newbies."

Jiang Li was startled for a moment. He hesitated and said: "That Tan Qingshan has a good relationship with Mu Chen. If I were to cause trouble for Tan Qingshan, then Mu Chen would probably..."

"I'm here, what are you afraid of?" Luo Tong frowned as he asked.

When Jiang Li noticed the dissatisfaction within Luo Tong, he did not dare to say anything more. He immediately got up and walked quickly towards Tan Qingshan.

Tan Qingshan, who was in the middle of his training, noticed that Jiang Li was coming for him. He frowned for a bit, but he did not say anything as he was not very talkative. He continued to

practice a fist technique.

“Tan Qingshan, I’ll have a duel with you for a bit. This way, you will be able to improve much faster. As an old hand, I should take care of you newbies.” Jiang Li said as he directed a malicious smile towards Tan Qingshan.

After the surrounding students witnessed this, they immediately understood what Jiang Li wanted to do. However, nobody dared to say anything because of Luo Tong’s dark gaze coming from nearby. This kind of duel was definitely quite normal.

“These guys are really going too far!” When Tang Qian’Er saw this scene, she immediately frowned. She tried to get up, but her wrist was pulled by Mu Chen.

“What is it?” Tang Qian’Er looked at Mu Chen suspiciously. It was obvious that Luo Tong and the others troubled Tan Qingshan in order to allow Mu Chen to see it. It could be regarded as a deliberate show of strength as a warning.

“Although Tan Qingshan is silent, he has a stubborn personality. Sometimes, he does not need any help. Do not underestimate a man’s pride.” Mu Chen said faintly.

“The act of old hands bullying newcomers would appear everywhere. If I were to come forward and help him, it might allow him to be less troubled. However, this isn’t something that he needs. Moreover, in extreme situations, he might even drift apart from me. So in order to avoid this kind of trouble, he must use his own abilities to tell the others that he isn’t someone that everybody can just bully.”

“But he isn’t Jiang Li’s opponent.” Tang Qian’Er said.

“Victory isn’t just about beating down the other.” Mu Chen smiled slightly and said: “As long as he is able to let the others know that he isn’t a pushover and that they would have to pay some sort of price in order to push him around, it is fine.”

Tang Qian'Er thought for a moment. She felt that there were some truths within Mu Chen's words. However, she still hesitated and said: "Hmph, even though you're younger than me by a year, why did you pretend to be so old?"

Mu Chen smiled. He looked at Tan Qingshan whose face color changed. The latter clenched and loosened his hands in a cycle. He seemed to struggle for a bit before he stared towards Mu Chen.

Mu Chen gave a smile to Tan Qingshan and gently nodded.

Seeing Mu Chen's smile, Tan Qingshan gripped his hands tightly. Fierceness appeared within his eyes and he coldly said: "Then, senior Jiang Li, please advise me!"

Jiang Li was startled when he saw that Tan Qingshan actually accepted and immediately let out a sneer. He really is a boy who had no idea of his own limitations.

The two individuals slowly retreated backwards and many students surrounded them. However, it was obvious that many of them felt that Tan Qingshan was really unlucky this time.

Under the crowd's gaze, the duel instantly began.

It was just like everyone had expected. This duel was simply one-sided as their strength was at different levels. However, everybody's sympathy gradually changed shortly after.

Because they saw Tan Qingshan continued to charge at Jiang Li without the slightest fear of death. Even when he was repeatedly kicked down by Jiang Li, he did not show any signs of surrendering. The crazy imposing manner coming from his red eyes even shocked Jiang Li.

Bang Bang Bang!

The two figures interweaved at the grounds. Although Tan Qingshan was quite helpless, he risked being hit by Jiang Li a few times in order to bite at him.

When Jiang Li blew away Tan Qingshan again with his fist, the latter continued to pounce forward and bit into his arm. It left a bloodstain. Jiang Li finally could not stand the mad wolf-like imposing manner and retreated a few steps. He shouted out: “You’re crazy!”

Tan Qingshan ignored it and he pounced forward again with his red eyes.

“I quit!” Jiang Li hurriedly escape. He screamed out loud as he stared at Tang Qingshan’s red eyes.

The surrounding students rushed forward and pulled at Tan Qingshan. However, the latter was overly crazy right now and they failed to stop him for a moment. This scene made many students tremble. This Tan Qingshan was truly crazy.

Under the surrounding students’ shouts, Tan Qingshan gradually calmed down. He had cracked lips, his entire body was filled with pain and a bruise was even on his face. However, his eyes were filled with excitement.

In front of him, Jiang Li’s clothes were also ripped a lot. Although he did not have any injuries, his filthy face and the horror in it were visible to everyone.

Tan Qingshan might have lost in strength, but he won in terms of imposing manner. This was enough to make the other Heaven Class students look at him with new eyes.

Tan Qingshan wiped the blood from his mouth and looked towards Mu Chen. The latter smiled and gave him a thumbs up: “Amazing.”

Tan Qingshan rubbed his head and smiled. He felt gratitude towards Mu Chen as he had given him a chance to win back his pride with his own efforts. In the future, there aren’t many old hands that would probably come to bully him.

“That guy has quite a crazy nature.” Tang Qian’Er also smiled.

Tan Qingshan's craziness earlier even made her slightly alarmed.

Mu Chen smiled as he nodded his head. Then, he stood up.

"What are you doing?" Tang Qian'Er asked suspiciously.

"Tan Qingshan did what he was supposed to do. Next, it's my turn. Others tried to show their strength as a warning, so I must pay them back. Otherwise, it would be quite troublesome." Mu Chen smiled and he gripped his right hand tightly: "Also, I wanted to find a person to test how powerful the "Limitless Death Seal" is."

Mu Chen slowly walked forward. Then under many people's gazes, he entered the grounds and stared at the gloomy Luo Tong.

"Senior Luo Tong, I recently learned a Spiritual Art and I wanted to invite senior over to give me some guidance. I hope that you would advise me as well."

Chapter 22 – Might of the Death Seal

When Mu Chen's voice rang out in the training ground, the lively atmosphere suddenly quieted down. Then, countless astonished eyes remained fixed on him.

Who would have imagined that Mu Chen would actually take the initiative to fight with Luo Tong? Could it be that he did not know that the latter was always finding an opportunity to trouble him? Why would he go on his own and charge at him now?

"Qian'Er, what is Mu Chen doing? That Luo Tong isn't that easy to deal with." Mo Ling went up to Tang Qian'Er and asked with a serious expression as he stared at Mu Chen's back.

Tang Qian'Er shook her head. Although her eyes showed a bit of worry, she did not reveal it. She only let out a shallow laugh and said: "It's fine, he knows what he is doing."

Mo Ling could only give a bitter smile as he nodded. This duel followed the rules. Even if he wanted to speak out and help him, he could not step in. He can only hope that Mu Chen had a bit of skill. Otherwise, Luo Tong probably would not let go of this opportunity of tormenting him.

"Ho ho"

While being surrounded in many gazes from nearby, Luo Tong was stunned. His originally overcast face slowly turned cold. From his mouth, a cold laugh slowly escaped his lips.

"Looks like you believe that you've gotten used to the place after staying at the heaven class for the past few days. So you can finally begin to act arrogant?" Luo Tong stood up, his eyes were coldly fixed on Mu Chen.

"What are you saying? I simply want to have a little duel with you." Mu Chen chuckled with a gentle smile as he spoke: "Also, isn't it something natural for a senior to have a little duel with

newcomers? That's what Jiang Li said earlier.

Over at the side, Jiang Li's facial color changed unnaturally after he heard Mu Chen mentioning him. However, he deliberately pretended to be fierce as he glared at Mu Chen. In his heart, he wondered why this guy would dare to cause trouble for Luo Tong. Could it be that he didn't know that Luo Tong had the strength of a Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase?

Luo Tong stared at Mu Chen's handsome face which wore a gentle smile. In his heart, however, he was extremely furious. That smile seemed like it was mocking him, but he also coldly grinned, and said: "Since you have that desire, then as your senior I should agree to it, might as well, might as well..."

After saying those three words, the coldness in Luo Tong's eyes, was undisguised. From the surface of his body, a tyrannical fluctuation was emitted as spiritual energy slowly entwined and escaped from his body.

The students nearby spectating, all quickly moved back a bit as if they were afraid that they would be caught in it.

Mu Chen extended his fists: "Please"

Luo Tong did not hold back at all. As the color of his face darkened, he released his spiritual energy without reservation. He took a step forward and shot forward like an arrow. Accompanied with the sound of an explosion, his fist blasted outwards and it relentlessly charged towards Mu Chen.

When the spectators saw how ferocious Luo Tong was, they were shocked. How was this a little duel? Luo Tong obviously had the intention to beat up Mu Chen.

Mu Chen looked at the quickly approaching Luo Tong. However, he did not have any intention of fleeing or hiding, a dark black spiritual energy wrapped around his fist. He then took on a stance to take the blow head on and collided directly against Luo Tong.

He wanted to get a good grasp on the strength of a Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase.

A low sound reverberated out as their fists collided heavily. Both parties' spiritual energy smashed against each other and formed energy waves. It instantly caused strong whirls of air to appear around them.

The energy waves swept across the area and the two figures were both shaken. Mu Chen trembled and was pushed back a number of steps. On the other hand, Luo Tong was only pushed back one step. It was evident that Luo Tong had the upper hand in a direct confrontation.

"Regardless of how impressive your spiritual energy is, there will still be this difference in level when facing against me; even if I suppress you, I can suppress you to death!" Luo Tong's eyes were cold. He was in the Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase while Mu Chen was only in the Middle Phase. Although it might seem like a small difference, the difference was enough to oppress the other.

"Didn't your father tell you to just swallow your pride and behave if you don't have the capability? Since you've taken the initiative to come, you're bound to lose face!"

After hearing this, Mu Chen gently laughed as he said: "While I was learning how to endure, you were still in school being a good little boy. And the reason why I need to endure is because I met someone I couldn't beat at that point of time. But how regretful, in my eyes, you don't amount to much."

"Then let me tell you, what kind of price you will need to pay today!"

A hint of dreariness appeared in Luo Tong's eyes. He extended two fingers, forming it into a blade as a dark green energy violently surged out. At his fingertips, a sword blade seemed to appear and disappear as it emitted out a sharp fluctuation.

“Great Luo’s Sword Technique?” Upon seeing the glowing green sword tip emerging from Luo Tong’s fingers, their expression changed and they shouted in shock.

“The Luo Territory’s Great Luo’s Sword Technique?”

Mu Chen’s gaze swept past the glowing green blade. Spiritual Tier Low Rank, Great Luo’s Sword Technique. This is the technique that made the Luo Territory’s Territory Lord famous. He never imagined that Luo Tong would have trained in it. However, judging from its appearance, it wasn’t up to standard yet. However, it was already a very impressive feat to execute it at the Spiritual Movement Stage.

“Swoosh!”

Luo Tong didn’t give Mu Chen any time to think. He had a cold gaze as his body charged forward. His fingers were like a long sword. As his fingers cut through the air, he violently stabbed towards Mu Chen.

Where ever the blade passed, the air seemed as if it was torn apart.

Mu Chen’s eyes were focused solely at sword tip coming from the violent stab. This sharpness was enough to give someone goose bumps. He slowly clenched his right hand.

A dark black Spiritual Energy circulated through his body. It was infused endlessly into the center of Mu Chen’s right palm. The looming black Seal in his palm gradually emerged at this moment.

A cold fluctuation poured out.

A dark black light fiercely emitted out from Mu Chen’s palm. At this moment, Mu Chen seemed to be holding a black sun. The cold fluctuation coming from it made others alarmed.

Mu Chen stamped with his foot and his figure leaped forward like a leopard. He chose not to dodge and met directly against Luo Tong’s fierce and aggressive move. The spectators were all

dumbfounded when they saw this scene.

“Go to hell!”

Luo Tong shouted out gravely. The glowing green sword did not slow down as it streaked forward like a lightning towards Mu Chen’s throat.

The fist which contained a dense black light was also thrusted forward at the same time. A black light, which was like a sun, directly collided against the glowing green sword tip.

Violent Spiritual Energy Fluctuations exploded out. It felt as if the ground quivered as well. However, the eyes of the students remained fixated at the place where the green sword tip collided with the black light.

“Break!”

Mu Chen’s eyes flashed a cold light. Within his aurasea, spiritual energy was being poured out without restrain. The black seal also violently trembled in the centre of the palm. It actually appeared in front of his fist and landed heavily onto the glowing green sword tip.

Kacha!

The black seal blasted out, causing the glowing green sword tip to pause for a moment. Then, everybody heard a slight breaking sound. Soon after that, they widened their eyes as cracks appeared on the glowing green sword tip.

In the end, the glowing green sword tip shattered completely. A hint of horror appeared within Luo Tong’s eyes as his body shot back helplessly.

Mu Chen did not follow up with an attack. The black seal vanished as he flipped his palm. Moreover, the fluctuations also gradually dissipated. However, the spectators didn’t make a single sound. They stared in astonishment at the slender figure. It was obvious the unthinkable had just happened. Mu Chen not only

blocked Luo Tong's greatest skill, he even managed to force him to pull back.

"How could this be..."

Jiang Li and Teng Yong were stunned as watched this scene happen. Luo Tong, who was a Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase, actually lost to Mu Chen, who was only a Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase.

"This..." As Mo Ling witnessed this scene, his heart was flustered.

Tang Qian'Er let out a breath of relief and she relaxed her slender hand. This guy is truly impressive.

"Senior Luo Tong, thank you."

Mu Chen cupped his hands at Luo Tong as he chuckled. However, his eyes were fixed on his own palm. The black seal has faded quite a bit. If it's just based on power, this Limitless Death Seal would not be at the level of a Common Tier High Rank. It might only be a Common Tier because the requirement on having a certain degree of domineering Spiritual Energy was too high.

However, the consumption of Spiritual Energy was enormous for the Limitless Death Seal. The earlier attack had consumed half of his aurasea's spiritual energy. Although it was his first time controlling it so it was not perfect, even a Spiritual Tier Low Rank Spiritual Arts can't compare to its consumption.

Luo Tong's face turned pale. He didn't think that the results would end up like this, so he couldn't speak for a few moments. Mu Chen's earlier aggressive attack shocked him greatly. In that instant, he felt a great danger.

"This guy actually had such a powerful Spiritual Art. Did his father prepare this for him?" Luo Tong gritted his teeth as he thought. He had practiced this Great Luo's Sword Technique for a very long time before it came to fruition. Yet, he still lost to Mu

Chen. Just how many tricks did he have?

Mu Chen did not care about Luo Tong, who was reading too much in it. He achieved his goal of frightening Luo Tong. This guy will probably restrain himself in the future. Therefore, he clapped his hands and turned away to leave.

“Mu Chen, come with me for a bit.”

As he turned away, a faint voice suddenly appeared from nearby. He was slightly shocked and he saw Teacher Mo standing not so far away from him as he tilted his head over.

Mu Chen was stunned. He exchanged gazes with Tang Qian’Er for a moment. Under the watch of many students, he hesitated for a moment before following Teacher Mo.

Upon nearing a quiet forest, Teacher Mo stopped walking. Then, he turned his body and narrowed his eyes. His voice gradually became more severe and he said: “ You’ve trained in the Limitless Death Seal?”

Chapter 23 – The True Power of the Limitless Death Seal

"You've trained in the Limitless Death Seal?"

Mu Chen stared at the serious expression on Teacher Mo's face. He could not help but let out a hollow laugh. Then, he nodded his head. With the latter's Spirit Stage strength, it was obvious that he could not hide it from him.

"You shouldn't have the right to train in it yet?" Teacher Mo said in a deep voice.

Mu Chen blinked, but he did not speak. He had already trained in it already. Could it be that he'll make him return it back?

Teacher Mo stared at Mu Chen's face. His serious expression faltered for a moment. It seems that this boy did not care about his authority. He could only shake his head helplessly and say: "Can you not be this reckless?"

"I only wanted to try it out. If there are any problems, I will immediately stop training in it. I care about my life more than anyone else." Mu Chen smiled and replied.

Teacher Mo could only stare at him sourly. He hesitated for a moment before saying: "Did you succeed?"

"I succeeded in its initial step." Mu Chen stretched out his hand. In the center of his palm, a black seal appeared vaguely.

Teacher Mo stared at the black seal in Mu Chen's hand. The corner of his lips twitched slightly. Although he was aware of it earlier, his heart could not help but tremble when he saw that Mu Chen was able to successfully train in this Limitless Death Seal in such a short period of time.

This talent, as expected from the person who obtained the qualifications for the Spiritual Road.

“Are you interested in this Limitless Death Seal?” Teacher Mo glanced at Mu Chen. Ever since he brought Mu Chen to the Spiritual Arts Room Heaven Level, he discovered that Mu Chen took a fancy to this Spiritual Art.

“I could feel that this Spiritual Art isn’t that simple.” Mu Chen thought for a moment before he spoke. Although this Spiritual Art may only seem to be a Common Tier High Rank, he could faintly feel that something was a bit off with it.

“Oh?” Teacher Mo lifted an eyebrow and stared at Mu Chen.

“It feels that this Limitless Death Seal seems to carry a great potential. The training on the surface seems to be the initial step… I feel that there should be some sort of method to make this Limitless Death Seal even stronger.” Mu Chen muttered to himself.

Teacher Mo slightly narrowed his eyes. A trace of surprise surged through his eyes.

Mu Chen stared at Teacher Mo and suddenly let out a smile. He said with a cunning voice: “Teacher Mo should be quite familiar with the Limitless Death Seal, right? From what I can tell, you seem to be quite interested in it.”

Teacher Mo glanced at Mu Chen, who was like a sly fox. He helplessly nodded his head and said: “I, too, have trained in this Limitless Death Seal.”

As he said this, he extended out his palm. In the center of his palm, a black seal also appeared on it. However, the one that came from Teacher Mo was a lot more completely and darker than the black seal at the center of Mu Chen’s hand. The cold chill fluctuation also far surpassed the one that Mu Chen formed.

Mu Chen stared at the black seal in Teacher Mo’s hand in shock. He gently smiled as he said: “It really is just like I expected. This Spiritual Art really isn’t that simple. Otherwise, why would Teacher Mo select it?”

Teacher Mo is a genuine powerhouse at the Spirit Stage level. He is ranked high up in the Northern Spiritual Realm. If the Limitless Death Seal was only just an ordinary Common Tier Spiritual Art, he would not go train in it.

“You rascal…”

Teacher Mo gave off a bitter laugh. This boy is quite slippery. He thought for a moment and slowly said: “Do you want to know how to let the Limitless Death Seal reveal its true power?”

Mu Chen’s eyes lit up. He nodded his head heavily.

“It’s simple.” Teacher Mo chuckled and he extended his left hand over as well. Then, Mu Chen was astonished as he noticed that there was an exactly the same black seal at the center of Teacher Mo’s left palm.

So with the Limitless Death Seal, you could form more than one Death Seals!

Mu Chen’s eyes glowed. A touch of excitement suddenly appeared on his face. He stared heatedly at Teacher Mo and murmured: “The reason why there weren’t any other steps for training the Limitless Death Seal isn’t because there weren’t any. It is because the amazing point of the Death Seal is that you could form multiple Death Seals. By overlapping the Death Seals, you will be able to reveal its true power?”

Teacher Mo nodded and said: “However, the Limitless Death Seal has a harsh requirement for Spiritual Energy. I have tried my best, yet I was only able to form two seals. As for the Death Seals, the more you have, the more terrifying the backlash from the impact would be. I had once attempted to form the third Death Seal, but I was nearly gravely injured by its shock. After that, I did not dare to try it again.”

Mu Chen also had the same feeling. When he formed the first Death Seal, he went through great lengths just to withstand the

impact coming from the formation of the seal. He really did not know if he could endure the second seal being formed.

“Right now, you have successfully formed the first Death Seal, do not rush to condense the second seal. Just so an accident wouldn’t occur.” Teacher Mo warned him.

Mu Chen nodded. Although he longed for the true power of the Limitless Death Seal, he also understood there were no benefits for being too ambitious.

Seeing this, Teacher Mo did not say anything more and waved his hand. Mu Chen immediately turned and left. The moment he turned his head around, he saw Tang Qian’Er waiting for him.

“Are you alright? Did Teacher Mo do anything to you?” Tang Qian’Er immediately asked these questions when she say Mu Chen coming out. After all, Mu Chen did break the rules a bit when he learned the Limitless Death Seal. Therefore, she was worried that he would be punished.

Mu Chen smiled as he shook his head. Then, he lowered his head and looked at the black seal in his palm. His heart heated up. This Limitless Death Seal was truly extraordinary. It looks like he would have to put more effort into it in the future.

In the middle of the night, Mu Chen was quietly sitting cross-legged. His hands were changing seals again. A trace of dark black Spiritual Energy circulated at the tips of his fingers.

Kacha.

However, when the dark black Spiritual Energy weaved together and attempted to form a seal, the Spiritual Energy suddenly went out of control and the fluctuation dissipated away.

Mu Chen stared at his empty palm. He shook his head helplessly. Just earlier, he attempted to see if he could form the second seal, but the results were obvious. He failed.

It seems that the difficulty for the second Death Seal was much

harder than the first one.

“Looks like I can only slowly do this.”

Mu Chen muttered to himself. Then, he recovered his mind and closed his eyes. He began to circulate the Great Pagoda Art and absorbed the Spiritual Aura from the world. In the end, the Spiritual Aura turned into dark black Spiritual Energy and entered his aurasea.

In addition to this, Mu Chen would also separate a bit of his Spiritual Energy and let it flow down the meridians in his arm in order to nurture the black Death Seal. It made the color of the black seal become deeper.

Because of the fight with Luo Tong yesterday at the training grounds, Mu Chen’s reputation also spread out within the East Branch Heaven Class. The veteran students did not dare underestimate this newbie, who just rose up. Also, Tan Qingshan made others understand that that he wasn’t a seemingly quiet boy, who would be pushed around, with his fierce attitude yesterday. Therefore, nobody came to trouble him in the days after. Mu Chen had truly obtained peace and quiet.

During this peaceful time, Mu Chen began to focus his efforts into cultivation. He would be at the cultivation field to borrow the Third Rank Spirit Convergence Array at daytime. The Spiritual Energy within his aurasea become denser and denser as the days passed.

When it was nighttime, he would nurture the Limitless Death Seal on his palm. He also gradually attempted to form the second Death Seal. But without any exception, he failed.

But despite the repeated failures, Mu Chen did not give up. He could vaguely feel that he was getting more proficient in the Seal Method for forming the Limitless Death Seal through the repeated failures. His control at the Limitless Death Seal became more and more smoothly.

The feeling of him getting closer and closer to success made Mu Chen experience a little bit of joy.

The time quietly went on and in a blink of an eye, approximately half a month passed.

During this half a month, the Spiritual Energy inside Mu Chen's aurasea became denser and denser. Although he had not advanced to the Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase, it was definitely more powerful than half a month ago.

While his Spiritual Energy progressed, Mu Chen's training in the Limitless Death Seal also became more proficient. His control over the first Death Seal reached a certain degree of precision. It was not like when he was facing against Luo Tong and would cause unnecessary consumption.

As for the condensation of the second Death Seal, Mu Chen could faintly feel that he had reached it. However, his Spiritual Energy wasn't enough so he was not able to condense it successfully. This made him feel a bit regretful.

In the cultivation field, when Mu Chen heard that the bell ringing, which represented that the class was over, he opened his eyes and began to feel the Spiritual Energy surging in his aurasea. He smiled gently and stretched.

"Hey."

A sweet voice came from beside him. Mu Chen tilted his head. He only noticed Tang Qian'Er smiling as she stared at him with anticipation.

"What is it?" Mu Chen asked.

"We will be heading for training at the Northern Spiritual Field tomorrow." Tang Qian'Er smiled as she said.

"We're heading out tomorrow?"

Mu Chen paused for a moment before he smiled and nodded his

head. He was completely immersed in his training during this time, so he nearly forgot about the time. However, it was still fine. Seeing that he could not form the second Death Seal because he did not have enough Spiritual Energy, if he was able to find some Elixirs in the Northern Spiritual Field, it would solve his pressing problem.

“You have to work harder during this time’s Northern Spiritual Field training. It is said that the West Branch’s Liu Mubai will also participate. The one that formed a team with him is the West Branch’s Hong Ling. We can’t lose to them.” Tang Qian’Er said seriously.

“Liu Mubai, huh…”

Mu Chen let out a slight smile. That person is the genuine number one in the Northern Spiritual Academy. And are they going to confront each other for the first time during this Northern Spiritual Field Training?

How interesting.

Mu Chen’s black eyes shined. He was not afraid of anyone in the Spiritual Road and it was exactly the same in the Northern Spiritual Realm.

Chapter 24 – Promise

The Northern Spiritual Field is located at the northwestern side of the Northern Spiritual Realm. It is approximately a day away from the Northern Spiritual Academy. This vast territory could be considered as the most popular place within the Northern Spiritual Realm. Although the Northern Spiritual Field is filled with many dangers, the higher the risk, the higher the rewards. To obtain these rewards, many individuals would let their successors take their position before entering the Northern Spiritual Field. Some individuals would be able to obtain the rewards, but some would be buried under the rotten leaves.

Heading towards the Northern Spiritual Field for training was considered a rather significant event in the Northern Spiritual Academy. Almost half of the Heaven Class students would participate. As they would quietly train inside the Academy, they knew that they needed real combat the most.

And only real combat would toughen a person's mind. This is an essential thing required on the path of becoming strong.

Not only was the Northern Spiritual Field filled with a variety of Spiritual Beasts, there were also a diverse group of disreputable individuals, including some notorious characters.

Compared to the bloody and ruthless characters, the Northern Spiritual Academy's students were like a sheep. Even though they weren't weak, but they would not be a decent opponent for these ruthless individuals if a fight really happened.

Therefore, the Northern Spiritual Academy also sent out a powerful guard force in order to protect the students. The East Branch's Teacher Mo and the West Branch's Teacher Xi would also follow. These two individuals were genuine powerhouses at the Spirit Stage. There shouldn't be many souls that would dare harbor evil intentions in front of two Spirit Stage powerhouses.

In the early morning, the Northern Spiritual Academy's Field Training Team began to leave. However, they only reached the outskirts of the Northern Spiritual Field when it was sunset. Since it was getting darker, they set up their camp when they got there.

As the darkness enveloped the place, a campfire rose from the camp. It was evident that many of the Northern Spiritual Academy's students would not come to such a place. Thus, many of them were excited and a lively atmosphere surrounded the camp. This lively atmosphere made others stare at them in the darkness. A majority of them were Adventurers and they knew that these individuals were hot-headed individuals from the Northern Spiritual Academy. They only pouted in the darkness as they walked away.

In their eyes, these student goody-two-shoes would probably be trembling in fear when they face a vicious Spiritual Beast.

Mu Chen sat cross-legged beside the campfire. He stared at the darkness outside of the camp. In the far distance, there were a variety of bloody roars echoing from beasts.

This scene was somewhat familiar to him.

But only the atmosphere was much less brutal and bloody compared to his memories of the Spiritual Road.

Mu Chen trembled for a moment. Then, a slender hand suddenly extended from behind and patted his shoulder.

When the hand landed on Mu Chen's shoulder, his black eyes instantly turned cold. His entire body tensed up like a jaguar coming in for its prey. His hand shot out and clenched the hand tightly.

"Ouch."

A cry of pain rang out. Only then did Mu Chen recover and he turned around to look at Tang Qian'Er, who was behind him. The coldness within his eyes quickly disappeared as he touched his

head awkwardly and let go of the hand.

“What are you doing? It hurts.” Tang Qian’Er angrily complained at Mu Chen as she sat down beside him and rubbed her wrist.

“Sorry.” Mu Chen let out a bitter laugh. The one year trial in the Spiritual Road made his body remain alert instinctively. This vigilant instinct was always suppressed by him when he returned to the Northern Spiritual Realm. However, he returned back to a familiar environment again, so he actually awakened this vigilance again.

“What is it?”

Tang Qian’Er pouted, but her eyes remained fixed on Mu Chen. After all, girls are always quite attentive. She felt a cold chill when Mu Chen gripped her wrist earlier. If she did not let out a sound of pain, Mu Chen might have directly crushed her wrist.

Mu Chen stared at the campfire in front of him and was silent for a moment. He said: “If someone did the same action as you earlier in the Spiritual Road to me, perhaps I would have killed him. Because if I don’t kill him, I might be the one that will be killed.”

Tang Qian’Er froze for a moment and she stared at the calm boy. When he said the word “kill”, his face did not change much. It was as if he was accustomed to it.

“Then the Spiritual Road seems to be quite terrifying.” Tang Qian’Er muttered. In their eyes, the Spiritual Road was quite mysterious. It is said that many individuals who left the Spiritual Road would not talk about that matter. However, the people that came out of the Spiritual Road were all extremely powerful. Thus, it made many young boys and girls like Tang Qian’Er to yearn for that place.

However, as naïve individuals, they did not know that they must walk out from this insane place to obtain an abnormal strength.

Mu Chen gently smiled and muttered to himself: “At that place,

everybody is considered a competitor. They are all extremely cruel competitors as well. There are a few crazy individuals, who would smile peacefully towards you, yet they would plunge a dagger into your chest in the next moment.

"Therefore, trust is something rare at that place. However, if you are able to find it, it will be something that you will cherish for the rest of your life."

Mu Chen quietly breathed out. His face looked gentle as he recalled the girl with silver hair. She was a crazy person that even he felt troubled about. During the half a year when she chased him, Mu Chen fought with her three times. He won twice, but for the last time, the girl reversed the situation and a black long sword, which was like a ghost in the night sky, stopped at his throat.

It was obvious that she won that time completely. She only needed to gently stab at him and he would have remained in the Spiritual Road forever.

However, she did not stab at him. In the darkness, her glass-like eyes stared at him for a long time. Then, she slowly retracted her sword and said in a low voice: "I won't kill you. You should come with me."

At that moment, Mu Chen was stunned for a while. Then, he asked the question he wanted to know since six months ago: "Why did you chase after me for so long? If I didn't save you, you would have died a long time ago."

When he first met her, she was caught in a dangerous situation. Five cunning crazy individuals wanted to kill her. Originally, Mu Chen did not plan on helping her, but maybe because those individuals were annoying or perhaps it was the sadness that appeared in her glass-like eyes, he gave in.

He saved her, yet he also got into trouble with the five of them. For a week after that, Mu Chen brought the injured her as they

escaped. However, Mu Chen gradually defeated the five troublesome individuals in the following ten days after that. He killed three of them and the remaining two gave up.

But just when he finally got rid of the five troublesome individuals, he could not relax at all. The girl, who had never spoken a single word to him, pulled out her sword and pursued him for half a year.

When the girl heard Mu Chen's question, she seemed to ponder for a moment. Then, she hesitated before he heard the answer, which nearly made Mu Chen puke out blood: "I don't want to have a good opinion of you. I only wanted to focus on my training. If I have a favorable opinion of you, I will be distracted."

"You're crazy."

At that moment, Mu Chen could not endure it and blurted out these words.

"Then, what are you doing now?" Mu Chen powerlessly asked.

"I planned on killing you before, but it feels like I can't do it."

The girl considered this seriously. Faint moonlight illuminated the beautiful face that would eventually cause a disaster. She frowned and said: "It feels that I still have a favorable opinion of you after these six months."

Mu Chen wordlessly stared at the sky. They had hunted each other for half a year now, yet you actually say that you have a favorable opinion of me?

"I did not kill you just now, so you owe me your life. Therefore, you will form a team with me. I'll kill you when I don't have a favorable opinion of you."

"Are you trying to raise a dog?"

"If I don't kill you by then, I'll let you go."

Mu Chen shook his head helplessly. He turned around and said:

“I’m not interested.”

“I can protect you from all the backstabs. As long as you do not harm me, I will protect you whether it is in the Spiritual Road or in the Great Thousand World.” The girl hesitated for a moment before she gently said towards Mu Chen, who turned around.

Mu Chen’s footsteps stopped. The girl’s gentle voice seemed to penetrate the space and directly hit his heart. It made his eyes become warmer.

“You usually do not speak, yet I never thought that it would be so touching when you do.”

Mu Chen turned around and smiled. He let out a sigh and he stretched out a hand towards her as he walked over.

“Then, let’s cooperate happily.”

The girl’s face, which always remained calm and emotionless, suddenly let out a faint smile. At that moment, her beauty actually made the moonlight lusterless.

Afterwards, she stretched out her cold hand and gently shook Mu Chen’s hand.

This is my promise to you.

Chapter 25 – Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence

The warm firelight from the rising campfire illuminated Tang Qian'Er's body. However, she still felt quite chilly. This chill came from Mu Chen's description of the Spiritual Road that she had once longed to enter.

"It seems that the Spiritual Road isn't a wonderful place, it's lucky that I didn't go. Otherwise, not even my bones would remain." Tang Qian'Er's heart beat irregularly as she spoke. She did not imagine just how anxious she would be if she had to survive in a place where she could not trust anyone.

"It wasn't a nice place from the start."

Mu Chen smiled and lifted his head. He noticed that Teacher Mo was waving to everyone and many students turned their gaze over.

"For this time's Northern Spiritual Field Training, this place will be our camp. All of you will head out tomorrow from this place and venture into the Northern Spiritual Field for training, where you will confront directly against Spiritual Beasts. Before this happens, I would like to remind you that the Spiritual Beasts are divided into three ranks: High, Middle, Low. Most of the ones at the outskirts of the Northern Spiritual Field will be Low Rank Spiritual Beasts. However, you will still need to team up in order to deal with it.

Teacher Mo looked around as his calm voice echoed throughout the camp. Every single student was listening carefully. They knew that this isn't a mock battle, but a true fight. A single mistake would cause them to become food for Spiritual Beasts.

"The Low Rank Spiritual Beasts are approximately at the strength of a Spiritual Movement Stage; The Middle Rank Spiritual Beasts are Spiritual Rotation Stage; The High Rank Spiritual Beasts are comparable to the Spirit Stage. In the depths of the Northern Spiritual Field, High Rank Spiritual Beasts exist. Therefore, you

should definitely not enter depths of the Northern Spiritual Field!”

When Teacher Mo said to this point, his voice had already become quite severe. Even he would find it a hassle to deal with the High Rank Spiritual Beasts in the depths of the Northern Spiritual Field. These students that just came out from the academy would be like a defenseless sheep.

Everybody nodded their heads. They weren’t foolish enough to joke around with their own lives. Not to mention a High Rank Spiritual Beasts, they would run far away if they encounter a Middle Rank Spiritual Beast.

“At the end of this training, the each member of the top three teams would be able to obtain an Accumulation Elixir.”

Teacher Mo relaxed his expression slightly. He stared at the boys and girls, whose eyes lit up, and smiled as he said: “So, in order to obtain an excellent result, you should work together with your companion. With your strength right now, you must cooperate in order to survive in the outskirts of the Northern Spiritual Field.”

“Yes!”

The students replied in unison.

“After you hunted down the Spiritual Beasts, you should remember to collect the Soul Essence. Although the Low Rank Spiritual Beast’s Soul Essence isn’t something that a Spirit Stage powerhouse would ingest, it will be used to evaluate your performance.”

Mu Chen nodded his head slightly. A Spirit Stage powerhouse has the ability to ingest Spiritual Beast’s Soul Essence. With their strength, they naturally wouldn’t take a fancy to a common Spiritual Beast.

“Teacher Mo, you are also a Spirit Stage powerhouse, what Beast Spirit did you ingest?” A few students asked in curiosity. They were quite interested in the special ability of ingesting a Beast

Spirit that a Spirit Stage possesses.

When Teacher Mo heard these words, he hesitated a bit. Then, he immediately formed a seal with one hand and a powerful Spiritual Energy erupted from his body. The golden light condensed behind him and it actually formed into a giant golden wolf that cried into the sky. On the surface of the giant wolf's body, a lightning pattern seemed to be there. It seemed very powerful and extraordinary.

"WOW!"

Surprised sounds erupted from the camp. Even the West Branch students that were located at the other side of the camp turned their gaze over. They were slightly shocked by the giant golden wolf behind Teacher Mo.

Teacher Xi, who was also explaining the rules to the West Branch, noticed this and pouted his lips. His body shook and a mighty Spiritual Energy exploded out. Behind him, a black lion figure appeared. On the back of the lion, a grey turtle shell was there.

All of the students looked at the Spiritual Beast Soul Essence that the Spirit Stage powerhouses ingested and summoned. They were envious. This power was something that they wanted.

"I ingested the High Rank Spiritual Beast Golden Thunderwolf's Soul Essence. The Golden Thunderwolf is ranked in the Myriad Beast Record. However, it is not ranked up high. It is only at the 382th place of the Earth Ranking. Teacher Xi ingested the High Rank Spiritual Beast Rockturtle Lion's Soul Essence. It is ranked at the 390th place of the Earth Ranking." Teacher Mo smiled when he saw Teacher Xi's action. Afterwards, he waved his hand and the golden wolf vanished from behind him.

"It's such an amazing Spiritual Beast, yet it is only ranked somewhere in the 300s of the Myriad Beast Record's Earth Ranking? Then won't the top 100 Earth Rank Spiritual Beast be

even more insane? There is also the legendary Heaven Ranking for the Myriad Beast Record... Wouldn't it be too overpowered?" A few students exclaimed. Just the Earth Ranking was this amazing, just how terrifying would the Heaven Ranking for the Myriad Beast Record be?

"The Spiritual Beasts that are able to enter the top 100 in the Myriad Beast Record's Earth Ranking are not any ordinary Spiritual Beast. Their strength surpasses a Spirit Stage powerhouse greatly and are comparable to a powerhouse at the level of Three Heavens Stage. Therefore, they are known as known as Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts, in short Heavenly Beasts." After he said to this point, Teacher Mo suddenly glanced at Mu Chen. Mu Chen understood what he meant. This is because Mu Chen's father ingested the Dragonfire Bird, which was ranked in the top 100 of the Earth Ranking. Thus, the Dragonfire Bird should have achieved the Heaven Rank. Normally speaking, it should be quite difficult for a Spirit Stage powerhouse to ingest the Soul Essence of a Spiritual Beast that is stronger than them. For Mu Feng to be able to ingest it, he must have been quite lucky. Mu Feng's strength is definitely in the top three even among the Nine Territory Lords within Northern Spiritual Realm because of this.

After reaching Spirit Stage, the strongest attacking method is ultimately the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence that they ingested. It is considered a powerful fighting force. Therefore, it was natural that their strength will be stronger if they ingested a stronger Spiritual Beast.

"As for the existences in the Myriad Beast Record's Heaven Ranking...." Teacher Mo paused for a moment and immediately smiled: "Even the powerful individuals at the Sovereign Stage in the Great Thousand World wouldn't dare to easily attack them."

"Okay, it's about time now. You should all rest earlier today. The Northern Spiritual Field's training will officially begin tomorrow morning!" Teacher Mo felt that he said enough. He waved his hand

to stop the excited youths.

When everybody heard these words, they dispersed as they carry a bit of excitement back with them. Mu Chen also returned to his tent and closed his eyes to train. He, once again, tried to see if he could condense the second Limitless Death Seal.

A peaceful night passed by.

The following morning. When morning arrived, many students were already prepared at the camp. They stared excitedly at the inside of the vast forest.

Mu Chen was together with Tang Qian'Er. He swept his eyes around and noticed Tan Qingshan nearby. Mo Ling was actually next to him. It seems that the two of them have formed a team. This surprised Mu Chen a bit. After all, Mo Ling had the strength of a Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase. If he wanted to find someone to team up with, there are many people more suitable than Tan Qingshan.

"Mu Chen, you formed a team with Qian'Er?" Oh, I formed a team with Qingshan. Since he is a newcomer, it would be a bit risky to come here. I thought that I should take care of him a bit." Mo Ling said as he noticed Mu Chen and he brought Tan Qingshan over.

Mu Chen smiled slightly and nodded his head. From Mo Ling's words, he could tell that he wanted to form a good relationship with him. It seems that the majority of the reason why Mo Ling wanted to take care of Tan Qingshan was because he wanted to form a good relationship with him.

"Senior Mo Ling sure is thoughtful." Mu Chen smiled. He did not have any ill feelings towards Mo Ling. Therefore, he did not object in forming a relationship with him.

They talked and laughed for a while. Then, their voices suddenly stopped. From their right, a group of individuals suddenly

separated and a few familiar figures appeared in front of Mu Chen. The one that led the group was Liu Yang, who lost to Mu Chen at the Academy Competition.

Liu Yang stared at Mu Chen. His eyes were a bit cold. The battle during the Academy Competition had impacted his reputation quite a bit. Although his big brother was Liu Mubai, he was secretly scoffed at when he entered the Heaven Class. Thus, his heart was still filled with rage.

Mu Chen only took a glance at Liu Yang before he tilted his head away to the one beside him. There, a tall and burly boy was staring at him in interest.

“You are that Mu Chen? I heard that your reputation isn’t that small recently.” The boy in yellow clothes smiled as he stared at Mu Chen and spoke in a careless manner.

“Chen Tong, what do you want?” When Mo Ling saw these two boys, he lifted an eyebrow and asked in a deep voice.

Mu Chen’s face remained calm. Chen Tong. This name was quite well-known in the Northern Spiritual Academy. Although he could not compare to Liu Mubai, he is still ranked third overall in the Northern Spiritual Academy. He is at the Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase and is like Mo Ling, an important individual that the Northern Spiritual Academy focuses on nurturing.

“Before, you were always the one that tries to make a show of authority. Why do you have to bring someone over now before daring to come over?” Mu Chen glanced at Liu Yang and he smiled as he spoke.

“Oh, you’re quite arrogant. Let us introduce ourselves? I am the West Branch’s Chen Tong. I wanted to meet the only one, who qualified for the Spiritual Road, a long time ago.” Chen Tong held out his hand and chuckled.

“Let’s go.”

Mu Chen let out a slight smile. He was too lazy to care about these two individuals. He passed straight through Chen Tong's side. Then, he stopped his footsteps and stared into the distance. At that location, Liu Mubai, who was wearing white clothes and looked exceptionally handsome, was staring over to this side.

The two of them exchange glances. A faint chill seemed to flow in the air and it made the surrounding students quietly closed their mouth.

"If you dislike me, then come at me by yourself. These people are not up to my standard." Mu Chen gently laughed. He did not stay at that place longer and brought Tang Qian'Er out of the camp. They moved quickly towards the Northern Spiritual Field.

Liu Mubai narrowed his eyes slightly as he stared at Mu Chen. A cold light flashed through his eyes.

"That bastard!" Liu Yang gritted his teeth as he spoke.

Chen Tong let out a grin, but his eyes were quite dark.

"It's fine. We'll let him show off for now. There's always a chance of meeting in the Northern Spiritual Field. At that time, nobody will be watching so I'll teach him what manners are. He really is...a boy, who doesn't respect his seniors."

Chapter 26 – Veteran Hunter

"The West Branch people sure are annoying."

Inside the forest filled with shade, Tang Qian'Er had an angry expression on her face. These people keep coming to trouble Mu Chen, so even a clay figurine would be angry within its heart.

"Only a mediocre individual will not be hit by jealousy." Mu Chen only chuckled. He looked far behind him and said: "However, that Liu Mubai seems to be quite jealous of me. I don't think I've interacted with him a lot."

"Liu Mubai?" Tang Qian'Er frowned and said: "He wants to deal with you?"

"Or why would you think that Liu Yang, a newcomer who recently ascended the Heaven Class, would bring Chen Tong over? This was probably incited by Liu Mubai. That guy...He is quite similar to the crazy individuals in the Spiritual Road, but he only lacks a bit of attainment." Mu Chen said in a faint voice.

"That guy is also really annoying." Tang Qian'Er's face turned slightly cold, but she instantly became worried: "It isn't that easy to deal with Liu Mubai. Liu Yang isn't the same level as him. Ever since he entered the Northern Spiritual Academy, Liu Mubai had always dominated the title of the strongest within the Northern Spiritual Academy. It seems that he had never lost during these years."

"Ah, right. Mu Chen, you should be careful about that Liu Mubai. I can't seem to see through that guy. Although I fought against him before, I still lost badly. Even then, Liu Mubai did not use his full strength." Mo Ling said solemnly beside him.

"Senior Mo Ling, you are already at the Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase, if Liu Mubai was able to defeat you..." Tan Qingshan was astonished and he could not resist blurting out these

words.

Mo Ling slowly nodded his head and said: “It is likely that Liu Mubai has already advanced into the Spiritual Rotation Stage. That guy… is indeed powerful.”

Tang Qian’Er’s face became serious. If this was true, then it would definitely be troublesome. The gap between Spiritual Movement Stage and Spiritual Rotation Stage was too great.

When she thought up to this point, she stared at Mu Chen. The boy’s face was still as calm as before and he had a gentle smile. That wordless silence and calmness suddenly weakened the worries within Tang Qian’Er, Mo Ling and Tan Qingshan’s heart.

The boy in front of them seemed to have some sort of magic power. It made others believe that he could do many extraordinary things in the eyes of ordinary people.

“Although the Spiritual Rotation Stage is amazing, it isn’t an existence that could not be deal with. It might be troublesome, but if Liu Mubai was to take action, he will have to pay a certain price.” Mu Chen gently said. There was no vaunting within his words. Only, it did not matter whether it was in the Spiritual Road or the Great Thousand World. If anyone has any ideas towards him, he would definitely make them pay the price regardless of the outcome.

“Forget it. Let’s not talk about this right now. The Northern Spiritual Field Training has begun. We should also officially start now. The two of you are considered our competitors.” Mu Chen looked at Mo Ling and Tan Qingshan as he smiled.

“Then we should take the advantage by striking first!”

Mo Ling and Tan Qingshan exchanged gazes with each other and fiercely stomped the ground as they dashed forward. They were currently at the outermost area of the Northern Spiritual Field. Here, the Spiritual Beasts were quite scarce. Only by venturing in

further will they be able to meet them.

Mu Chen stared as the two of them departed. He could not endure letting out a laugh. Then, he gently rubbed his palms and a tiny bit of excitement appeared in his black eyes.

It's been a long time since he hunted others. If he did not move now, he was afraid that he would become rusty.

"Let's go as well."

Mu Chen directed a wave towards Tang Qian'Er and his pace suddenly accelerated. However, he did not follow Mo Ling's route and instead, went on a slightly different route. During the trial within the Spiritual Road, he understood how to track the Spiritual Beasts' trails.

The two of them sped up. Within 10 minutes, they gradually entered the outskirts of the Northern Spiritual Field. Sounds of roars would occasionally came from a distance.

Tang Qian'Er followed closely behind Mu Chen. The girl's pretty face was slightly nervous. She knew that they would lose their life if they were surrounded by Spiritual Beasts in this kind of dangerous place.

And just when she was nervously staring at her surroundings, Mu Chen's body suddenly stopped. She smashed straight onto him without any guard up. The girl's soft and delicate body pressed onto Mu Chen's back. This soft feeling made Mu Chen blink. Behind him, Tang Qian'Er blushed and quickly tried to step back. However, her hand was caught by Mu Chen.

"Shhhhh."

Before Tang Qian'Er needlessly struggled, Mu Chen had already waved his hand slightly. His eyes pierced through the forest and stared straight ahead. Tang Qian'Er also followed that gaze and she saw a patch of open space. She noticed that there were two blood red bodies with a black horn on its forehead. These two creatures

were similar to a tiger and a pig. It leisurely strolled around while emitting piercing endlessly.

“It’s the Low Rank Spiritual Beast Bloodswine Tiger.

Mu Chen said softly. These two Bloodswine Tiger seems to be at the strength of a Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase. However, this beast has a thick skin so it should be able to endure an all-out attack from a Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase. If it were to enter in a frenzy, it would be exceptionally fierce.

“One for each person, is that okay?”

Mu Chen looked at Tang Qian’Er. The girl’s pretty face was slightly pale, but she still managed to nod her head. This was probably the first time that she was going to face a Spiritual Beast head on.

“Don’t worry. I’m here.” Mu Chen smiled as he comforted her.

“Yes.” Tang Qian’Er gently gritted her teeth and her slender hand gripped onto a short sword. She did not want to drag down Mu Chen. She must work hard for their results.

“Let’s go.”

Mu Chen gently said as his body rushed out.

Roar!

When Mu Chen appeared, the two Bloodswine Tiger turned their red eyes over towards him. They let out a roar and a bloody light emitted from their body.

Bang.

With quaking steps, one of the Bloodswine Tiger charged violently like a streak of red light towards Mu Chen. When the other one planned on following it, a sharp, shattered rock wrapped in Spiritual Energy hit its nose heavily. This made it falter and its blood red eyes stared at the delicate girl. It let out a roar and charged over.

Mu Chen stared at the Bloodswine Tiger that was charging towards him. His eyes did not panic and, instead, a hint of excitement flashed through. He stomped and actually charged straight at it.

A human and a beast skimmed by each other. The fierce winds raised the leaves on the ground. The instant that the two of them were about to collide, Mu Chen's body suddenly took a diagonal step. His right hand gripped onto a sharp dagger and dark black Spiritual Energy quickly wrapped around it.

Mu Chen's right hand drew an arc. The black light appeared right as the Bloodswine Tiger passed by and a cold light flashed through the Bloodswine Tiger's eyes as it sputtered out blood.

!

The Bloodswine Tiger crashed severely at the large tree behind him. The giant tree toppled down and the ground shook. The Bloodswine Tiger seemed to cry out in berserk. Its pair of blood red eyes was stabbed by Mu Chen and it became blind.

"Roar!"

The pain almost made the Bloodswine Tiger become crazy. It used the smell in the air in order to switch directions and charge recklessly at Mu Chen. The mane that covered its body was like barbed wire as it stood up. It was like a steel fortress.

However, Mu Chen seemed to be quite calm as he faced the berserk Bloodswine Tiger. He took a step that allowed the Bloodswine Tiger to charge recklessly by his side. Every time the Bloodswine Tiger rushed passed his body, the razor sharp dagger would bring fresh and hot blood.

The hot blood slowly rolled down the dagger. In the end, the Bloodswine Tiger let out a shrill howl and its body stopped moving.

Mu Chen drew the dagger calmly and cut the enormous

Bloodswine Tiger apart. That experienced approach would shock even the Adventurers, who hunted Spiritual Beasts for a living. It wasn't something that a boy at this age should possess.

After he dealt with the Bloodswine Tiger, Mu Chen looked towards Tang Qian'Er. At this moment, the girl was in a slightly difficult position. Although there were many blood trails on the Bloodswine Tiger's body, it was basically uninjured for a Bloodswine Tiger with thick skin.

Roar!

Just at this moment, the Bloodswine Tiger that was entangled by Tang Qian'Er might have heard the cries of its dying companion. Its blood red eyes instantly flushed red and its originally huge body actually swelled up.

"It went in a frenzy?" Mu Chen saw this and lifted his eyebrow.

"Ah."

Tang Qian'Er issued out a surprised cry. When the short sword cut onto the Bloodswine Tiger's body, an impact shocked her instead and the sword flew away. She immediately retreated a few steps and felt a shadow covering her. A smell of blood charged towards her. The Bloodswine Tiger jumped up high into the sky and firmly squashed down like a little mountain.

Facing the shadow coming down, Tang Qian'Er's face became pale and her body felt as if it couldn't move.

Shuaaa.

A figure suddenly appeared from the side. Its arm wrapped around her slender waist and a dark black Spiritual Energy expanded through the dagger in his hand. Like a dark light, it cut across the belly of the Bloodswine Tiger from below.

Smash.

Fresh blood fell down. However, this also includes smelly

intestines and internal organs.

Mu Chen held onto Tang Qian'Er as they rolled on the ground in order to avoid the heavy press from the Bloodswine Tiger. The Bloodswine Tiger struggled for a moment, before it stopped moving. It was obvious that it has lost its life.

Whew.

When Mu Chen noticed that they successfully got rid of the two Bloodswine Tiger, he let out a light breathe out. Then, he felt the girl's struggles within his arm and he released her as he smiled. He said: "Are you alright?"

Tang Qian'Er shook her head as her face was flushed red. She looked at the two dead Bloodswine Tiger and amazement appeared within her beautiful eyes. She understood that it was basically all Mu Chen's credit for taking out these two dead Bloodswine Tiger this swiftly.

"Why are you so amazing? I fought against the Bloodswine Tiger for so long, yet I failed to kill it." Tang Qian'Er could not help saying this out.

"It's best to directly aim at its vital parts. You'll get used to it after you kill a few more." Mu Chen smiled before he went up to the two Bloodswine Tiger. His dagger cut across its head and a red light flew out. Two fist-size clumps of light slowly ascended. Inside the clump of light, you could vaguely see a miniature Bloodswine Tiger and a faint violent Spiritual Energy fluctuation emitted from it.

This is the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence.

Mu Chen recovered the two Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence and threw it towards Tang Qian'Er. The latter caught it in curiosity. She looked at it back and forth as if she was quite satisfied with their first reward in their life.

Mu Chen could not help but laugh as he witnessed this scene. He

wiped off the blood from his dagger and stared further into the deeper areas. His tongue licked his lips gently. It seems that the earlier bloody events reawakened his suppressed desire.

“Let’s go. This is only the beginning…”

Mu Chen tilted his head as he spoke to Tang Qian’Er. Then, he took large strides again. This level of Spiritual Beast still lacks a bit of challenge…

Chapter 27 – Plunder

In the forest covered with leaves, the ground suddenly trembled. A violent cry spread outwards. When looking in the direction of the cry, a giant yellow bear, which was roughly a few meters tall, was currently swinging its hammer-like palms around. It recklessly smacked at the petite body in front of it in anger.

Facing against the slap from the giant bear, the petite body retreated backwards. Spiritual Energy wrapped around the short sword in her hand. Like a snake bursting out a hole, a red blood trace appeared across the giant bear's white fur.

The pain coming from its chest made the giant bear a little mad. The giant palm was filled with yellow Spiritual Energy. Every time the slap comes down, it would leave deep imprints on the ground. If a single slap were to hit the petite body, it would definitely be enough to cause a severe injury.

Fortunately, the petite body was extremely agile. It constantly dodged and the dagger would leave bloodstains in front of the bear's chest whenever the bear slipped up.

The large and small figures continued to fight with each other. After approximately ten minutes, the giant bear finally could not endure this kind of fight and its enormous body crashed down to the ground like a boulder.

The beautiful girl finally saw that the bear could not endure it and died. She also let out a sigh of relief and wiped the cold sweat on her forehead with her hand. She turned her head away while panting heavily. Under a nearby tree, a boy with a long body smiled at he looked at this scene.

"Not bad."

Mu Chen walked forward and stared at the Mountain Bear's body. Then, he pointed at the white mark filled with bloodstains

and said: “However, your attacks are still not decisive enough. That is your weakness. As long as you find a flaw, you should completely kill it. The method you used earlier wasted too much effort. If the Mountain Bear was slightly stronger, perhaps it would be able to mentally exhaust you.

Tang Qian’Er glanced at the location where another Mountain Bear was killed. However, there was only a single bloody hole at the white mark on the Mountain Bear’s chest. The location of the bloody hole was extremely precise. It directly pierced through the Mountain Bear’s heart and it was obvious that the Mountain Bear died in one attack.

This Mountain Bear was the results of Mu Chen’s battle. Tang Qian’Er previously saw the sharp blow. It was fierce, accurate and without any hesitation…The calmness and horrifying Mu Chen showed when he killed was many times more natural than her.

“You’re an insane person, how could I compare with you!” Tang Qian’Er pouted her lips. Although she had never really killed any Spiritual Beasts, she could still feel that Mu Chen’s actions weren’t any inferior to the Adventurers, who would always be muddled in between life and death. How could she compare to him?

However, she still had a bit of admiration in her heart even when she said that. Under Mu Chen’s guidance, she had begun to get rid of the initial fear that she felt along the way. She even had the ability to kill a Low Rank Spiritual Beast at the Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase by herself. As for Mu Chen, his handsome face had maintained a quiet and gentle smile. This was enough to frighten her. In his eyes, it was an insignificant act.

Tang Qian’Er’s gaze wandered around and she stared at the boy, who was retrieving the Mountain Bear’s Soul Essence. A shattered point of light landed on his body. His profile had a serious expression and possesses an quality that ordinary youths would not possess. This made her blush slightly.

“Today’s rewards aren’t that bad. Up until now, we have already collected 8 Low Rank Spiritual Beasts’ Soul Essences.” Mu Chen collected the Mountain Bear’s Soul Essence and stood up as he directed a smile towards Tang Qian’Er.

When she heard this excellent result, Tang Qian’Er’s face was also smiling. She was quite satisfied with the harvest today.

“Let’s go. We should continue. The result is only a trivial matter, we should take advantage of this opportunity to improve ourselves.” Mu smiled. But just when he was about to venture in deeper, he suddenly frowned and stared off to the right.

“What is it?” Seeing this, Tang Qian’Er asked.

“There was a movement over there. Let’s go check it out.” Mu Chen thought for a moment before he beckoned his hand towards Tang Qian’Er. His pace accelerated and he headed in that direction. When Tang Qian’Er noticed this, she hurried and followed.

In the dense forest, dozens of Northern Spiritual Academy students were grouped up together. At this moment, they were looking in front with a pale expression. At that location, there were a dozen figures leaning lazily at the tree trunk. The gazes that stared at the students had a bit of ridicule within them.

Although the behavior of the figures seemed quite lazy, they still gave off a highly trained feeling. Their eyes were bright and sharp. A bloody smell even emitted from their body.

It was actually an Adventurer’s Team.

“What are you trying to do?!”

In front of the Northern Spiritual Academy students, there were a few familiar figures there. Mo Ling, Tan Qingshan, Jiang Li and Teng Yong were all there. However, the color of their faces was the same as the other Northern Spiritual Academy students. They furiously stared in fear at the Adventurers in front of them.

After all, they were still young youths. They would feel fear from

the fierce Spiritual Beasts and the Adventurers in front of them are all individuals whose blade would often taste blood. The viciousness that they would occasionally reveal was enough to make them shudder.

“You are all a group of brats that haven’t grown any hair yet…”

A young man dressed in leather armor smiled as he stared at the Northern Spiritual Academy students. He said lazily: “Didn’t I say it earlier? Hand over the Soul Essences that you possess.”

“You want to rob us!” A boy roared out in anger.

“That’s correct!” The young man laughed. Sounds of laughter appeared from his comrades behind him. It seems that they treated this as some sort of entertainment.

“We are students from the Northern Spiritual Academy. Our two teachers are here and they possess Spirit Stage strength! A student tried to use Teacher Mo and Teacher Xi and attempted to shock the Adventurer Team in front of them.

“I know that you are students from the Northern Spiritual Academy, you came here for training right? Then didn’t your teacher tell you that being robbed is also a type of training?” The young man curled his lips and said: “As long as we do not kill you, your teachers won’t care about it.”

“So…Hand them over. Don’t make me take action since I am quite brutal.” The young man grinned and his white beast-like teeth made others feel a chill.

“You!”

Mo Ling could not endure holding back his anger and clenched his hands tightly.

“You want to take action and test it out? You are also at the level of Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase. The same as me. Why don’t we see who is more powerful?” The young man glanced at Mo Ling, but his smile was slightly bloodthirsty.

When Mo Ling noticed the young man's gaze as if he was staring at a prey, he felt a faint chill in his heart. Although they were both at the Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase, the latter's imposing manner wasn't something that he could compare with. Also, the comrades behind him weren't any weaker than him.

Mo Ling's eyes flashed. In the end, he slowly released his clenched hands. With a painful laugh, he helplessly shook his head towards Tan Qingshan, Jiang Li and the others.

Tan Qingshan also sighed. They also knew that they weren't at the same level as the Adventurer Team in front of them. They could only admit that they were unlucky and lose their wealth in order to avert the trouble in front of them.

"Now, that's a good child."

When the young man noticed that Mo Ling and the others gave up their resistance, he laughed in satisfaction. Yet the corner of his lips was a bit mocking, this is the Northern Spiritual Academy's students? It really is disappointing.

"What are you doing?"

Just when Mo Ling and the others were about to toss over the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence that they managed to obtain, a puzzled voice rang out from behind them. They instantly turned their head over and saw Mu Chen and Tang Qian'Er watching them nearby.

"Mu Chen?"

When Mo Ling and the others saw Mu Chen, they reflexively became joyful. Then, they immediately thought about something and had a gaze that told him to quickly leave.

"What is it?" Mu Chen seemed to ignore their gazes and smiled as he brought Tang Qian'Er over.

"Shhh, so there's another fat prey."

The young man smiled at Mu Chen and then his gaze suddenly landed on Tang Qian'Er beside him. His eyes instantly lit up and he whistled. He said humorously: "And also a beauty!"

Tang Qian'Er glared angrily at the young man, but the lovely angry expression made the young man fell into a trance slightly.

When Mo Ling noticed the two of them walking over, he shook his head helplessly. Then, he began to explain the situation.

"Robbery? You're quite unlucky." When Mu Chen heard this, he could not help but smile as he spoke.

"Aren't you the same now?" Jiang Li and the others rolled back their eyes. How can this guy still laugh in this kind of situation?

"Oi, the boy over there. Since you also came, you should hand over some of your Spiritual Beast's Soul Essences. Then, hand over the beauty. After all, we shouldn't show favoritism." The young man beckoned as he laughed.

"You want mine as well?" Mu Chen frowned as he said.

"Who told you to be so unlucky and walked over here. You brats sure are stupid. Although you are quite talented, you guys aren't good enough if we were to fight." The young man said helplessly.

"I only have one Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence, I'll give you that."

Mu Chen rubbed his head and pulled out a Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence from his arms. Then, he walked towards the young man.

"Are you deaf? I told you to bring that beauty over as well. You're quite an annoying boy." The young man frowned and chattered on endlessly.

As he was chattering, Mu Chen had already arrived in front of him. He handed the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence over.

The young man stretched out his hand to grab the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence. His other hand seemed to slap towards Mu

Chen's head in dissatisfaction. However, before he touched the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence, the boy's black eyes, which originally contained a smile, instantly turned cold.

He turned his palm up right and a sharp black light flashed. It created an arc as it fiercely and cunningly slashed across the young man's palm. Fresh blood suddenly splattered out.

This scene happened in a split second. Hardly anyone could react to it. A few of the comrades behind the young man stared at the splattering blood in a daze.

In front of many stunned gazes, the handsome boy suddenly smiled.

"Sorry, I suddenly don't feel like giving it to you."

Chapter 28 – Cooperation

In the dense forest, the young man stared in a daze at his hands filled with blood. After a moment, pain surged from his palms and he recovered from the shock. His originally smiling face suddenly turned a bit dark.

Behind Mu Chen, Mo Ling and the others were dumbfounded as they stared at this scene. They never imagined that Mu Chen would suddenly launch an attack and that he would be so ruthless when he did it.

“Boy, are you seeking death?”

The young man’s body trembled. His sullen face was a bit grim.

Mu Chen glanced at him and said: “As an experienced Adventurer, you don’t understand the principle of “You reap what you sow”? You’ve never seen someone fail miserably at such a easy task?

“Ohoho, damn brat.”

After hearing that remark, the young man smiled angrily. His companions behind him wanted to come forward, but were stopped by his signal. He casually tore his clothes in order to wrap his bleeding hand as he stared coldly at Mu Chen and said: “You should know what will happen next right?”

“We’ll fight?” Mu Chen laughed as he spoke.

“To be honest, I wasn’t too angry when you suddenly attacked me. Instead, I admire your courage. If a person doesn’t have any guts, he would still be a trash no matter how talented he is. You are different from those kids.”

The young man stared at Mu Chen and said: “I’m Lin Zhong. Although I admire you, that is a different matter. Right now, I’ll give you a chance. If you are able to defeat me, you and your comrades can leave, I will not care about that slash you fired at me

either. However, if you lose, you'll leave a finger behind as punishment."

"Of course, you don't have to accept. However, you and your companions would probably suffer pain on their flesh. We won't kill you, but believe me, I have plenty of ways to make you feel so much pain that you'll rather die."

"Are there any other choices?" Mu Chen shrugged and said.

"What do you think?" Lin Zhong sneered.

"If that's the case, then let's...fight!"

Just when these words exited Mu Chen's mouth, his eyes narrowed and he dashed fiercely forward. Two of his fingers remained straight and a dark black Spiritual Energy wrapped around his fingertips. It brought out a extremely fierce wind as it violently stabbed towards Lin Zhong's throat.

"You still want more?!" However, Lin Zhong wasn't like the Northern Spiritual Academy's students, who had little combat experience. Moreover, he had already suffered earlier, so he remained alert against Mu Chen. Therefore, he did not panic when Mu Chen took action. Although he was slightly shocked, he still raised his arm as the Spiritual Energy surged and protected his throat.

Mu Chen's two fingers stabbed into Lin Zhong's arm. However, it was like hitting steel and his fingers felt slightly numbed. Lin Zhong's strength wasn't bad, it was evident that he had reached the limits of the Spiritual Movement Stage. He would be able to reach the Spiritual Rotation Stage if he managed to take one more step.

This thought flashed through Mu Chen's mind, but he did not slow down at all. His fingertips immediately retracted and it formed into a fist. The Spiritual Energy wrapped around his fist and he fiercely smashed towards Lin Zhong's temple.

Bang!

Lin Zhong also fire out a fist and it collided against Mu Chen's fist. The two fists bombarded each other and a wave of Spiritual Energy spread out. It blew the leaves on the ground into the air.

When the two fists collided, Mu Chen took a few steps backwards due to the impact. However, Lin Zhong also retreated one step. A hint of surprise appeared within his eyes. When they connected with each other, he could feel the overbearing force from the dark black Spiritual Energy. It seems that the boy in front of him trained in a extraordinary Spiritual Art.

"Damn, brat!"

Lin Zhong let out a cry and darted forward. His dense Spiritual Energy erupted out and his palms drew an arc through the air as if it was a blade. It relentlessly headed towards Mu Chen's vital points.

In the rear, Tang Qian'Er, Mo Ling and the others saw such a brutal offensive coming from Lin Zhong and were covered with cold sweat. These guys were definitely desperate criminals.

However, Mu Chen did not panic while facing against Lin Zhong's fierce attack. He moved slightly and his black eyes stared at the offensive from Lin Zhong. He would occasionally change his fists to palms and made contact with Lin Zhong's fists. But once it touched, he would retreat back and Lin Zhong was not able to do anything to him.

Behind Lin Zhong, his companions originally had a playful attitude as they watched the entertainment. However, the color of their faces became more and more serious. They exchanged gazes with each other and were quite surprised.

"That boy is pretty good. Lin Zhong actually can't do anything to him even when he is only at the Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase."

In front of the crowd, a burly man watched as the two individuals fight. His originally unfocused gaze became serious. Shortly after, he muttered slowly: “He is quite an amazing boy, he saw through all Lin Zhong’s attacks. Every time he attacks, it is the instant when Lin Zhong became exhausted. It seems like he is retreating step by step, but Lin Zhong would probably be the one that is in trouble.”

What?”

The Adventurers were surprised. This boy could actually see through Lin Zhong’s offensive? What kind of vision is that? Lin Zhong isn’t like those Academy’s kids!

“Captain, could you have seen wrong?” A person asked in surprise.

The burly man glanced at them and said: “If that boy was also at the Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase, none of you will be his opponent. When have the Northern Spiritual Academy students become this amazing?”

“That can’t be?” A few adventurers said in astonishment.

“Lin Zhong can’t bear it anymore.” The burly man let out a faint smile and said.

All of them heard this and quickly looked over. They only noticed Lin Zhong’s face was a little flushed and a silver light was flashing on his fist. A muffled thunder sound rang out.

“He is actually going to use Thunderstorm Fist? This is Lin Zhong’s trump card! It seems that he was forced back quite ruthlessly.”

“Boy, try receiving this move of mine!” Lin Zhong’s face reddened and the silver light on his fist became even more dazzling. A violent fluctuation emitted out from it.

Mu Chen stared at the silver light on Lin Zhong’s fist. His eyes turned slightly cold and he clenched his right hand tightly.

“Shuaaa!”

Lin Zhong’s body darted forward like an arrow. He fired off a punch and an air blast swept over. A rumbling thunder sound rang out deeply.

“Thunderstorm Fist!”

The violent punch carried an alarming amount of power as it directly headed to Mu Chen. The leaves flew up and it wrapped around Lin Zhong’s fist like a tornado. It viciously blasted towards Mu Chen.

This astonishing punch made Tang Qian’Er and the others nervous.

Mu Chen took a deep breath and a dark black light erupted from his palm as well. In the next instant, he took a step forward and fired off a punch wrapped in black light.

Limitless Death Seal!

The black light condensed at the surface of Mu Chen’s fist and turned into a black light seal. It also carried an domineering Spiritual Energy and it collided head on against Lin Zhong’s fist in front of many surprising eyes.

A deep sound resounded throughout the sky. Cracks appeared where they stood as the ground shook. That violent wave of air destroyed the surrounding leaves.

The faces of the two figures instantly turned slightly white. When the air blast exploded, the two of them staggered backwards due to the impact and nearly fell down on the ground.

In this head-on collision, they weren’t able to determine the victor!

The surrounding individuals were all stunned. The Adventurers were stunned because Lin Zhong’s powerful attack was not successful in defeating Mu Chen, while Tang Qian’Er and the

others were shocked since Mu Chen actually blocked such a fierce attack.

“You!”

Lin Zhong stabilized his body and his face constantly changed as he stared at Mu Chen. It was obvious that he could not accept this result. Behind him, his companions also stepped forward and stared unfriendly at Mu Chen.

When Mu Chen saw this, he let out a cold laugh. His two fingers clamped and a fiery red bead appeared between his fingers. An extremely violent fluctuation emitted from it.

“What? You want to outnumber me now?”

Lin Zhong’s companions also noticed the violent Spiritual Energy fluctuation coming from between Mu Chen’s fingers and their faces changed instantly: “Spirit Destruction Bead?”

They did not dare to take a step further and stared at Mu Chen in surprise. No wonder that boy was not afraid of them, he actually had this item in his hands. From the Spiritual Energy fluctuations coming from the Spirit Destruction Bead, even a Spiritual Rotation Stage powerhouse would be severely injured by it if they were careless.

The surrounding atmosphere instantly became tense. Tang Qian’Er, Mo Ling and the others hurried behind Mu Chen and stared at the Adventurers cautiously.

“Stop!”

A cry suddenly came from behind Lin Zhong and the others. The tall burly man slowly walked forward as he frowned: “What are you all doing? You may not be as good as others, but at least you’re not last. Are you planning to disgrace the Thunderstorm Team’s face?”

A few Adventurers smiled embarrassedly.

Then, the tall burly man turned towards Mu Chen and said as he smiled: “Little Brother, you are quite amazing. Let’s settle today’s matter like this. If we offended any of your companions, we hope that you would forgive us.”

“You’re welcome.”

Mu Chen smiled and his fingers flashed as he pocketed the Spirit Destruction Bead. He could feel that the burly man loosened up when he pocketed the Spirit Destruction Bead. It was obvious that he was somewhat fearful of the Spirit Destruction Bead.

“Boy, you’re quite capable.” Lin Zhong’s face finally returned back to normal. He stared at Mu Chen and said as he curled his lips.

Mu Chen also smiled and said: “Since everything is alright now, then we’ll say our goodbyes now.”

After he said this, he was prepared to bring the crowd to leave. These Adventurers weren’t in the same group as them. It was better for them to leave as soon as possible.

“Wait a minute!”

When the burly man saw this, he anxiously took a few steps forward and cried out.

Mu Chen stared at him vigilantly. His hands slowly entered his sleeves and prepared to pull out the Spirit Destruction Bead again. He said: “Is there something else?”

The burly man noticed Mu Chen’s vigilant eyes and let out a bitter laugh. He hesitated for a moment and said: “Little Brother, I want to cooperate with you for a bit. I wonder if you are interested?”

“Cooperate?”

When Mu Chen heard these words, he raised up eyebrow slightly.

Chapter 29 – Jaded Essence Tree

"Cooperate?"

Mu Chen was slightly shocked as he stared at the burly man in front of him. The latter had a upright face with thick eyebrows and looked a bit rugged. However, the thing that surprised Mu Chen the most was the Spiritual Energy fluctuation emitting from his body. It was evident that he had already advanced to the Spiritual Rotation Stage.

The strength of this Adventurer's Team was acceptable.

"Ohoho, Little Brother, I am the Captain of the Thunderstorm Team, Lei Cheng." The burly man stretched out his hand and said as he smiled.

"Northern Spiritual Academy's student, Mu Chen."

Mu Chen chuckled as he shook hands with him. Then, he retracted his hand without changing expressions. Lei Cheng's hands were quite rough and they were many blade callus. It seems that this person specializes in blades.

"I am only an ordinary student in the Northern Spiritual Academy. I probably won't be able to help you out. Let's forget about cooperating." Mu Chen shook his head. Although he did not know the specifics about the cooperation that Lei Cheng was talking about, he knew that these Adventurer Teams were quite crooked. They had many grudges and it would be troublesome if they suddenly got involved in it.

Seeing Mu Chen refuse, Lei Cheng stared at the surroundings and whispered: "Little Brother Mu Chen, to be honest, I want to cooperate with you because I saw the Spirit Destruction Bead in your hands."

"We, the Thunderstorm Team, were searching in a valley within the Northern Spiritual Field two days ago. At that place, we

discovered something good."

Mu Chen's expression did not change. He did not say a word and only smiled slightly.

Seeing this, Lei Cheng knew that this boy wasn't someone simple. A boy should normally have a curious and arrogant attitude. However, Mu Chen did not show the slightest interest when he talked about this. It was clear that he controlled his heart well.

"In that valley, we discovered a mature "Jaded Essence Tree"." Lei Cheng knew that Mu Chen wasn't someone who would act without some incentive. He became silent for a moment before he said softly.

"Jaded Essence Tree?"

Mu Chen's eyes finally flashed slightly. He stared at Lei Cheng and said: "It's matured? Did it bear any Jaded Essence Fruit?"

Jaded Essence Tree. It is a rare natural treasure. The tree itself did not hold much appeal to humans, but the Jaded Essence Fruit that comes from the Jaded Essence Tree is filled with gentle Spiritual Energy. It is extremely beneficial to practitioners below the Spirit Stage.

Right now, Mu Chen was trying to form the second Limitless Death Seal. However, his Spiritual Energy was still too weak. If he doesn't have enough Spiritual Energy, he must borrow the power of a foreign object to do it. And this Jaded Essence Fruit was the solution to his urgent problem.

"Although we did not approach it closely, we still observed it for a bit. The Jaded Essence Tree is reasonably mature." Lei Cheng nodded his head as he spoke.

"Is there a Spiritual Beast protecting it?" Mu Chen asked.

"It is because of those rascals..." Lei Cheng let out a bitter laugh and said: "Inside that valley, there are at least 100 Conflagration

Apes. And the most trouble thing is that there is also a Conflagration Ape King, which reached the Middle Rank Spiritual Beast level. Its strength is approximately at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Middle Phase. It is even slightly stronger than me."

"100 Conflagration Ape? 1 Conflagration Ape King?"

Mu Chen was startled. Although the Conflagration Apes were only Low Rank Spiritual Beasts, a few of the matured ones would reach the level of a Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase. With such numbers gathered together, it would not be easily to deal with it. And there is even a Conflagration Ape King...

"The Conflagration Ape King's strength isn't the most difficult part to handle, but rather it is the fact that it can command the other Conflagration Apes." Mu Chen said softly. Although there were a lot of Conflagration Apes, they were still Spiritual Beasts without much wisdom. It would be easy to deal with once they were in a state of disunity. However, if they have the commands from the Conflagration Ape King, it was a different story. The Conflagration Ape King has already started to have a bit of wisdom. It might not be as cunning as humans yet, but the Thunderstorm Team would probably be destroyed if it commanded the hundred Conflagration Apes to assault them together.

Lei Cheng looked in surprise at Mu Chen. It was obvious that he did not imagine that this seemingly young boy would know as much as them, hunting veterans, about the Spiritual Beasts.

"Yes. However, you don't have to worry about this. We have a method that could hypnotize a few of the Conflagration Ape. The one that we have to deal with is the Conflagration Ape King. Thus, we hope to have this Little Brother cooperate with us and you will use the Spirit Destruction Bead to kill the Conflagration Ape King when you have the opportunity to do so."

"Although my Spirit Destruction Bead can gravely injure a

Middle Rank Spiritual Beast, it would probably be quite difficult to kill it." Mu Chen pondered for a moment before he spoke.

"It's fine. As long as you are able to severely injure the Conflagration Ape King, the chances of us winning will increase significantly." Lei Cheng let out a confident smile. After all, he was at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase. He might not be able to defeat a Conflagration Ape King when it was at its strongest, but if it's gravely injured, he should be able to do so.

"Since it's like this..."

Mu Chen smiled slightly. His smile was like a cunning fox and he said: "Then, let's talk about the payment shall we? You should know, I would have to invest at least a Spirit Destruction Bead in order for the matter to work. The Spirit Destruction Bead's price isn't cheap. Sometimes, you won't be able to obtain it even if you have money."

Lei Cheng let out a bitter laugh. He did not treat Mu Chen as a boy anymore. Therefore, he did not attempt to deceive him and said: "Little Brother, make your offer. If it is appropriate, I will naturally accept it."

Mu Chen thought for a moment before he said: "I want 30% of the Jaded Essence Fruits on the Jaded Essence Tree. This price is quite reasonable. I know that the Thunderstorm Team would be the main force, so that is why I gave the majority of it to you."

"You're quite black-hearted." Lei Cheng grinned. However, he thought for a moment and still nodded. This price wasn't unacceptable. After all, they would obtain the bulk of it.

"Then let's do it."

"I will also need a few companions, is that okay?" Mu Chen smiled as he said. Although they only exchanged talks for a while, Lei Cheng gave him a pretty good feeling. However, he should always stay on his guard. After all, there weren't much insurance if

he went by himself.

“That’s fine. However, you should know the strength of the Conflagration Ape. If they do not have the ability to protect themselves, it would be troublesome if they went.” Lei Cheng said.

Mu Chen nodded his head. Then, he turned around. Although Tang Qian’Er Mo Ling and the others did not know what Mu Chen and Lei Cheng was discussing about, it seems that they had a friendly atmosphere between them. It was great that they did not fight.

“Next up, there will be quite a bit of danger. However, it will also bring quite the benefits. I will team up with the Thunderstorm Team for a task. If you are interested, you can follow me. The payment will definitely be satisfying. Of course, there are two conditions. First, you must listen to my commands and second, you must reach the Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase. Is there anyone that wishes to come?” Mu Chen stared at Mo Ling and the others and spoke.

Mo Ling and the others were stunned. Mu Chen would actually cooperate with these people?

“I’ll go.” Tang Qian’Er was the first to raise her slender hands and laughed as she spoke.

“I’ll also come with you.” Mo Ling thought for a moment. In the end, he still nodded. He was at the level of the Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase and he completely met the conditions. He understood Mu Chen’s vision. If he said that the rewards would be quite satisfying, then it should be quite excellent.

Tan Qingshan was a bit regretful, but it couldn’t be helped. His strength was only at the Spiritual Movement Stage Initial Phase. He would only be a bother if he headed there.

Jiang Li and Teng Yong looked at each other. They hesitated for a moment before they gritted their teeth and said: “We’ll come as

well.”

Shortly after, another three boys with Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase strength also participated. With this, Mu Chen’s side had 8 people. This lineup was pretty good. If anything were to occur, there will be room for maneuver.

“Qingshan, you should bring the others back to the camp. Also, please inform Teacher Mo that we followed the Thunderstorm Team to do a task. There is no need for him to worry.” Mu Chen turned over to look at Tan Qingshan again and said with a smile. His voice was quite loud. Therefore, Lei Cheng and his team were able to hear it clearly.

“This boy is even more experienced than us...When did such a student come out from the Northern Spiritual Academy?”

Lei Cheng shook his head. Mu Chen’s earlier words were obviously said to them. If they dared to do anything to them, then those Spirit Stage powerhouses wouldn’t give them the chance to escape the Northern Spiritual Field.

Tan QIngshan nodded. He saw Mu Chen waved and he did not stay at this place any longer. He quickly left together with the other students.

“We should also leave now.” Mu Chen turned around and stared at Lei Cheng as he spoke.

“Yes, let’s go.”

Lei Cheng nodded. He made a gesture towards the Thunderstorm Team and began to lead the way. A group of people quickly dove into the dense forest and vanished swiftly.

As they were on their way, Mu Chen told the matter about the “Jaded Essence Tree” to Tang Qian’Er, Mo Ling and the others. When they heard the three words “Jaded Essence Fruit”, their eyes clearly shined. It was evident that they knew just how beneficial the Essence Fruit would be to them.

“Hehe, it’s great that Mu Chen is quite honorable. He did not forget about us for such an excellent matter.” Mo Ling said in excitement.

Beside him, Jiang Li and Teng Yong’s faces were slightly red. Their attitude towards Mu Chen weren’t exactly good before. Yet, they owe such a favor to him. Therefore, they felt quite unnatural right now.

“You think that I brought you here to pick some for free? It is important to listen to my commands then. If something happens, we might lose our lives.” Mu Chen gently smiled as he spoke.

“Relax, we will definitely listen to you!” Mo Ling laughed. Even Jiang Li and Teng Yong nodded their heads.

When Mu Chen noticed this, he also smiled. Then, he focused on heading there.

The group of people crossed through a thick forest. Along the way, they met a few Spiritual Beasts blocking them. However, these Low Rank Spiritual Beasts were completely wiped out by the Thunderstorm Team before Mu Chen and the others could attack them. This smooth and clean method of killing made Mo Ling and the others shocked. They were able to feel the difference between the two sides.

They rapidly moved and after half an hour, the traces of human became exceedingly little. Beast roars would occasionally sounded out. When they got to this place, even the Thunderstorm Team became cautious.

A group of a dozen or so people darted through the forest again. The view in front of them suddenly widened up. A stream followed through the shattered rocks on the ground. At the opposite of that, there was a little valley. Sharp ape cries could be heard from inside the valley.

When they saw the valley, Lei Cheng’s pace finally stopped. He

turned his head around to Mu Chen and nodded. This allows Mu Chen to understand that they have reached their destination.

The Jaded Essence Tree is in this valley.

Chapter 30 – Hunting Apes in Valley

The valley in front of them was quite narrow. At the entrance of the valley, dense tree branches extended from both sides. Even stones were piled up as if it was trying to conceal this valley. The Thunderstorm Team must have wasted a lot of effort in order to discover this location.

“There is quite the amount of Conflagration Apes inside.”

Mu Chen stood at a location slightly away from the entrance. He gently sniffed a bit and smelled a thick, foul smell. It was evident that there could only be more Conflagration Apes than what Lei Cheng had said, but not any less.

“Let’s begin our preparations.”

Lei Cheng gestured with his hand. Lin Zhong and a few other companions swiftly found some firewood from the surroundings and ignited them as they piled it outside of the valley.

“All of you should cover your nose and mouth. You should try to hold your breath.”

Lei Cheng pulled out a couple of grey pills from his arms and a rich fragrance emitted out. It made others feel slightly drowsy when they smelt a bit of it.

Beside him, Lin Zhong and the others pulled out torn rags and made them wet in the stream. Then, they distributed them to everyone.

Seeing that everybody was ready, Lei Cheng threw the pills into the fire. A rich fragrance instantly spread out.

“Everybody should utilize our Spiritual Energy and push this smoke into the valley!”

Lei Cheng let out a soft cry and was first to take action. His cuffs moved and a powerful Spiritual Energy burst out. It brought forth

a fierce wind and swept the smoke into the valley.

Mu Chen and the others also copied him. Fierce winds were created by the Spiritual Energy and the smoke quickly enshrouded the valley. Sounds of excitement from the apes gradually began to fade.

Lei Cheng stared at the valley. After a short moment, he tilted his head to the side as he listened to the movements within the valley. Only then did he let out a sigh of relief. He gestured with his hand and said: “Let’s go, be careful everyone!”

“Let’s go!”

When they heard these words, everybody nodded their heads in excitement. Then, they directly went through the entrance and charged into the valley.

When Mu Chen and the others charged into the valley, the valley was already somewhat foggy. When they looked over, they could see many giant red apes lying down on the ground. However, these Conflagration Apes were almost all in a deep sleep. It was evident that Lei Cheng’s hypnotic drug was extremely effective.

“The Jaded Essence Tree is in the depths of the valley. We should hurry. This drowsiness will not last long.” Lei Cheng urged them as his speed accelerated again. He jumped over the Conflagration Apes and went straight into the depths of the valley.

Mu Chen also brought the others and followed. However, when they reach the depths of the valley, a low roar sounded out from the top of the cliff. Then, a bloody howl came down. An enormous Conflagration Ape pounced towards Tang Qian’Er, who was behind Mu Chen.

This sudden attack shocked Tang Qian’Er. She hurriedly swung her hand around and the short sword flew out as it was wrapped in Spiritual Energy. However, this still left a shallow bloodstain on the Conflagration Ape’s body.

Although it did not cause much damage to the Conflagration Ape, the short sword was able to stop it for a moment. At the same time, Mu Chen's feet touched the ground and he charged over like a nimble money. His hand gripped onto a sharp dagger that fell down from his sleeves. As the dark black Spiritual Energy wrapped around the dagger, he swiftly slashed across the Conflagration Ape's eyes.

Fresh blood spattered out and the Conflagration Ape let out a shrill cry. However, just when the cry came out, the dagger flashed as it stabbed directly into its throat and stopped the cry.

The Conflagration Ape's huge body fell down heavily onto the ground. It crushed the rocks into pieces. At the same time, Mu Chen's body landed on the side. He wiped the blood off his dagger and asked Tang Qian'Er, who was shaken: "Are you alright?"

"I'm fine." Tang Qian'Er shook her head. At the side, Mo Ling and the others were completely stunned. It was evident that they have not recovered from the fact that Mu Chen actually killed a Conflagration Ape this smoothly.

Of course, it wasn't only them. Even the people from the Thunderstorm Team were startled. This Mu Chen had a quick reaction and attacked effectively...

"Amazing, this Conflagration Ape is probably at the level of Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase." Lei Cheng gave a thumbs up to Mu Chen and smiled as he said.

"Its speed has dropped due to the smoke. Otherwise, it wouldn't be that easy for me to take care of it." Mu Chen shook his head. Although this Conflagration Ape was able to endure through the drowsiness from the smoke, it was still affected.

"The effects of the Bewitching Drug are limited. A Conflagration Ape could resist it if it reached the Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase. Inside this valley, there are probably no more than 20 Conflagration Apes with this strength. However, even if they did

not fall asleep, they should still have been weakened. It shouldn't be hard to deal with them."

Lei Cheng nodded. Then, he suddenly lowered his body and stared off into the distance. His expression became serious and said: "Our trouble is that guy over there."

Mu Chen's eyes also narrowed as he looked into the distance. At the end of the valley, the smoke has already faded a lot. A giant fiery red figure that was even bigger than a Conflagration Ape was over there.

The giant figure's body was like a fire. Its body glowed as if it was covered by a layer of red armor. Although it was half-sitting on the ground, an ominous aura spread out from there. This violent Spiritual Energy fluctuation far surpasses an ordinary Conflagration Ape.

This was obvious the boss of the valley, the Conflagration Ape King.

Mu Chen felt the oppression of Spiritual Energy coming from there. His eyes became a bit more serious. At the side, Mo Ling and the others had a hint of fear in their eyes. That is a Middle Rank Spiritual Beast.

Mu Chen stared at the Conflagration Ape King for a moment. Then, he turned and stared at the rear of that giant ape. Near the mountain walls, there was a crack that was approximately 20 feet. A tiny tree approximately 10 feet wide extended out from the crack.

The body of this tiny tree seemed like it was made from jade. On this tree, an emerald color was revealed among the green leaves. It was a round fruit. Even from this distance, you would still be able to smell the fragrance that it emits. It was extremely refreshing.

"It really is the Jaded Essence Tree!"

Mu Chen stared at the little tree. A hint of joy flashed through his

eyes. From the looks of it, the Jaded Essence Tree was obviously mature. It seems that there would be no less than 30 Jaded Essence Fruits. If this cooperation succeeds, it would be quite moving.

“Little Brother, I will lead five team members to deal with the Conflagration Ape King. The other five members would deal with the awakened Conflagration Apes nearby with your companions. When that happens, you should wait for an opportunity to use the Spirit Destruction Bead and try to kill the Conflagration Ape King in one attack!” Lei Cheng observed for a moment and said in a low voice.

“Okay.”

Mu Chen nodded. He pondered for a moment and said: “If something unexpected occurs, I suggest that we should immediately retreat. If you are still greedy for the Jaded Essence Fruit, then I will bring my companions and leave. As for the ruined Spirit Destruction Bead, I’ll just consider it my loss. After all, our lives are more important than the Jaded Essence Fruit.

When Lei Cheng heard these words, he let out a bitter laugh. Then, he nodded. If it really became like that, then it could only be considered as bad luck.

“Let’s prepare.”

Lei Cheng waved his hand. Five members of the Thunderstorm Team including Lin Zhong had their Spiritual Energy rising up. Then, each of them carefully approached the Conflagration Ape King in the depths of the valley.

Although the valley still contained a faint mist, the Conflagration Ape King was not something that a common Conflagration Ape could compare. When Lei Cheng and the others was within 100 feet of it, it was aware of them. The blood red eyes stared at the crowd and viciousness appeared within its eyes. It was clear that it was outraged by the humans that dared to enter its territory.

An angry roar spread out from its ferocious jaws. The Conflagration Ape King extended its long arm and directly picked up a huge boulder. Then, it fiercely threw it over towards Lei Cheng. The sound of the winds breaking showed that it contained a great amount of power.

“Kill!”

Lei Cheng cried out and his figure dashed out. He gripped the blood red machete in a reverse grip as his Spiritual Energy stormed out. A sharp blade flash came out from the blade and instantly shattered the huge boulder. Lei Cheng’s speed did not slow down at all and he charged straight at the Conflagration Ape King. The rest of the Thunderstorm Team hurriedly followed.

Bang!

The instant that the two sides made contact with each other, a fierce battle broke out. Spiritual Energy gushed out and flashes of blades headed swiftly towards the Conflagration Ape King’s body.

While Lei Cheng and the others were tangled up with the Conflagration Ape King, Mo Ling and the others followed the other five members of the Thunderstorm Team and blocked the remaining awakened Conflagration Apes. They did not let them interfere with the battle inside.

Mu Chen stood at a place not far away and firmly fixed his eyes at the battle. A fiery red Spirit Destruction Bead was once again held tightly between his fingers and a violent Spiritual Energy emitted out from it constantly.

This Spirit Destruction Bead possesses the power to gravely injure Spiritual Rotation Stage powerhouses. However, there is only one. Therefore, he must seize the best opportunity or this mission would fail if it was wasted.

The situation with the Conflagration Ape King was quite tragic. The five members of the Thunderstorm Team used all their

strength and attacked. Although they left many wounds on the Conflagration Ape King's body, their hands were also covered with blood. It was obvious that they were injured in the backlash.

From the looks of it, if Lei Cheng did not directly block the majority of the attacks from the Conflagration Ape King, they would not be able to approach this big guy's body.

"Constricting Lightning Blade!"

After fighting a while, Lei Cheng also felt that his arms becoming numb and immediately shouted out.

"BOOM!"

As his cry appeared, Lin Zhong and the others suddenly stepped forward. A lightning flash appeared on their long blades. They used all their strength and fire off slashes. These five lightning lights flashed and grazed the Conflagration Ape King as it hacked onto the back of it.

The Conflagration Ape King's metal-like back actually split open through the combined attacks from them. Fresh blood oozed out from its back.

The pain coming from its back instantly made the Conflagration Ape King roar out in fury. Its arm fiercely extended out and a violent Spiritual Energy engulfed it. Lin Zhong and the others instantly flew backwards while spitting blood.

"Asshole, go to hell!"

Lei Cheng took a single step forward and let out a vicious howl. Spiritual Energy surged out and a ten feet long Spiritual Energy sword light actually appeared from the blade. He slashed angrily towards the Conflagration Ape King.

The Conflagration Ape King's speed was extremely fast. It felt the ferocious attack coming from Lei Cheng and crossed his arms together like a shield. It blocked the sharp blade forcibly and the sword light cut into its flesh. However, it did not cut its arms

apart.

“Mu Chen!” At this moment, Lei Cheng cried out.

The moment he cried out, Mu Chen, who was accumulating power for the side, had already darted out. He nimbly appeared behind the Conflagration Ape King and a dark black Spiritual Energy wrapped around his fingers. It inserted itself into the wound of the Conflagration Ape King like a sharp dagger.

Fresh blood shot out and Mu Chen instantly retreated. A violent Spiritual Energy suddenly came out from inside the Conflagration Ape King’s wounds.

When the Spiritual Energy appeared, a gigantic Spiritual Energy shockwave broke out. The back of the Conflagration Ape King exploded like a bomb. Its flesh scattered and the rocks on the ground were shattered due to the impact.

The Conflagration Ape King let out a maddening howl. However, blood continued to flow out of its back. It seems that a hole was blown out. It struggled for a few steps and finally crashed onto the ground.

Mu Chen landed on the ground. He was relieved as he stared at the Conflagration Ape King on the ground.

“We did it!”

When Lin Zhong and the others witnessed this scene, their eyes were filled with happiness. Even Lei Cheng had a relieved smile on his face.

“No, something’s wrong!”

However, the instant that they relaxed, Mu Chen’s face suddenly changed colors. This is because a red light emitted out from the Conflagration Ape King’s body.

“Be careful!” Lei Cheng also noticed this change and instantly tensed up.

The red light surrounded the Conflagration Ape King's body and the fresh blood on its back actually stopped flowing out. Afterwards, Lin Zhong and the others were shocked as they noticed the Conflagration Ape King rising up unsteadily and the fiery red hairs on its body actually grew a tiny bit.

The Conflagration Ape King roared to the sky. A faint emerald color flashed inside the red lights on its body. This light was the same color as the Jaded Essence Fruit.

As the Conflagration Ape King roared, its aura suddenly became many times stronger.

"Damn it, it actually made a break through at this moment!"

When Lei Cheng felt the growing aura from the Conflagration Ape King, the color on his face changed.

Mu Chen's face also became serious. It seems that this beast had eaten many Jaded Essence Fruit. Now, it is really troubling...

Chapter 31 – Rouse the Tiger to Eat the Wolf

Buzz.

The valley seemed to tremble all of a sudden. The Conflagration Ape King's enormous body seemed to becoming increasingly fierce. Its ugly face was filled with violence and it was obvious that it was extremely ferocious.

Mu Chen, Lei Cheng and the others became serious as they stared astonished at the Conflagration Ape King. Who would have thought that the Conflagration Ape King would actually make a breakthrough at this critical moment. From its aura, the Conflagration Ape King had probably reached the peak of the Middle Rank Spiritual Beast. It is equivalent to a powerhouse at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase!

Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase?

Mu Chen exchanged gazes with Lei Cheng. They secretly let out a bitter sound. It was extremely rare to meet such a event. Their luck was quite bad.

"Captain, what should we do?!" Lin Zhong and the others' faces were pale and they quickly asked.

Lei Cheng thought for a moment and gritted his teeth as he said: "The Conflagration Ape King is about to make its breakthrough. However, it is also seriously injured. Let's try once more. If we fail to get rid of it, we will immediately retreat!"

Lin Zhong and the others heard this and nodded. This was a surprising turn of event. Although they wanted the Jaded Essence Fruit, their lives were more important than that.

Mu Chen also made a gesture towards Tang Qian'Er and the others, who were far away. He signaled them to retreat if the situation turns out poorly.

When Mu Chen reminded Tang Qian'Er and the others, the

Conflagration Ape King suddenly issued out a furious roar. The violent eyes firmly fixed itself onto Mu Chen's body. It was obvious that it clearly remembered Mu Chen, who had injured it.

The Conflagration Ape King has an extremely vengeful heart. It was not his wisdom that made it view Mu Chen as a definite target to rip apart. Therefore, it attacked first and its huge ape arm picked up a massive boulder. It treated the boulder as a weapon as it smashed it towards Mu Chen.

When Mu Chen noticed this, his toes touched the ground and he jumped back agilely. He completely avoided the Conflagration Ape King's violent attack. With the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase strength, Mu Chen did not dare to let this big guy touch him at all. He was afraid that he would either be dead or gravely injured if he was touched.

Seeing that the Conflagration Ape King pounced towards Mu Chen, Lei Cheng hurried to help him. But what surprised them was that the Conflagration Ape King completely ignored their attacks and would only smash towards Mu Chen in berserk. It forced Mu Chen to be in a slightly helpless position.

Roar!

The Conflagration Ape King became furious when it noticed that Mu Chen avoided it swiftly. It suddenly let out a sharp howl, which resounded within the valley. Then, Lei Cheng and the others were horrified when they noticed that there were signs of awakening on the Conflagration Apes that they hypnotized.

This discovery made their faces turn pale. If the hundreds of Conflagration Apes wake up inside the valley, there were no chances of escaping today.

"Captain, all the Conflagration Apes would definitely wake up if the Conflagration Ape King continues to howl!" Lin Zhong and the others said in shock.

Mu Chen also noticed this situation. His face became more and more serious. His eyes flashed and he stared at the Jaded Essence Tree inside the crack of the mountain walls. He bit his teeth furiously and said: “Big Brother Lei Cheng, I’ll lure their Conflagration Ape King away, you guys should use your speed to take away the Jaded Essence Fruit!”

“What?”

Lei Cheng was surprised when he heard that. The Conflagration Ape King is at the level of Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase while Mu Chen was only at the Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase. It would be extremely dangerous if he were to lure it away by himself.

“There’s no time. The Conflagration Ape King is targeting me. You won’t be able to pull it away.”

As Mu Chen’s voice rang out, a dark black Spiritual Energy has already wrapped around his legs. His speed increased exponentially and he darted to the outside of the valley like an arrow. Behind him, the Conflagration Ape King did not hesitate at all and it chased after him as it howled.

Lei Cheng and the others were stunned as they watched Mu Chen luring away the Conflagration Ape King. In the end, Lei Cheng gritted his teeth and said: “Hurry, we have no time to lose. Lin Zhong, you should bring a group to stop the Conflagration Apes that are beginning to awaken. I’ll go get the Jaded Essence Fruit!”

“Yes!”

Lin Zhong and the others wiped the blood off their mouth. They quickly nodded and charged towards the Conflagration Apes that stumbled as they stood up.

Lei Cheng stared once again out of the valley. He could only let out a bitter laugh and pray that Mu Chen would be alright. Otherwise, the people from the Northern Spiritual Academy would

come find them and they would suffer.

…

Bang Bang!

Inside the forest, the earth trembled. A giant red shadow with a violent atmosphere charged around in berserk. Many trees on the way were completely destroyed by it. Yet it did not care about it all right now. Its blood red eyes were only focused on the nimble and tiny figure in front of it.

This commotion naturally attracted the attention of some Spiritual Beasts inside the forest. However, the Conflagration Ape King had already reached the peak of the Middle Rank Spiritual Beast. It is considered the top existence in the outskirts of the Northern Spiritual Field. Therefore, these Spiritual Beasts were shocked by its ominous pressure and did not dare to approach. They only stared as the human and beast headed into the depths.

“This damn beast, it really is tenacious!”

They fiercely ran for nearly ten minutes, yet Mu Chen discovered that the Conflagration Ape King showed no traces of giving up. He could not help but curse at it.

Swoosh!

As he cursed, a powerful wind suddenly blew behind him. He noticed that the Conflagration Ape King picked up a large tree and threw it at him fiercely. His body hurriedly jumped forward and he spun a few times on the ground. Only through this way was he able to avoid the giant tree.

When he was rolling across a cluster of weeds, he suddenly pulled out a batch of black grass and shoved it into his arms before bolting off again.

While he was running away, Mu Chen’s black eyes continuously flashed. He did not actively request to lure away the Conflagration Ape King because he wanted to show off his strength, rather it is

because he had experience in it. In the Spiritual Road, he would often meet with this kind of situation.

“I should reach the inner part of the Northern Spiritual Field soon. There should be Spiritual Beasts that could fight against this Conflagration Ape King. Since Spiritual Beasts have a powerful concept of territory, it would not let the Conflagration Ape King go that easily when they discovered it. When that happens, it would be a chance for me to escape from this guy.”

An idea flashed through Mu Chen’s mind. He forced all of his Spiritual Energy out from his body and circulated the Great Pagoda Art. Maybe it was because it was a situation of life and death, the Great Pagoda Art’s circulating speed became faster. Spiritual Energy continued to flow endlessly into his four limbs and energized him.

No matter how powerful the Great Pagoda Art was, he was still only in the Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase. His strength was too different compared to a Middle Rank Spiritual Beast, whose strength had reached Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase. Therefore, as the time passes on, Mu Chen gradually felt that he was getting weaker.

“Roar!”

Just when Mu Chen felt that the situation was getting pretty bad, a low howl came from a distant forest. It felt that this howl contained a sense of warning.

“It finally came!”

When Mu Chen heard this howl, joy filled his eyes. He accelerated and charged towards that distant forest. The moment he rushed into the forest, he quickly pulled out the black grass from within his arms and squeezed it using his palms. A repulsive black liquid flew out and covered his entire body.

After Mu Chen finished doing this, a black shadow appeared

from in front of him. Its eyes clearly showed that it did not notice the tiny human and it stared menacingly at the Conflagration Ape King, who was approaching.

“It’s a One-Horned Panther Dragon!”

Mu Chen looked at the figure and saw that it was like a black panther with a horn on its head. However, it was wearing an extremely hard carapace. It even had a steel thorn-like crocodile’s tail on its back. A surge of violent Spiritual Energy emitted from within its body.

Mu Chen glanced at this One-Horned Panther Dragon and frowned. This guy is also a Middle Rank Spiritual Beast, but its strength was only in the Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase. The difference between it and the Conflagration Ape King was too great.

Roar!

The One-Horned Panther Dragon kept a close eye at the approaching Conflagration Ape King and it attempted to frighten it to retreat by using a threatening roar.

But by this moment, the Conflagration Ape King’s eyes had already turned completely red. It would shred anything to pieces if they dared to stop it from ripping apart Mu Chen. Because it saw that the One-Horned Panther Dragon daring to stop him, he instantly issued out a fierce roar and his enormous body bounced up. Fiery red Spiritual Energy was formed under its beast palms and it fiercely smashed onto the One-Horned Panther Dragon’s waist like a meteorite.

BOOM!

The earth was blasted apart and left an enormous hole. The surrounding trees were completely swept apart and destroyed. Then, Mu Chen witnessed in shock as the One-Horned Panther Dragon let out a painful howl. Its entire waist was completely

destroyed by the Conflagration Ape King's brutal blow. Even the carapace was completely shattered.

"What a vicious beast."

Mu Chen could not help but breath in cold air when he noticed that the One-Horned Panther Dragon being killed in one attack from the Conflagration Ape King. This fellow sure can't take a hit, yet he was hoping that it could stall for some time.

After the Conflagration Ape King killed the One-Horned Panther Dragon, its blood red eyes turned towards Mu Chen. The latter felt that it was pretty bad and was about to flee. However, an extremely furious roar came out from the depths of the forest.

ROAR!

An amazing Spiritual Energy fluctuation was wrapped within the roar. Wind appeared where the roar passed by and Mu Chen's face instantly changed due to this Spiritual Energy pressure.

A High Rank Spiritual Beast?! The strength of a Spirit Stage!

BOOM!

A silver shadow stormed out of the depths of the forest in berserk. After a few seconds, it appeared in this open space. Mu Chen hurriedly lowered his body and looked over. He saw that the silver shadow was actually exactly the same as the One-Horned Panther Dragon. Aside from the fact that its body was larger, the horn on its head was a silver color.

This is the...High Rank Spiritual Beast, Silver-Horned Panther Dragon?

Mu Chen's heart jumped. He stared at the dead One-Horned Panther Dragon before looking at the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon, who was staring with hatred at the Conflagration Ape King. He finally understood. The Conflagration Ape King actually killed the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon's child...

Mu Chen quietly laid down on the ground. He painted his body with the pungent black liquid in order to cover his smell and held his breath. Then, he stared pitifully at the Conflagration Ape King.

“Buddy, it’s over for you.”

Chapter 32 – Spoils of War

Deep inside the forest, a violent Spiritual Energy swept through like a fierce wind. Under this powerful Spiritual Energy, the entire forest became silent. In the distant, a few Spiritual Beasts desperately fled as they felt the rage from the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon.

The fury within the Conflagration Ape King's eyes subsided slightly under the Spiritual Energy's pressure. The ugly beast's face revealed a slight hint of fear. Although it had just reached the peak of a Middle Rank Spiritual Beast, the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon in front of it was a genuine High Rank Spiritual Beast!

Conflagration Ape King's enormous body curled up slightly. It stared in fear at the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon. The body showed traces of backing off and it was obvious that it planned on escaping.

"Roar!"

But the grieving Silver-Horned Panther Dragon would not let this murderer escape that easily. Rage and ruthlessness filled its cold beast eyes. As its sharp claws slowly rubbed the ground, an extremely violent Spiritual Energy Fluctuation emitted out from it constantly.

Boom.

The Conflagration Ape King suddenly turned around and ran. The fierceness it showed earlier as it chased Mu Chen had completely vanished. Under the threat of death, it was obvious that it had forgotten about Mu Chen.

The Silver-Horned Panther Dragon stared coldly at the escaping Conflagration Ape King, its massive body lowered slightly. In the next instant, Spiritual Energy flooded out like a waterfall and dazzling silver light completely wrapped around the Silver-Horned

Panther Dragon. After a muffled sound, the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon turned into a silver streak of light as it darted forward.

Swoosh!

With a speed that the naked eye cannot perceive, the silver light pierced through the air. A sound of tearing rang out before Mu Chen was able to react. He turned his gaze over to that direction and noticed that the Conflagration Ape King had already stopped running. A 1-meter wide hole appeared on its back. The organs within its body had completely vanished as well.

The Silver-Horned Panther Dragon shook its body lightly in front of the Conflagration Ape King. It flung away all the bloodstains on its body before it slowly walked back.

Bang.

The Conflagration Ape King's body collapsed onto the ground. Fresh blood continued to flow out, but it was obvious that it had died already.

One hit. An instant kill.

Mu Chen's heart jumped. He thought inside his mind. Is this the power of a High Rank Spiritual Beast? How terrifying! However, he remained motionless as he laid on the ground. He even minimized his breathing and the Spiritual Energy, which was circulating within his body, returned back to his aurasea.

If he was discovered by the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon, he probably wouldn't be much better off than the Conflagration Ape King.

Luckily, the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon was not in a mood to search for a human like him. Instead, it walked beside the One-Horned Panther Dragon and pushed the corpse around. It issued out a lament howl and slowly walked back to the depths of the forest with its corpse.

Mu Chen watched as the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon

disappeared. He did not immediately stand up. Instead, he waited patiently for approximately ten minutes before he carefully stood up.

He stared vigilantly at his surroundings. Then, he hurried quickly to the Conflagration Ape King's corpse and used a dagger to cut its head apart. All of a sudden, a red light floated out.

This was the Conflagration Ape King's Soul Essence. This fiery red light had a miniature-sized Conflagration Ape in it. A powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuation radiated from it.

Mu Chen used his backhand to collect the Conflagration Ape King's Soul Essence. Then, he used the dagger and cut the Conflagration Ape King's head completely off. After this was done, he suddenly paused and pondered for a moment. Then, he walked to the place where the One-Horned Panther Dragon had died. A large puddle of thick red blood was at that spot.

Mu Chen took out a bottle and carefully loaded the blood inside. Then, he placed it back within his arms and swiftly left this place.

…

While Mu Chen got rid of his dilemma, a trouble also appeared within the valley.

Roar Roar!

The silence within the valley was completely shattered at this moment. Groups of giant red apes stared furiously at the humans within the depths of the valley. They picked up giant boulders and threw them fiercely at them. With their numbers, they managed to force everyone in the valley into a helpless position.

"Damn it, all of these beasts regained their consciousness."

Lin Zhong and the others dodged the giant boulders helpless. They stared at the group of Conflagration Apes as they showed an exceeding ugly expression. After Mu Chen had lured away the Conflagration Ape King, they picked up the speed. However, they

did not imagine that the Conflagration Apes would wake up in succession. Right now, they were stuck at this location due to them.

“What should we do?” Tang Qian’Er, Mo Ling and the others had a pale expression. After all, their psychological qualities weren’t as good as Lin Zhong and the others. This scene made their legs feel slightly weak.

“Prepare to charge out.” Lei Cheng said in a deep voice. He was carrying a bag behind him. Emerald lights continued to penetrate outwards from within the bag while a fragrance was released into the air.

“Lin Zhong, bring some people to take care of them. Don’t let anything happen to them.”

Lei Cheng said. After all, they were veterans and they had bountiful experience in this. However, Tang Qian’Er and the others were just rookies without any experience. If an accident occurs and they were caught among the group of Conflagration Apes, they would probably be ripped into shreds instantly.

“Yes.”

Lin Zhong and the others nodded. They did not make fun of these students, who had not guts. After all, the courage displayed by Mu Chen earlier when he lured away the Conflagration Ape King by himself was something that they were stunned about. They understood that they would have probably died today if it wasn’t for Mu Chen’s actions.

“Let’s go!”

Lei Cheng gripped onto his long blade and his eyes became serious. A powerful Spiritual Energy emitted out and he led the charge towards the Conflagration Apes. His blade flashed and he forcibly teared open a path.

The Thunderstorm Team followed closely. Tang Qian’Er and the

others were in the center and were protected by them. The group of people pushed their Spiritual Energy to the extreme and blade lights formed into a defensive line. It knocked back the Conflagration Apes that tried to lunge over.

Bang Bang Bang.

Although there was Lei Cheng, a Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase powerhouse, who was leading the team, there were just too many Conflagration Apes. Therefore, some of the members of the Thunderstorm Team were injured shortly after they charged out. However, they gritted their teeth and endured it as fresh blood constantly flowed down the arms holding the blade.

“Damn it!”

Lei Cheng split a Conflagration Ape into half. However, he could only curse as numerous Conflagration Apes lunged over. He gradually started to panic. It seems that they would be buried within this valley today.

Tang Qian’Er, Mo Ling and the others stared at the vicious Conflagration Apes with a pale expression. However, the Conflagration Apes suddenly created a commotion when they felt despair within their hearts. The Conflagration Apes seemed to have noticed something terrifying and they retreated backwards while letting out fearful cries.

“What is this all about?”

Lei Cheng and the others watched in astonishment at this scene. Not far away, they noticed a thin boy’s figure suddenly jumping out.

“It’s Mu Chen!”

Tang Qian’Er and the others instantly became overjoyed when they noticed this familiar figure. They did not understand why, but the confidence that the latter gave far surpassed Lei Cheng even when he wasn’t as strong as Lei Cheng.

“What is he holding in his hand?” Lin Zhong and the others could see clearly. The thing that Mu Chen was holding on seemed to be the source of fear for the nearby Conflagration Apes.

“It’s a head…”

Lei Cheng was stunned. His eyes immediately showed an astounded expression and he cried: “It’s the head of the Conflagration Ape King!”

“What?!” Lin Zhong and the others were startled. Horror began to fill their eyes. Did Mu Chen really kill the Conflagration Ape King?

“Hurry!”

Just as they were horrified, Mu Chen shouted at them. At the same time, he raised the head of the Conflagration Ape King and the nearby Conflagration Apes retreated backwards due to fear. In their eyes, the Conflagration Ape King was an extremely terrifying existence. Then, the one who killed the Conflagration Ape King, just how powerful would he?

Without a sharp wisdom, they weren’t able to think clearly about this. They could only rely on the fear that they felt from their instincts.

“Hurry and run!”

Lei Cheng rejoiced and he quickly gestured with his hand. He led the crowd and accelerated to leave the Conflagration Ape’s siege. Finally, they made it to Mu Chen’s side. As they approached, they were able to see clearly the ugly head that was constantly dripping blood. It was indeed the Conflagration Ape King’s head…

Lei Cheng and the others exchanged gazes. They could see the shock within their eyes. How in the world did Mu Chen do it?

Mu Chen did not care about their thoughts and led them out of the valley quickly. Then, he placed the head of the Conflagration Ape King outside of the valley and scared the Conflagration Apes,

so that they did not dare to come out.

The group of people turned around and rushed fiercely away. Only after they were far away from the valley, they fell down exhausted. Even Lei Cheng was panting heavily and his body was covered with sweat.

Mu Chen also sat down below a tree. It feels that his bones were about to shatter. It was quite frightening this time, he nearly died.

“Are you alright?” Tang Qian’Er walked beside Mu Chen. Her beautiful eyes stared at the boy. It was obvious that this person had given her many shocks today.

“I’m fine.”

Mu Chen smiled and he raised his head. He noticed that Lei Cheng and the others were all dumbfounded as they stared at him. It was evident that they had not recovered from the shock that Mu Chen had saved them using the head of the Conflagration Ape King.

“Stop staring. I was just lucky. I still don’t have the strength to kill a Conflagration Ape King.”

Mu Chen shook his head helplessly. Then, he turned and looked at Lei Cheng as he smiled: “However, Big Brother Lei Cheng, the task is finished. We should divide the spoils now, right?”

“Haha.”

When Lei Cheng heard these words, he could not help but laugh. He lowered the bag behind him and spread it open. A dazzling emerald light flowed out instantly along with a thick fragrance, which made everybody’s eyes lit up.

Mu Chen also stared at the round and juicy Jaded Essence Fruit inside the bag. A satisfied smile appeared on his face. At least he did not lose out after this tiring ordeal.

Chapter 33 – Returning to Camp

The bag was spread out on the ground and a dazzling emerald light emitted from it. Every single jaded-colored Jaded Essence Fruit was round and shiny. An irresistible aroma made all of them gulp as they stared feverishly at it.

“There’s a total of 30 Jaded Essence Fruits. Originally, we should have more of an harvest, but the Conflagration Ape King wasted many Jaded Essence Fruit.” Lei smiled and separated 15 of the Jaded Essence Fruit. He said: “Little Brother Mu Chen. Although you said that you would only take 30%, it was all thanks to you regarding about the matter today. You deserve these 15 Jaded Essence Fruit. We cannot be greedy after all the work that you’ve done.”

“We should just do 30% like we agreed upon…Fine, then thank you, Big Brother Lei Cheng.”

Mu Chen shook his head. He was about to refuse, but he noticed the resolute expression that Lei Cheng had. He could only helplessly smile and did not act pretentious as he accepted the 15 Jaded Essence Fruit. Then, he looked at Mo Ling and the others, who were staring at him, and said: “You guys worked hard as well. Let’s have everybody take 1 Jaded Essence Fruit, is that okay?”

“Hehe.”

Mo Ling and the others could not help but grin. Even Jiang Li and Teng Yong had emotional faces. As they obtained the Jaded Essence Fruit from Mu Chen, their faces turned red as if they wanted to say something, but they didn’t have the nerve to do so. Thus, they could only keep grinning.

“Yo, you also have one.” Mu Chen handed a Jaded Essence Fruit to Tang Qian’Er. The girl let off a sweet smile as she held onto the Jaded Essence Fruit.

When Mu Chen finished distributing the 15 Jaded Essence Fruit, he still had 6 remaining in his hand. Even he could not endure it and grinned as he stared at the cold, jade-like Jaded Essence. With this Jaded Essence Fruit, he should be able to condense the second Limitless Death Seal, right?

The group of people rested in the forest. Because they came back with fruitful results, every single one of them had a joyous expression. They also got closer with each other. Mo Ling and the others even took the opportunity to ask for guidance from the Thunderstorm regarding about methods of hunting Spiritual Beast. Moreover, Lin Zhong and the others even shared some of the dangerous experiences they had in their adventures. As they were listening, Mo Ling and the others' eyes lit up as if they were extremely excited.

Mu Chen watched the harmonious atmosphere and smiled. At this moment, Lei Cheng walked over with a bottle of hard liquor and thrusted it towards Mu Chen. He smiled and said: "How is it? Can you drink?"

Mu Chen was not good with the item inside the bottle. However, he did not refuse and took a swig from it. The spicy feeling made the handsome boy's face turned red and he coughed a few times.

"Don't drink that much." Seeing this, Tang Qian'Er hurriedly patted Mu Chen's back and said reproachfully.

"Ohoho, I've met many youths over all these years, but I've never met one as amazing as Little Brother Mu Chen. If you have time in the future, you can come play around with the Thunderstorm Team." Lei Cheng joked as he said.

"His father is the Mu Territory's Lord. Uncle Mu will not forgive you if you drag him in becoming an Adventurer." Tang Qian'Er batted an eye towards Lei Cheng and said sourly.

"Mu Territory's Lord?" Lei Cheng was stunned. He immediately stared at Mu Chen in surprise: "So Little Brother Mu Chen is the

Young Master of the Mu Territory. It was an oversight. Ohoho, I've had once followed my Big Brother and met the Mu Territory's Lord before. Truly, a wild goose will never lay a tame egg."

Mu Chen glared at Tang Qian'Er as the girl stuck out her tongue. She only mentioned it because she did not think carefully about it.

"Little Brother Mu Chen, we will stay at the Northern Spiritual Field for a while. If you need any help, feel free to call us. This time, we owe you a favor." Lei Cheng said.

"Big Brother Lei, there's no need to be this polite. Naturally, I would have to give it my all since we were cooperating." Mu Chen smiled and said.

"Cooperation is Cooperation. However, it is also true that you've saved us, the Thunderstorm Team." Lei Cheng said seriously.

Mu Chen could only shake his head helplessly. However, he had a better opinion of this straight-forward and burly man.

After they chatted for a while, the color of the sky gradually darkened. When Mu Chen noticed this, he said farewells to the Thunderstorm Team together with Tang Qian'Er and the others. Afterwards, they rushed towards the direction of the camp.

Along the way, Mo Ling and the others were still immersed in excitement. Although they were in a dangerous situation today, the emotional moments after the danger made them extremely excited. They talked constantly about the fierce battle within the valley.

Mu Chen did not feel anything about the excitement they were talking about. After all, he had experienced this many times within the Spiritual Road. Therefore, he was able to maintain a calm heart when facing this kind of situation.

As there weren't many obstacles on the way back, they reached a location close to the camp after half an hour. The youths all let out a sigh of relief when they saw the camp out in the distance.

Mu Chen stared in the direction of the camp and frowned. This is because a dozen figures were at the entrance of the forest. The leading figure was fairly familiar as it was Liu Yang and Chen Tong. It was clear that the people behind these smiling individuals were all West Branch students.

“It’s Chen Tong and a few others.” Mo Ling was startled when he noticed Liu Yang and the other students. His face immediately turned disgusted: “Mu Chen, it seems that they are coming for you.”

Just when Mu Chen and the others discovered Chen Tong’s group, the other group also noticed the group that was returning. A nasty expression appeared instantly in their faces and they intercepted Mu Chen and the others.

“Chen Tong, what are you guys doing?” Mo Ling frowned when he noticed this.

“Oh, nothing. I only want to talk with him for a while. Mo Ling, this is unrelated to you, so you best not intervene, okay? If you offend Brother Liu, you’ll have an unpleasant time as well.” Chen Tong laughed.

The Brother Liu that Chen Tong was talking about was obviously Liu Mubai. When Mo Ling heard this, his face changed slightly. It was obvious that he was afraid of Liu Mubai.

“Jiang Li, Teng Yong, the two of you can leave as well. I know that you bear grudges with Mu Chen, we’ll help you vent off your feelings.” Chen Tong stared as he spoke to Jiang Li and Teng Yong.

He calculated it quite accurately. Aside from Tang Qian’Er, the other people weren’t familiar with Mu Chen. Moreover, Jiang Li and Teng Yong both disliked Mu Chen, so they wouldn’t help him for sure.

However, just when he believed that he had calculated the situation accurately, Jiang Li and the others only stared at him

coldly. They did not show any traces of leaving and instead let out a sneer: “If you want to hurt Brother Mu, you have to ask us first.”

Although Jiang Li and Teng Yong disliked Mu Chen earlier, the matter today completely changed their opinions on him. Not only did Mu Chen rescue them, his actions in the valley completely made these prideful individuals respect him. The hatred they had against him had vanished already. Therefore, they did not feel the slightest psychological burden when they called him Brother Mu.

“You!”

Chen Tong and the others were stunned. Their faces instantly turned grim as they stared malevolently at Mo Ling and the others, who were protecting Mu Chen. They felt incredulously. Why would these old students be that protective of an East Branch Heaven Class newcomer?

Mu Chen watched the scene undisturbed and did not say anything. He only patted Jiang Li and the other’s shoulders and said: “Let’s leave.”

He did not say anything towards Chen Tong and Liu Yang. This ignoring attitude made Chen Tong’s face become disgusted. He let out a low cry: “You want to leave? You’re acting too arrogant!”

His hand stretched straight out towards Mu Chen’s collar as soon as he said those words.

Swoosh!

However, when he took action towards Mu Chen, a cold chill passed through Mu Chen’s eyes. Mu Chen turned his hand around and a black light flashed. Before Chen Tong’s hands touched his collar, a bloody dark dagger already appeared next to Chen Tong’s throat.

The coldness coming from his throat made Chen Tong’s pupil contract violently. He shuddered and gritted his teeth as he said: “What do you want?”

“You don’t believe that I’ll kill you?” Mu Chen said softly as he looked at Chen Tong.

Although Mu Chen’s words were light, Chen Tong and the others all felt a bone-chilling cold. This was a true killing intent...

The youths behind Chen Tong were stunned by the emotionless black eyes of Mu Chen. They were afraid and did not dare to speak.

“What are you doing?”

A deep voice broke the silence and many youths hurriedly looked over. They saw Teacher Mo staring severely at them nearby.

“Teacher Mo!”

Mo Ling and the others immediately bowed when they noticed him.

When Mu Chen saw that Teacher Mo, he withdrew his dagger. A gentle smile reappeared on his handsome face. When you look at him, it seems that he was harmless.

“Teacher Mo, Mu Chen wanted to kill me!” Chen Tong stared at Mu Chen with a flushed face.

“You really believe that I didn’t see it at all?” Teacher Mo glanced at Chen Tong as he said faintly.

Chen Tong was startled and he bitterly touched his nose. Then, he glared fiercely at Mu Chen and brought everyone away with a depressed expression.

“All of you should return back to the camp as well.” Teacher Mo said this towards Mo Ling, Tang Qian’Er and the others. The latter hesitated for a moment before leaving one after another.

After seeing them leave, Teacher Mo walked towards Mu Chen. He could not help but shake his head as he stared at the boy’s gentle face. He said: “Boy, you really dare do such a dangerous thing with an Adventurer’s Team.”

“Teacher Mo, you know what we did?” Mu Chen was slightly

stunned as he asked.

“After Tan Qingshan returned and informed me, I rushed over immediately. However, I did not show up, but I’ve witnessed your actions.” Teacher Mo stared at Mu Chen while he was slightly overwhelmed. He originally planned on saving Mu Chen when he noticed Mu Chen luring away the Conflagration Ape King. However, who would have expected that the boy would actually lure out a Silver-Horned Panther Dragon. This act of rousing the tiger to eat the wolf even made him sigh with amazement.

“So Teacher Mo was secretly protecting me. If I knew that earlier, I wouldn’t need to be hunted down that helplessly.” Mu Chen said helplessly. If they knew that a Spirit Stage powerhouse was protecting him in secret, just who would be willing to run around the forest while being chased?

“Boy, you…” Teacher Mo smiled as he shook his head. He knew that Mu Chen was quite cautious even though he was still quite young. He must have cooperated with the Thunderstorm Team because he was convinced that the other side would not dare do anything wicked to them: “Forget it, it’s great that you’re back. Let’s head back to the camp first.”

Teacher Mo waved his hand and turned around towards the camp. Mu Chen followed him with a smile.

The two of them passed through the forest and entered the camp. Mu Chen immediately swept a glance around the camp when he entered. He suddenly stared at the dozen burly figures near the camp. The powerful and ominous aura that came from the figures showed that they were any ordinary individuals.

“This is…”

Teacher Mo also frowned as he stared at the unfamiliar team. Then, he noticed the badge on these men’s chests and muttered: “It’s the people from the Liu Territory? What are they planning to do by coming here?”

Chapter 34 – Liu Ming

A group of strangers appearing within the camp would naturally attract the gazes of many students. However, none of them dared to approach. The ominous aura that emitted from their bodies made the young boys and girls slightly afraid.

“The people from the Liu Territory?” Mu Chen frowned as he stared at these unfamiliar men. Why did these individuals run over to the Northern Spiritual Field?

It was obvious that Teacher Mo was also puzzled. He slowly walked towards the group and a middle-aged man stepped forward. He cuffed his hands as he smiled and said: “Surely, this must be the Northern Spiritual Academy’s Teacher Mo? Liu Territory’s Liu Ming. I apologize for coming here uninvited, but I hope you will forgive me.”

“Oh, so it’s the Third Master of the Liu Territory, Liu Ming.” Teacher Mo let out a faint smile when he heard those words.

“How could I allow Teacher Mo call me like this, that’s only a rumor caused by outsiders.” The middle-aged man hurriedly shook his head and maintained a low-profile.

“Liu Ming? The Third Master of the Liu Territory, huh…”

Behind Teacher Mo, Mu Chen glanced at the middle-aged man again. The latter was slightly skinny, yet he seemed strong. Moreover, he had a pair of claw-like hands. At this moment, the skinny face was filled with smiles.

Mu Chen wasn’t unfamiliar with the name, Liu Ming. He had often heard it from his father and Uncle Zhou. This person was the younger twin brother of the Liu Territory’s Territory Lord, Liu Qingtian and was also the right-hand man for him. His strength had already reached the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase and was only a step away from reaching the Spirit Stage. Furthermore,

he was considered a relatively well-known figure within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

“You guys are?” Teacher Mo stared at the group led by Liu Ming, which did not fit with the atmosphere around the camp. He had a slightly unhappy expression. After all, this place was a training location for the students. With these ominous people around here, it might disturb the student’s training.

“Teacher Mo, my Third Uncle is currently on a mission. He noticed that Liu Yang and I were here, so he came over to see us. He did not intend to disturb us.” Behind Liu Ming, Liu Mubai gave a slight smile as he spoke.

“Mission?”

Liu Ming sighed: “We, the Liu Territory, had an important item that was stolen by the “Blood Slaughter Group” while we were transporting it back. Although we, the Liu Territory, managed to encircle them and annihilate them, the captain of the “Blood Slaughter Group” , Xue Tu, still escaped. He fled into the Northern Spiritual Field under our chase, so we came here this time to capture him.”

“Xue Tu?”

Hearing this name, Teacher Mo frowned. He was an extremely ruthlessly individual within the Northern Spiritual Realm. It was unknown how many lives died in his hands. If this wicked individual entered the Northern Spiritual Realm, wouldn’t it be a threat to the students training here?

The other law-abiding Adventurer Teams and Adventurers would fear the Northern Spiritual Academy. Thus, they would not dare do anything overboard to these students. However, this wicked individual would not hesitate at all. As long as they made him unhappy, he would kill without hesitation.

“Ohoho, yes. This time, we came over here because we wanted to

inform Teacher Mo as well. Try and allow the students to be more careful, so that nothing unpleasant would occur. After all, everybody knows how crazy that person is."

As Mu Chen was standing beside Teacher Mo, he naturally heard this and was a little surprised. Obviously, he had heard of the name Blood Slaughter Group before. It was an extremely vicious name. However, these individuals weren't idiots, why would they dare to trouble the Liu Territory?

It seems that those people stole something amazing from them. Otherwise, why would the Liu Territory be so angry? Not only did they massacre the Blood Slaughter Group, they even cause Xue Tu to flee to this place.

"Third Master Liu, what item did the Blood Slaughter Group steal from the Liu Territory? You would actually mobilize this many troops for it." Mu Chen's eyes flashed. He suddenly asked as if he was naïve.

This kind of stupid question startled Liu Ming. He let out a dry chuckle and said: "Little Brother, I can't tell you this."

Mu Chen smiled slightly. Within his heart, he understood just how important that the item stolen by Xue Tu is.

"Mu Chen, this matter is unrelated to your Mu Territory." Liu Mubai glanced at Mu Chen and said.

"Mu Chen?" When Liu Ming heard this name, he was stunned. His eyes narrowed as he stared at Mu Chen and said: "So you're Mu Feng's son. The only one who obtained the qualifications for the Spiritual Road within the Northern Spiritual Realm?"

Mu Chen smiled as he nodded. They were many disputes between the Liu Territory and the Mu Territory. It could be said that they were enemies. Therefore, he was not surprised by Liu Ming's reaction.

"Ohoho, I have heard of your name a long time ago. Originally, I

thought that the spot for the Spiritual Road would belong to Mubai." Liu Ming let out a faint chuckle and said this out.

Mu Chen smiled, but he did not respond.

"Thank you for informing us about the matter of Xue Tu, we will be careful." Seeing that Liu Ming's words have a sting in them, Teacher Mo frowned. Liu Ming was ultimately a well-known figure within the Northern Spiritual Realm, how could he speak so rudely to a young boy?

"Teacher Mo, we wanted to rest in the camp tonight, so we hope that Teacher Mo will accept it. Ohoho, although Teacher Xi had already accepted it, I still feel that it is necessary that Teacher Mo accepts it as well. Of course, we will take care of protecting the camp tonight and guarantee that nothing will happen." Liu Ming quickly said.

When Teacher Mo heard this, he pondered for a moment. Since Teacher Xi had already accepted it, then it wouldn't be quite honorable if he refused. He immediately nodded and brought Liu Ming to arrange a place.

"I heard from Chen Tong earlier that you wanted to kill him?" Seeing that Mu Chen was planning to leave, Liu Mubai suddenly called out faintly.

Mu Chen tilted his head and glanced at Liu Mubai for a moment. He smiled and said: "To those individuals that come to trouble me, I don't know how to be merciful to them. If you enjoy that, you can come at me by yourself. But if you allow those dogs of yours to come over again, I do not mind teaching them a lesson."

Liu Mubai stared coldly at Mu Chen as Mu Chen smiled and exchanged gazes with him.

"If I have the chance, I will personally test out how powerful you, a person who qualified for the Spiritual Road, are. I hope that you would not disappoint me." Liu Mubai stared deeply at Mu Chen.

Then, he left without saying anymore.

When Mu Chen saw this, he smiled as well. Then, he turned around and headed to the camp for the East Branch students. Seeing him walk over, Tang Qian'Er pouted her lips and said: "Those fellows from the Liu Territory, what is there to be proud of now? They still act this arrogant when their item was stolen."

She had always been looking over there. Thus, she was slightly unhappy when she heard the stingy words from Liu Ming and Liu Mubai.

"Since they are unhappy, they needed somewhere to vent off their feelings." Mu Chen smiled and beckoned Tan Qingshan to come over. After he walked over, he quietly thrusted a Jaded Essence Fruit into his hands.

"This is the payment for passing on the message."

Mu Chen patted Tan Qingshan's shoulder while he was in a daze.

"This...Is this really for me?" Tan Qingshan's face turned red because he was emotional. When they came back, Mo Ling and the others talked about the events in the valley to him. Naturally, Tan Qingshan became envious when they were all holding a Jaded Essence Fruit. However, he knew that Mo Ling and the others worked hard for it, so that is why they obtained it. He could only blame his own strength as he could not go with them.

His family environment wasn't that good. He could not afford a Spirit Fruit like the Jaded Essence Fruit. The Jaded Essence Fruit that Mu Chen gave him would be able to save a lot of time for training.

"If you did not pass back the message, we would not have the confidence to follow them and do the task with them." Mu Chen smiled and said.

"B...Brother Mu, thank you." Tan Qingshan held onto the Jaded Essence Fruit and said in an appreciative voice.

“Go train well now.”

Mu Chen shook his head. Afterwards, he headed towards his own tent. Right now, he was left with 5 Jaded Essence Fruits. With such sufficient preparations, he should be able to condense the second seal of the Limitless Death Seal this time, right?

When he thought about this, even with his calmness, Mu Chen could not help but be excited about it.

Night gradually enveloped the Northern Spiritual Field. As the color of the sky darkened, the camp became bright again and was extremely lively.

However, Mu Chen did not go out. Instead, he sat quietly within his tent with his eyes closed. He circulated the Great Pagoda Art and dark black lights glowed on the surface of his body.

This quiet training lasted for approximately 30 minutes. Then, Mu Chen opened his eyes suddenly and pulled out a round Jaded Essence Fruit from his arms. Under the faint firelight, the Jaded Essence Fruit’s bright reflection was extremely enchanting.

Mu Chen licked his mouth. Then, he opened his mouth and directly shoved the Jaded Essence Fruit into this mouth. Next up, it was finally the time to condense the second seal for the Limitless Death Seal.

Chapter 35 – The Second Limitless Death Seal

Hong!

The Jaded Essence Fruit instantly dissolved when it entered Mu Chen's mouth and a thick, sweet taste spread out within. Next, pure Spiritual Energy flowed out like water and infused into Mu Chen's body.

The Spiritual Energy was extremely powerful. Thus, he pursed his lips as the Spiritual Energy caused Mu Chen's body to tremble slightly.

Without the slightest hesitation, Mu Chen overlapped his ten fingers and swiftly changed between complicated seals. As his seals changed, a rich Spiritual Energy began to condense in the center of his palms.

Mu Chen had always been attempting to form the second Limitless Death Seal for a while now. Although he had never succeeded, it still allowed him to get increasingly skilled in the condensation method.

Permeated with black lights, the dark black Spiritual Energy nearly wrapped around Mu Chen's arms completely. The density of the Spiritual Energy was not something that Mu Chen would normally able to achieve.

Mu Chen's eyes were fixed on the Spiritual Energy condensing at the center of his palm. The black light seemed to form a whirlpool and it devoured the surrounding Spiritual Energy endlessly.

He was completely focused on it and did not dare to be distracted at all. After all, when he attempted to condense one normally, he would use the Spiritual Energy that he could control. Even if it failed, it would not cause much damage to him. However, the situation right now was completely different. The Spiritual Energy

that came from the Jaded Essence Fruit made the Spiritual Energy within Mu Chen's body reach a considerably dense level. If he fails, the backlash from the Spiritual Energy would probably be quite troublesome for Mu Chen.

Buzz.

As Mu Chen concentrated, the black lights condensed more rapidly. It was possible to see a black light to slowly condense into the shape of a black light seal.

"All of you, go in!"

Mu Chen let out a cry within his heart and activated the Spiritual Energy within his body with all his strength. It flowed endlessly into the black light seal. The speed of the black light extending increased again. Approximately a minute later, the black light quietly retracted and a black light seal appeared above the center of Mu Chen's left hand.

He finally condensed the second Limitless Death Seal!

Mu Chen stared at the Limitless Death Seal floating above the center of his palm, but he did not relax. Instead, his eyes became increasingly serious because he knew that succeeding in forming the Limitless Death Seal was only the first step...

Next up, he must absorb this second Limitless Death into his body. But when this Limitless Death Seal enters his body, it would burst out an extremely powerful force. If he was not careful, the meridians within his body would be destroyed.

Mu Chen had already suffered from the powerful backlash from the Limitless Death Seal when he formed the first one. He understood that the backlash would only be more terrifying when he formed more of them. Even someone like Teacher Mo, who was at the Spirit Stage Level, could not form the third Limitless Death Seal. Although the power of the backlash would increase based on the practitioner's own strength, he was still able to differentiate

just how powerful the backlash would be.

Huuu.

Mu Chen took a deep breath and the Spiritual Energy within his aurasea began to surge out. It formed a protective membrane around the meridians as it prepared for the violent impact.

When the inside of his body was fully prepared, Mu Chen did not hesitate and the second Limitless Death Seal imprinted itself onto Mu Chen's left palm.

Bang!

The moment that it touched Mu Chen's palm, his body trembled suddenly. Then, the color of his face changed as a violent impact surged forward through his meridians like a raging flood from his left palm.

The power of the impact was filled with destructiveness. Along the way, the Spiritual Energy membrane was smashed instantly and his meridians could not endure the impact. It became slightly distorted and a terrible pain came from it.

Cold sweat appeared at Mu Chen's forehead. However, he did not dare to get distracted. He hurriedly mobilized his Spiritual Energy and contained it again.

Bang Bang Bang!

Mu Chen's body seems to have turned into a battlefield. The backlash from the Limitless Death Seal destroyed the many defenses and wreaked havoc within his body. The pain made Mu Chen's body twitch slightly.

"Damn it!"

The pain had twisted Mu Chen's face a bit. He gritted his teeth and cursed loudly as he struggled to resist it. If he fails to withstand it now, then his hard work would be wasted. Moreover, he would suffer a grave injury within his body.

A terrible pain constantly emitted out from his meridians. Mu Chen was completely drenched in cold sweat and he was slightly dizzy from the pain.

Only at this moment did he truly understand how difficult it was to form the second Limitless Death Seal.

The power of the backlash had already breakthrough the outer meridians and it charged straight towards Mu Chen's aurasea without stopping. This made Mu Chen's heart turn cold. If his meridians were injured, he could still restore them. However, if his aurasea was destroyed, it would definitely be so painful that he would want to die.

"Stop!"

When Mu Chen thought about this, even he couldn't remain calm and he let out an angry roar within his heart.

Buzz!

When the low cry rumbled within his body, he noticed that a few lights lit up within his body. These lights were distributed throughout Mu Chen's limbs and seemed quite peculiar.

As these lights appeared, Mu Chen felt that an energy gushing out from his body and it collided with the raging impact directly.

Boom!

A sound of bombardment rang out within his body and buzzed within Mu Chen's ears. He only managed to recover after a while. When he recovered, the first thing that he did was to sense within his body. However, he was startled.

Because he discovered that the raging backlash was actually blocked!

"How could this be..." Mu Chen muttered at a loss. He stared in his mind at the fading lights within his body. Could this really be a Spiritual Pulse? But why couldn't he control it or even just sense

it?

After thinking for a while, he could not think of any reason why and he could only let out a bitter laugh. It seems that there was some sort of secret within his body.

Mu Chen suppressed these thoughts within his heart and circulated the Great Pagoda Art. He gathered the Spiritual Energy that was spread throughout his limbs into his aurasea. However, after the Spiritual Energy entered his aurasea, he could feel that the originally quiet Spiritual Energy begin to rumble. A strange fluctuation rumbled within Mu Chen's heart.

When he sensed this fluctuation, Mu Chen was stunned. Then, a pleasant surprise could not be concealed as it gushed out from his heart.

This is...a sign of the Spiritual Energy making a breakthrough!

Mu Chen opened his eyes in surprised. He immediately pulled out another Jaded Essence Fruit and shoved it into his mouth. Then, he circulated the Great Pagoda Art and refined the warm and cool Spiritual Energy. It eventually turned into a dark black Spiritual Energy as it endlessly entered his aurasea.

The two Spiritual Energies quickly converged together and a joyous cry rang out within Mu Chen's aurasea. As this joyous cry rang out, Mu Chen was able to feel the Spiritual Energy within his body becoming denser rapidly.

This increase lasted for quite a while before it stopped. The star cluster-like dark black Spiritual Energy within Mu Chen's body seemed to have doubled compared to before.

Inside the tent, Mu Chen opened his eyes and his handsome face was filled with joy. He stretched out his hands and a dark seal flickered within both his palms.

He succeeded in forming the second Limitless Death Seal!

Mu Chen grinned and clenched his hands tightly. Not only did he

condense the second Limitless Death Seal, he even took advantage of this opportunity and broke through again. He advanced to the Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase!

Sensing that the Spiritual Energy within his body had become denser, Mu Chen could not help but smile.

Tonight's harvest had far surpassed his own expectations.

Just when Mu Chen was delighted due to his breakthrough, Teacher Mo also opened his eyes in another tent. His eyes stared in surprise in the direction of Mu Chen's tent and he immediately smiled.

This little guy is truly impressive.

Chapter 36 – Predicament

The following day. The camp, once again, became lively. Many boys and girls surrounded each other excitedly as they talked about their harvests of yesterday. Sounds of laughter from the girls echoed in the camp. It was filled with youthful vitality.

The people from the Liu Territory, led by Liu Ming, had temporarily left in the early morning. They probably went to search for traces of Xue Tu. Without the existence of these individuals, the camp's atmosphere relaxed. After all, these boys and girls had some resistance towards these ominous individuals.

Teacher Mo and Teacher Xi did not stop the training because of Xue Tu. However, they reminded the students to not venture in too deep and to not be too dispersed.

"Let's go, we should also set off."

Mu Chen gestured towards Tang Qian'Er and she trotted over. The curvy, slender petite body attracted many boys' gazes and they stared jealously towards Mu Chen. This guy was really lucky since he was able to form a team with Tang Qian'Er.

"Brother Mu, are you going out for training again? Haha, don't lose to us." Jiang Li and Teng Yong greeted Mu Chen when they noticed him.

"You want to defeat us as well, dream on." Tang Qian'Er said in a sweet voice.

"Haha, if anything happens feel free to call us, Brother Mu. If anyone wants to trouble you, we're not afraid of them." Jiang Li and Teng Yong laughed as they talked. Beside them, the East Branch students that had accompanied Mu Chen yesterday to perform the task hurriedly nodded.

Mu Chen waved at them with a smile. Without saying anything more, he brought Tang Qian'Er away from the camp and headed to

the Northern Spiritual Field.

Within the camp, Liu Mubai stared at the disappearing figure. A hint of coldness that was hard to detect flashed through his eyes.

Boom!

Within the forest, Mu Chen's hand shot off as dark black Spiritual Energy surged out from his palms. He darted passed a Low Rank Spiritual Beast, whose strength was at the Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase, and directly knocked it a dozen meters away. The Spiritual Beast could only whine as it landed on the ground.

Behind him, Tang Qian'Er watched this scene and was startled. Although Mu Chen could kill a Low Rank Spiritual Beast with this level of strength yesterday, he could not kill it using such a brutal method like he showed today.

"Your strength?" Tang Qian'Er could not help but ask.

"Thanks to the Jaded Essence Fruit, I managed to break through to the Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase yesterday night." Mu Chen crouched down and obtained the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence as he explained.

"Crazy."

When Tang Qian'Er heard this, she suddenly muttered this cry. However, she immediately lifted her face and proudly said: "I will also reach the Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase within five days!"

"Amazing."

Mu Chen smiled and raised his thumb. Then, he continued heading to the depths of the forest: "Let's go, it's your turn next. You're not allowed to be lazy, otherwise it won't be beneficial to your training."

"I know!"

Tang Qian'Er replied as she quickly followed him while she smiled.

At the west side of the Northern Spiritual Field, a dozen shadows were searching vigilantly. Liu Mubai was also within this group. With his position and strength, it was obvious that he was capable to lead a team by himself.

From Liu Ming, he understood just how important the item that Xue Tu had stolen was to the Liu Territory. The Liu Territory had paid a great price in order to obtain it. Therefore, they must capture Xue Tu and obtain the item back regardless of the cost.

"Little Master, we detected traces of that Xue Tu earlier. However, that guy is extremely cunning, he slipped away from our team again." An expert from the Liu Territory reported to Liu Mubai.

"Continue to search."

Liu Mubai nodded his head and said a command.

"Yes!" That team immediately replied and brought its men to increase the search radius.

This search lasted for half an hour. Just when Liu Mubai frowned, a buzzing sound rang out in front. It was a signal sent out by the Liu Territory's men.

"They found him, let's go!

Liu Mubai's eye lit up. He gestured with his hand and his body charged forward. When his body passed through the forest, a man covered with blood rushed towards him awkwardly. From his appearance, it seems that he was a person from the Liu Territory.

"Where's Xue Tu?" Liu Mubai hurried and asked as he stared at that person.

"Little Master, Xue Tu fled towards the north. Should we immediately notify the Third Master?" The expert from the Liu

Territory replied.

“The north?”

Liu Mubai’s eyes flashed when he heard this. He waved his hands and said: “Wait for a moment.”

“Big Brother? Why should we wait?” Liu Yang asked as he was puzzled. If they waited, what would they do if Xue Tu escaped?

“He can’t escape. We already forced Xue Tu into a dead end.” Liu Mubai smiled dainty and said: “Right now, he is only a caged beast. He will die eventually. However, we should let him vent off his frustration on some unlucky fellows before we let him die.”

“Big Brother, you mean?” Liu Yang was confused.

“Mu Chen is in that direction.” Liu Mubai laughed softly.

“Oh?” When Liu Yang heard this, a hint of excitement flashed through his eyes. However, he immediately frowned again and said: “We can’t guarantee that Xue Tu would attack Mu Chen.”

“Xue Tu is fond of girls. Since a beauty like Tang Qian’Er is beside Mu Chen, he wouldn’t be able to endure it. With Mu Chen’s personality, he would not throw aside Tang Qian’Er and escape by himself, so” Liu Mubai smiled, but this smile was filled with a cold chill.

“Haha, Big Brother sure is thoughtful. If Mu Chen dies at the hands of Xue Tu, others can’t complain at all and can only consider him as unlucky!” Liu Yang said excitedly. He knew how vicious that Xue Tu is. If Mu Chen fell into his hands, he would definitely die.

Liu Mubai only smiled and muttered as he stared at the north: “I originally planned on taking care of him by myself, but it seems that he is fortunate enough.”

“Oi, Mu Chen. Hurry and help, this guy’s strength is at the Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase, I can’t win!”

Within the forest, Tang Qian'Er hurriedly avoided a ferocious Spiritual Beast, which lunged towards her. Her black ponytail danced as she let out a cry from time to time.

Standing on a branch, Mu Chen stared at the figure below who was constantly dodging the Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase Spiritual Beast. He could not help but smile as he swept down like a wild goose. His right hand formed a fist as a dark black light condensed itself within his palm and formed a black light seal.

"Stop being so savage, you beast!"

Mu Chen dashed out while revealing a slight smile. The black light seal carried a tremendous fluctuation as it fiercely bombarded the Spiritual Beast.

Boom!

The Spiritual Beast let out an angry roar and its huge claws filled itself with Spiritual Energy. It violently smashed it against Mu Chen's fist.

The Spiritual Energy impact exploded and swept the surrounding leaves away. A low growl came out from the Spiritual Beast as it was actually pushed back by Mu Chen forcibly.

Shuaaa!

When the Spiritual Beast was still unstable, Mu Chen's body moved and he darted towards the Spiritual Beast again. His hand flashed and a dagger appeared within it. The Spiritual Energy wrapped around the dagger and brought forth an extremely sharp light as it stabbed fiercely into the Spiritual Beast's throat.

Dong!

Hot blood squirted out from the Spiritual Beast. Even the earth trembled slightly when the Spiritual Beast crashed onto the ground.

Mu Chen smiled as he wiped the blood away from his dagger. The

boy's tall body was quite attractive as it was bathed by the warm sunlight that penetrated through the forest.

"What an irritating guy. He doesn't know how to be kind to woman and let me be chased for so long." Tang Qian'Er said bitterly before she walked towards the Spiritual Beast. She pulled out a short sword and stabbed it into the beast's head. While she tried to take out the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence, she was still chattering about Mu Chen's crimes.

Mu Chen stared at her and could not help but smile. But just when he wanted to say something, his face changed and he darted forward. He wrapped his arms around Tang Qian'Er's waist as she was about to take out the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence. The two of them tumbled away.

And just when Mu Chen grabbed onto Tang Qian'Er and charged away, a bloody shadow charged out suddenly from the forest. The hands that were originally planning to hold onto Tang Qian'Er missed and it let out a surprised sound.

Mu Chen held onto Tang Qian'Er as they rolled on the ground. Then, he quickly got up and stared in alert at the figure that appeared. His eyes narrowed slightly.

Seeing the corpse of the Spiritual Beast in the open space, the figure stood up. He was wearing a blood red robe and his face was extremely vicious. Craftiness flashed within his narrow eyes.

"Hehe, that boy actually has quite the skill."

The blood shadow stared at Mu Chen and let out a strange laugh. Then, his eyes landed on the girl who was behind Mu Chen. The girl had a soft, slender body. Her chest was quite bountiful and she had a waist that could be held within one arm. The youthful and energetic taste of hers made him lick his mouth.

"I never expected to find such an outstanding item over here."

The blood shadow smiled and said. The eyes that stared at Tang

Qian'Er made it seem that he wanted to swallow her into his stomach. This made the young girl tremble and she hid her body behind Mu Chen.

"Boy, hand her over to me and I'll let you go. Otherwise, I'll let you experience some of my methods." The blood shadow smiled and he stared at Mu Chen like a viper.

Mu Chen kept a close eye at the blood shadow in front of him. Cold sweat appeared on the palm that held onto Tang Qian'Er's hand. If he did not guess incorrectly, the guy in front of him must be the captain of the Blood Slaughter Group, Xue Tu, whom Liu Ming and the others were chasing.

He never thought that he would meet with this murderer here. This time, he really was in trouble.

Chapter 37 – Setting a Trap

In the open space of the forest, the three figures faced each other. The atmosphere made one feel slightly suffocated. Of course, this was only to Tang Qian'Er, who was behind Mu Chen. Xue Tu's smile and narrow eyes were filled with craftiness and coldness.

Mu Chen vigilantly stared at him while the Spiritual Energy within his body rushed out. This Xue Tu seemed to give him a dangerous feeling. The degree of danger seemed to be far beyond the Conflagration Ape King that he met yesterday.

Whether it is in strength or in wisdom, the Conflagration Ape King cannot compare with Xue Tu. The Conflagration Ape King had only just broke through to the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase, but Xue Tu, on the other hand, had almost stepped into the Spirit Stage.

"Boy, I don't have much time to play this game of confrontation with you. You have ten seconds to decide. If you hand her over, I'll let you live." Xue Tu said this again as he stared at Mu Chen with a smile.

"You aren't afraid of attracting the two Spirit Stage Instructors from the Northern Spiritual Academy if you attack us here?" Mu Chen said slowly.

"You're running out of time."

Xue Tu grinned and his pure white teeth made the other people shudder.

Mu Chen took a deep breath and tilted his head to stare at Tang Qian'Er. Then, he grabbed onto her smooth wrist and shoved her over towards Xue Tu.

"At least you understand, boy." When Xue Tu noticed this, his smile became more brilliant.

Mu Chen furiously circulated the Spiritual Energy in his arms

and immediately took a step forward. He directly used the back of his hand and smashed towards Tang Qian'Er's shoulder. This powerful impact blew her away.

"If you don't want to hurt me, then leave!"

After Tang Qian'Er was blown away, Mu Chen's shout quickly followed.

When Tang Qian'Er fell into the forest, her beautiful eyes stared at the tall boy's figure and her eyes became wet by the fog. She suppressed her foolish thought of not casting him aside as she turned and ran.

"You think you can get away?"

Xue Tu stared coldly at this scene. These two Spiritual Movement Stage brats actually were so naïve that they thought they could escape him?

"Boy, I'll let you taste what is called a living death later on!" Xue Tu smiled and his body darted over. However, he did not charge towards Mu Chen, but rather to Tang Qian'Er, who was escaping to the outside of the forest.

When Mu Chen noticed this, he also lunged over. However, Xue Tu completely ignored his lunge.

"Spirit Destruction Bead!"

Just when he planned on ignoring Mu Chen's charge, Xue Tu noticed that the boy suddenly grasped something within his hand. A light seemed to appear within his hand and a violent sound rang out.

"Spirit Destruction Bead?"

Hearing this name, Xue Tu's heart trembled. Although Mu Chen, who was in front of him, was pretty weak, it was definitely possible that he could obstruct him, if he had a Spirit Destruction Bead. Moreover, if the Spirit Destruction Bead was to hit him, it

would probably cause some degree of injury. This was something that Xue Tu could not afford to suffer while he was surrounded.

Xue Tu's eyes flashed and eventually stopped. He stared at the powerful and sudden mass of black light and let out a cry, as vigorous Spiritual Energy erupted out and enveloped his body.

Crack!

The instant that the black light was about to touch his body, it suddenly burst open. Unexpectedly, the violent Spiritual Energy did not appear. Instead, a strong stench suddenly presented itself. A sticky item burst out from the black light and covered Xue Tu's body.

This sudden turn of events completely stunned Xue Tu. He lowered his head and stared at his body covered with blood. The fresh blood was quite viscous and had a pungent smell. It completely bathed his body and made him look extremely awkward.

"You dare trick me?!"

The corner of Xue Tu's mouth twitched slightly. A chill exploded out from his eyes as he stared at Mu Chen.

However, Mu Chen ignored him and instantly retreated.

"Boy, since you want to let her get away this much, then I won't let that wish of yours happen!" Although Xue Tu was extremely angry due to Mu Chen's act, he was still a sinister and ruthless individual. He immediately let out an eerie laugh.

"Trash, do you want this thing?" When Mu Chen noticed that he actually refrained his anger and wanted to capture Tang Qian'Er, he smiled instead. Then, he pulled out an emerald, round fruit that emitted a rich Spiritual Energy from his arm.

"Jaded Essence Fruit?!"

When Xue Tu noticed this Jaded Essence Fruit, his eyes

narrowed. Greediness appeared within his eyes. He was currently at the peak of the Spiritual Rotation Stage and was only a step away from advancing to the Spirit Stage. If he was able to obtain the Jaded Essence Fruit, he would be able to take a risk. Furthermore, if he really succeeded in his breakthrough, he would be able to successfully get rid of Liu Ming and escape!

He would be able to break out of this dilemma!

“You’re a really surprising boy, now I have some interest in you.”

Xue Tu grinned. His eyes instantly turned cold and turned his body over. He darted furiously towards Mu Chen. Compared to letting go of a beauty temporarily, it was worth it if he manages to breakthrough to the Spirit Stage.

Mu Chen seemed to have expected this reaction from him. Within his body, the Spiritual Energy gushed out and wrapped around his legs. He seemed to have pushed his speed to the limits as he fled in madness towards the depth of the forest.

With Tang Qian’Er’s speed, it would probably take some time before she would manage to notify Teacher Mo. During this time period, he must ensure that he survives against Xue Tu, who is at the peak of the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase.

With Xue Tu’s strength, it was extremely easy to kill him.

“Boy, you really believe that you can escape? You would actually use your own life to lure me over for just a little girl. Ohoho, to be honest, I respect you quite a bit. How about this? If you were to hand the Jaded Essence Fruit over, I would only break your limbs and let you survive. What do you think?”

Xue Tu chased after the desperately escaping figure. A strange cackle sound rang out constantly.

“Plaything of a homeless cur, you should take care of yourself instead.” Mu Chen did not look back and instead sneered at him.

“You really don’t know how to appreciate other people’s favors!”

Xue Tu's eyes turned cold. His Spiritual Energy stormed out and his speed suddenly accelerated. The distance between Mu Chen's figure and him was quickly shortening.

Mu Chen could feel the chill coming closer and closer behind him. His heart sank slightly. In the end, he still underestimated Xue Tu's strength.

However, if he were to relax even the slightest bit, he would probably die at the hands of this guy.

Mu Chen gritted his teeth and a low roar seemed to erupt within his heart. His Spiritual Energy circulated at a high speed through his meridians. Perhaps they were aware that Mu Chen was in a situation of life and death, the hidden lights within the depths of his body slowly lit up again.

The lights emerged one after another. If Mu Chen were to observe the inside of his body with his mind right now, he would discover that the lights were connecting and forming something similar to a mysterious tower.

Boom.

Unfortunately, Mu Chen did not have the time to split up his mind right now. He could only feel the Spiritual Energy suddenly become a lot violent and his speed also accelerated. He was actually able to pull a little bit of distance away from Xue Tu.

"What? This boy's speed is actually this fast!"

When Xue Tu noticed this, he was stunned. Then, he frowned again and immediately circulated his Spiritual Energy as he hurriedly chased after Mu Chen. After all, he had extraordinary eyesight that surpassed others. Mu Chen's sudden explosiveness should only be temporarily and could not compare to his endurance.

Within the forest, one of them was chasing while the other was fleeing. As they passed through, the leaves on the ground were

swept clean as if a tornado had passed.

Under this extreme speed, Mu Chen and Xue Tu quickly reached the depths of the Northern Spiritual Field. Xue Tu looked in this direction and was slightly impatient. After all, there were quite a bit of tricky Spiritual Beasts at this place and it was easy for the situation to change.

“Boy, I had enough of you!”

Xue Tu fiercely gritted his teeth. He did not care if he had to expend a lot of Spiritual Energy. His feet violently stomped the ground and his body suddenly laid down like a cheetah. His palms smashed onto the ground and the Spiritual Energy that wrapped his body seemed to have turned into the shape of a cheetah. His body instantly turned into a light figure and he stormed towards Mu Chen at an extremely surprising speed.

“Go to hell!”

This sudden burst of speed made Xue Tu appear behind Mu Chen in around ten breathes of time. A violent Spiritual Energy fluctuation was on Xue Tu’s fist as it was fired out.

This attack was enough to instantly kill a person at the Spiritual Movement Stage.

At the same time, Mu Chen felt the surprising attack behind him. He would probably suffer grave injuries if he were to take it head on.

Mu Chen’s eyes flashed crazily. He stared at the depths of the forest as if he was calculating his position. Then, he turned his body violently around and opened his palm. A black light emerged and he noticed a mysterious black paper suddenly appear from within it.

Boom!

After that mysterious black paper appeared in Mu Chen’s palm, Xue Tu’s fierce fist smashed heavily onto the black paper.

Dong!

A violent Spiritual Energy exploded outwards. Mu Chen's body seemed to be struck by lightning and fresh blood sprayed out from his mouth. That page of black paper returned back to his body and his body flew backwards. In the end, he fell into the depths of the forest.

Xue Tu was surprised when he noticed that this fist didn't kill Mu Chen. However, his speed wasn't slow. He charged straight into the forest and stared at Mu Chen coldly as Mu Chen lay underneath a large tree.

"Are you going to continue to run?"

Xue Tu stared cruelly at Mu Chen as he was collapsed on the ground and laughed.

"There's no need..."

However, Mu Chen wiped off the blood from the corner of his lips when facing Xue Tu's merciless smile. Instead, a mocking smile appeared on the boy's handsome face.

"Now it's your turn to escape, trash."

When Xue Tu heard this, his pupil retracted. As he was about to speak, a furious howl burst out from the depths of the forest. A silver light charged out like lightning. This extremely violent Spiritual Energy seemed to directly cause a storm within the forest.

"A Silver-Horned Panther Dragon?!"

When Xue Tu saw this majestic Spiritual Beast, his face instantly changed. He stared ferociously at Mu Chen and said: "What a ruthless boy, you plan on dying together with me? However, you're still too inexperienced. As long as I escape from his territory, this Spiritual Beast will not chase after me. Instead, you will be the one that becomes is food."

After Mu Chen heard his words, the mocking smile became even more intense.

“Your body is covered with the blood of his cub. You think that it would let you escape this easily?”

When he heard this remark, Xue Tu hurriedly looked down at the sticky and fresh blood covering his body. His face changed dramatically. He finally understood that this seemingly innocent boy was actually setting up a trap for him since the very beginning!

Pretending to throw out a Spirit Destruction Bead, yet hiding a bottle of fresh blood instead. He was escaping while planning along the way...

As Xue Tu stared at the boy’s mocking look, his heart shuddered. Was this really something that a reckless young boy would do?

Mu Chen stared at Xue Tu, whose face was changing color. He gently smiled and stared at the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon, who was letting out an immense killing intent. He let out a sigh of relief.

Boss Panther Dragon, I’m relying on you again this time. Please block this for me...

Chapter 38 – Revenge Kill

Roar!

A violent Spiritual Energy pervaded the inside of the forest. The Silver-Horned Panther Dragon stared at Xue Tu, who was nearby and covered in blood, with its red eyes. A low roar filled with hatred and killing intent emitted constantly out from his mouth.

From this human's body, it smelled the fresh blood of its cub. Could this abominable human hurt its cub before?

Although a High Rank Spiritual Beast were many times more intelligent than a Low Rank Spiritual Beasts, it was still incomparable to a humans. While it was angry, it only wanted to tear apart any human or Spiritual Beast that was tainted with its cub's smell.

"Bastard!"

Xue Tu stared at the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon as his body emitted a cold chill. He glanced venomously at Mu Chen. Who would have imagined that this boy, who he could have captured easily, would be this cunning.

He knew that this was a terrible situation for him, but he had a lustful nature. This is why he wanted to vent out fiercely before trouble arrived. Then, he found a beauty that was as beauty as a flower and it instantly made his heart twitch. But how would we have known that this tiny twitch would bring forth such a large trouble to him.

"I will never forgive you!"

Xue Tu shouted out maliciously. As he stomped on the ground, a powerful Spiritual Energy suddenly erupted from his body. The man instantly retreated violently and passed through the thick woods. It was evident that he was planning on running.

Roar!

However, the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon did not intend to let him go this easily. In an instant, his powerful body lowered and it turned into a silver streak of light as it charged out.

The Silver-Horned Panther Dragon possesses the strength of a Spirit Stage powerhouse. Its speed naturally surpassed Xue Tu and it appeared behind him after a short moment. This violent Spiritual Energy fluctuation made Xue Tu's face change.

"Spirit Leopard Slaughter!"

Nevertheless, Xue Tu wasn't an ordinary person. He forcibly twisted his body in midair and Spiritual Energy gushed out as he let out a cry. The Spiritual Energy on the surface of his body actually turned into the shape of a Spirit Leopard and he fired off a punch. It was as if the leopard and human had fused when he smashed his fist over angrily at the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon.

The Spirit Leopard wrapped around Xue Tu's body as it collided fiercely with the silver light. A cry instantly rang out and violent Spiritual Energy shock waves expanded out, smashing the surrounding trees.

Bang.

As the Spiritual Energy impact expanded out, Xue Tu's body flew back helplessly. He let out a painful scream, as his body fell heavily onto the ground and his right arm covered with blood. The center of his palm even had a bloody hole and fresh blood was pouring out.

When Mu Chen noticed this, he lifted an eyebrow slightly. After all, he saw it clearly yesterday. The Conflagration Ape King was instantly killed by the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon. Yet, Xue Tu only lost an arm today to it. This guy was definitely powerful.

"Shuaaa!"

The Silver-Horned Panther Dragon fell down on the ground and its beastly eyes stared coldly at Xue Tu. Without any delay, its

muscular body darted forward again and the silver light was filled with the scent of death.

When Xue Tu noticed, he hurriedly rolled back awkwardly a few rounds. Although he managed to avoid the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon's rush, he was still hit by the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon's steel-like tail.

Puchi.

The Silver-Horned Panther Dragon's tail swept and hit Xue Tu's chest. He instantly spat out blood from his mouth and his fierce eyes slowed down. After enduring these two attacks from the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon, he was already gravely injured. The injuries were much more severe than when he was fighting against Liu Ming and the others.

"If this continues, I'll be killed by the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon!"

Xue Tu gritted his teeth and he stared maliciously towards the direction of Mu Chen. However, he was stunned. This is because the boy, who was lying on the ground earlier, had suddenly disappeared without him knowing.

"That little as*hole! Just wait until I catch you, I will definitely make it so that you can neither live nor die!" Xue Tu was so anger that his face turned blue as he let out a howl within his heart.

Just when he was distracted, the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon charged over like lightning again. It's sharp claws left a deep blood trail on his body and the terrible pain made him see stars.

"This damn beast!"

Xue Tu cursed loudly and a strange red light flashed through his face suddenly. Fierceness surfaced within his eyes and his body hurriedly retreated backwards. Afterwards, his hands began to quickly form seals and a rampaging Spiritual Energy surged out from his body. As the Spiritual Energy poured out, a thunderstorm

sound rang out.

Boom!

The sounds of thunder suddenly intensified and Xue Tu spat out fresh blood. His sluggish aura rapidly increased all of a sudden and his speed also accelerated. He turned into a vague shadow as he turned to the other way and desperately tried to escape.

Roar!

The Silver-Horned Panther Dragon also let out a roar when it noticed the desperately escaping Xue Tu. Its body turned into a silver light and it chased after him as if it was not planning to spare him.

A human and a beast crazily darted through the forest . Xue Tu was secretly resentful as he noticed the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon in hot pursuit of him. The method of stimulating his Spiritual Energy would hurt himself gravely. The aftereffects were not small either. But in this current situation, did he have any other options? If he fails to escape from the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon, he would definitely die today!

While he was being chased, Xue Tu spat out five mouthfuls of blood. His originally dark face was pale like a sheet of paper. The sense of frailness that came from his body made his head dizzy.

However, he was finally able to relax. After chasing Xue Tu for approximately ten minutes, the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon gradually slowed down. In the end, it let out a roar and turned away leisurely.

He watched as the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon gave up, but he did not dare stop. He held a breath as it fled for another few minutes before rolling awkwardly to a cluster of bush.

Xue Tu’s body became limp when he rolled into the bushes. His Spiritual Energy was almost completely exhausted. He constantly panted heavily before he looked down at the injuries on his body.

He wanted to weep, yet there were no tears. Who would expect that he would suffer such a helpless fate because he wanted to hunt down a Spiritual Movement Stage brat.

This was something that even Liu Ming and the others couldn't do!

"Little trash, I'll never forgive you!" Xue Tu gritted his teeth as he said out maliciously.

Swish!

Just when these words were blurted out, the hairs on his body trembled. His many memories of life and death lingered in his head and emptied his mind.

Shuaa!

A cold chill erupted out from the forest behind him. Then, a sharp coldness flashed by his head and a deep bloodstain appeared on his face.

This sudden attack made Xue Tu's face change instantly. He shouted out: " Who?!"

"The person you wanted to see the most!"

A cheerful laughter rang out from the forest. Afterwards, a figure slowly came out. It was Mu Chen, with a tall height and brilliant smile seen on his handsome face.

"Little trash, you dare come over here!" Xue Tu suddenly cried out when he saw Mu Chen coming out from the forest.

Mu Chen stared at him with a half-smile and Spiritual Energy surged out from his body. However, the black eyes did not have any hint of smiling intent and was instead filled with a chill.

"Boy, what are you planning to do? Although my condition isn't great right now, you would probably still lose your life if I do a desperate counterattack!" Xue Tu quickly shouted when he saw Mu Chen's appearance.

“After all, we should mind our own businesses. Why don’t we just cancel everything that happened today?”

Mu Chen suddenly stopped moving and frowned. He said: “You really won’t search for me to look for trouble?”

Xue Tu quickly said: “I can hardly protect myself now. I can swear. After all, why would I dare trouble you after you returned to the Northern Spiritual Academy?”

“What you said was true...” Mu Chen seemed to hesitate as he nodded slightly.

Xue Tu’s heart jumped with joy, but before he revealed his happiness. The corner of Mu Chen’s mouth revealed a mocking smile: “But I still want to kill you!”

Shua!

Mu Chen’s body darted over violently and the Spiritual Energy within his body surged rapidly. A black light emitted out from his fists and two black light seals emerged faintly.

“Little trash, you just ruined your chance of saving yourself from the disgrace. You have a death wish!”

Xue Tu’s eyes turned dark when he saw Mu Chen charging over. He pushed out the remaining Spiritual Energy within his body and filled his arms with it. He let out a cry within his heart and his arms stabbed out like spears.

“Limitless Death Seal!”

Mu Chen clenched his fists tightly and let out a cry in his heart. The two black light seals erupted out a powerful black light. An overbearing and violent fluctuation emitted from the black light.

Boom!

The four fists collided against each other fiercely. The grass at their locations were forcibly destroyed due to the shock wave. As the Spiritual Energy impact burst out, the two figures flew

backwards as fresh blood came out from their mouths.

When Mu Chen landed on the ground, he did not stop at all. His body darted forward like a cheetah and a powerful suction-like power appeared in his hand. He recovered the dagger that he threw earlier back into his hands.

Shuaa!

At this moment, Xue Tu's body was already extremely sluggish. A cold chill flashed through his black eyes when Mu Chen approached instantly and a black light flashed across his eyes.

Fresh blood scattered everywhere.

Painful screams resounded through the sky from Xue Tu. His arms danced wildly as if it was attempting to kill Mu Chen.

However, Mu Chen's body faded and reappeared behind Xue Tu. The dagger within his hand was like a venomous snake and he stabbed fiercely into Xue Tu's vital points. The entire dagger entered the man's body.

Fresh blood flowed through the dagger endlessly dripped out. Xue Tu, who was frantically swinging his body around, suddenly froze and collapsed down to the ground. His pale face still had an incredulous expression.

He was a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase powerhouse, yet he would actually plummet to his death against a Spiritual Movement Stage boy?

When Xue Tu fell onto the ground, Mu Chen's legs also grew weak and he sat down on his butt. A sweet taste emerged within his throat and he spat out fresh blood again.

After Mu Chen rested on the ground for a while, he gritted his teeth and approached Xue Tu's corpse. His hands probed around Xue Tu's body. He had nearly lost his life, so he should definitely obtain some spoils of war. He wondered if the item that Xue Tu stole from the Liu Territory people was on his body or not.

Chapter 39 – Mustard Seed Bracelet

Mu Chen's hand probed around Xue Tu's corpse. He was not that interested in Xue Tu, but he was extremely interested on the item that Xue Tu stole from the Liu Territory.

The Blood Slaughter Group was considered a relatively well-known force within the Northern Spiritual Realm. Although it cannot compare with the nine territories, it was still quite capable. They were quite bossy with their daily actions, but they would take note not to cause trouble for the nine territories. This was because they knew that the Blood Slaughter Group was no match for the nine territories. Therefore, Mu Chen was curious. Just what item would make the Blood Slaughter Group take such a high risk and attack the Liu Territory?

Moreover, the reaction that the Liu Territory gave made Mu Chen somewhat surprised. They actually massacred the Blood Slaughter Group and were unwilling to give up as they chased Xue Tu into the Northern Spiritual Field.

It was obvious that the item that Xue Tu stole was something that they cared deeply about.

Would an item that even the Liu Territory was greatly concerned about be ordinary?

Within the Northern Spiritual Realm, the Liu Territory was the strongest amongst the Nine Territories. Moreover, the Liu Territory had always wanted to become the true boss of the Northern Spiritual Realm. They used various means such as bribing and threatening to increase their strength among the Northern Spiritual Territories. Furthermore, they would often reveal a position as if they were the strongest force within the Northern Spiritual Realm. Towards the Liu Territory, who were displaying their strength like this, the other Territory Lords weren't acknowledging it. Especially Mu Chen's father, Mu Feng.

Mu Feng had bashed against the Liu Territory's Territory Lord, Liu Qingtian, a long time ago. There was a lot of friction between the two territories and both sides disliked each other. Although they would smile on the surface towards each other, they would be ruthless towards the other when they had the chance.

Because of this relationship the two Liu brothers were always against him, Mu Chen naturally disliked the Liu Territory as well. He was quite happy to do something that would harm the Liu Territory.

While these thoughts floated within Mu Chen's heart, his hand did not slow down. However, he did not discover anything strange on Xue Tu's body even after searching for a long time. He immediately frowned. Did this guy really hide the item?

Mu Chen did not give up and directly removed Xue Tu's clothes. Just when Mu Chen took off the last piece, an item finally fell down from the clothes.

Mu Chen's eyes immediately looked over. He only saw a silver-grey circle like a bracelet and it flashed a faint silver light as it dropped down to the ground.

Mu Chen quickly bent down to pick up the silver-grey circle. He turned it back and forth and did not see anything special to it. He pondered for a moment before his eyes lit up: "This...Could this be a Mustard Seed Bracelet?"

The so-called Mustard Seed Bracelet is a rather special Spiritual Artifact. It's how a Sacred Mountain can conceal a mustard seed, yet a mustard seed could store a Sacred Mountain[1. A Line from the Buddhist Scripture]. This Spiritual Artifact has the power of constructing space and was an extremely valuable storage device. However, this item was rather expensive. Mu Chen had only saw it in his father's hand before. He did not expect that Xue Tu would also have it.

Mu Chen fiddled with the grey Mustard Seed Bracelet. It was said

that this item could be imprinted by the owner's Spiritual Energy. If others were to touch it, the owner would immediately be aware of it. However, Xue Tu was dead now, the Spiritual Energy imprint must have disappeared by now.

Mu Chen's hand grabbed onto the Mustard Seed Bracelet and allowed his Spiritual Energy to flow into the Mustard Seed bracelet. A sudden space appeared within Mu Chen's perception. This was the Mustard Seed Bracelet's storage space

Inside the Mustard Seed Bracelet, Mu Chen definitely found many items. However, there was all kinds of items. He fumbled around roughly, yet he was not able to discover anything special.

"How could this guy have so much trash? He is still the Blood Slaughter Group's Captain." Mu Chen let out a sigh and began to carefully search.

After searching for a while, Mu Chen's mind suddenly moved. A light appeared within his hand and an ancient copper piece appeared. When Mu Chen's Spiritual Energy swept through the Mustard Seed Bracelet, the other items would react to the Spiritual Energy. However, only this item did not move at all...

For being this ordinary, it attracted Mu Chen's attention.

Mu Chen stared at the ancient copper piece and noticed that an obscure copper engraving covered the copper piece. These engravings were so complicated that it made him slightly dizzy when he looked at it.

At the back of the copper engravings, the engraving lines were slightly clearer. He could roughly see a giant black bird flying with its wings. Underneath the giant bird was a mountain stream. However, the mountain stream seemed to be embraced by the giant bird.

The wings covered the mountain.

"Just what Spiritual Beast is this?"

Mu Chen was somewhat surprised. Although the copper piece was quite vague, he was still able to feel a sense of awe from the engravings. This was what made him astonished. Just what Spiritual Beast was able to make him feel a sense of awe just through an engraving?

Could it be a Heaven Ranking Beast?

Mu Chen frowned and turned the copper piece around. However, he did not find anything else and could only shake his head. His instincts told him that it was highly possible that this item was the item that Xue Tu stole from the Liu Territory.

But as to what use this thing had, he would probably know only after letting his father check.

Mu Chen shrugged. Just when he was about to continue looking around in the Mustard Seed Bracelet, his mind suddenly moved. He heard the sound of winds breaking. Based on the direction, it was obvious that they were coming towards him.

Mu Chen quickly placed the copper piece within the Mustard Seed Bracelet. Afterwards, he quickly wore the Mustard Seed Bracelet and used his sleeves to cover it up. Then, he swiftly made Xue Tu wear back his clothes.

Just when he finished with all this, a few figures emerged nearby. In a short moment, these figures appeared in the open space. Mu Chen glanced over and let out a sigh of relief. It was Teacher Mo and the others.

“Mu Chen!”

When Teacher Mo appeared, he saw Mu Chen standing nearby. His tensed face became delighted. His body moved and appeared next to Mu Chen and asked: “Are you alright?”

Mu Chen smiled as he nodded with his head. Although he was slightly pale, his condition was still fine.

“I heard from Qian’Er that you two met Xue Tu. Thus, I

immediately chased all the way over. I finally met you here." It was evident that Teacher Mo was relieved when he saw Mu Chen safe and sound. However, he immediately frowned and looked at the surroundings: "That's right, where's Xue Tu? That guy really has guts, he actually dares to attack our Northern Spiritual Academy's students!"

Mu Chen let out a hollow laugh and pointed to the bush in front of him. He said: "That guy's dead."

Teacher Mo's expression showed that he was clearly stunned. At the same time, Teacher Xi, who was behind him, was also startled. Afterwards, he waved his sleeves and a powerful Spiritual Energy directly blew away the bush. The cold corpse was exposed from it.

"This..."

Teacher Mo and Teacher Xi stared at the cold corpse. Their expressions changed and they stared incredulously at Mu Chen: "What exactly happened?"

Just when Mu Chen was about to speak, the sound of wind breaking could be heard from another direction. He saw Liu Ming bringing a group of men as they approached quickly. Behind him were Liu Mubai and Liu Yang. They showed a surprised expression when they noticed that Mu Chen was actually safe and sound.

"Xue Tu?"

Liu Ming instantly noticed the corpse on the ground. His expression immediately changed and he urgently said: "What happened?"

As he spoke, his sharp eyes stared at Mu Chen. This gaze made Mu Chen feel quite uncomfortable.

"Did you do it?"

Mu Chen faced his glare and shook his head. He said: "I was getting chased by him earlier and nearly lost my life. Luckily, I met an old man who killed Xue Tu."

“An old man?”

Liu Ming’s eyes narrowed slightly and he stared suspiciously at Mu Chen. He waved his hand and two of his men approached Xue Tu’s corpse. After searching for a while, they shook their heads towards Liu Ming.

When Liu Ming noticed this, his eyes twitched. He stared at Mu Chen again and a gentle smile emerged on his face: “Mu Chen, did you see the item that Xue Tu was holding?”

“What item?” Mu Chen blinked and asked with a smile: “The old man searched around after taking care of him. However, I was hiding far away and did not dare approach. I don’t know what he took.”

Liu Ming’s expression instantly turned cold.

“Mu Chen, enough with your nonsense. You must have taken the item on Xue Tu’s body. As for that old man, you probably just made it up!” Liu Yang yelled out.

“You’re saying…” Mu Chen looked at him strangely and said: “I was the one who killed this Xue Tu?”

Liu Yang dawdled and was speechless. Xue Tu was at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase and was only a step away from reaching Spirit Stage. It was basically like a dream for Mu Chen to kill him.

Liu Mubai stared coldly at Mu Chen. A dark and cold flame surged in the depths of his eyes.

“Ohoho, Mu Chen. There’s no need to joke with me. If you really took his item, I would definitely be grateful if you hand it over to me. Moreover, I will personally head to the Mu Territory and talk to your father about this matter.” Liu Ming tried his best to make his expression look gentler as he spoke.

“Third Master Liu, I really didn’t see anything on his body. I was already quite afraid when I was being chased by him. Why would I

dare to take the initiative and approach him?" Mu Chen shook his head. His face looked quite honest and genuine.

The corners of Liu Ming's eyes jumped. He finally could not suppress the rage within his heart. Although he did not believe that Mu Chen was able to kill Xue Tu, he was still the prime suspect. He immediately took a step forward and grasped at Mu Chen. He coldly said: "Since you refuse to tell the truth, then let me personally search your body!"

When Mu Chen noticed Liu Ming stretching his hand over, he gripped his hand for a moment and a black dagger appeared within his hand.

However, just when Liu Ming's hand was about to grasp onto Mu Chen, another hand suddenly extended out and blocked it. Teacher Mo glanced at Liu Ming and a faint voice made Liu Ming's body tremble.

"Liu Ming, you're going too far."

Chapter 40 – Result

"Liu Ming, you're going too far."

When Liu Ming heard the hint of anger within Teacher Mo's voice, his face instantly stiffened. He was wary as, Teacher Mo was a genuine Spirit Stage powerhouse. Moreover, he had the identity of a Head Instructor in the Northern Spiritual Academy. Even the Liu Territory wouldn't dare to carelessly offend him.

"Ohoho, Teacher Mo, please don't be angry. I was just a bit impatient. However, Teacher Mo should understand that we, the Liu Territory, have suffered a terrible loss. We naturally want to obtain the item that was lost now that Xue Tu was killed." Liu Ming cuffed his hands towards Teacher Mo and said politely.

Teacher Mo said faintly: "I understand your feelings, but this isn't a reason for you to search my student's body so freely in front of me. If it wasn't because of the fact that you forced Xue Tu into the Northern Spiritual Field, Mu Chen wouldn't have met a situation where he nearly lost his life. Now that he managed to escape, you are acting like this. Thus, I'm afraid I won't agree to it."

Liu Ming noticed that Teacher Mo was insistent on protecting Mu Chen. The smile on his face became a bit more forced and he said: "This matter was indeed caused by us. Speaking of which, if he is willing to hand it over to us, we will give him a satisfactory compensation. We only hope that we can get our item back."

Mu Chen placed away the dagger within his hand and faced Liu Ming, who had dark and cold eyes, as he shook his head. He said: "Third Master Liu, I really didn't take your item."

That's because that's my war spoil. This phrase flashed through Mu Chen's heart. He was nearly killed by Xue Tu today. How could it be possible for him to hand the item over?

“You!”

Liu Ming gritted his teeth and his expression became darker. However, he did not dare do anything to Mu Chen since Teacher Mo was beside him.

“If you want it, then just keep the item. However, be careful since some items will kill you!” Liu Ming glanced at Mu Chen somberly and could not endure the flames of rage burning within his heart. He gestured with his hand and turned around as he brought Liu Mubai and the others away.

Mu Chen stared at Liu Ming and the others as they stormed away angrily. He acted as if he didn’t even hear the threats towards him.

“Thank you, Teacher Mo.” Mu Chen turned to look at Teacher Mo and expressed his gratitude.

“You are one of the Northern Spiritual Academy’s students. Right now, we are participating in a training organized by the Northern Spiritual Academy. Naturally, I would have to protect you.” Teacher Mo gave a faint smile and smiled as if there was some sort of profound meaning to it.

“Okay, let’s head back to the camp.”

Mu Chen gave a hollow laugh as he was being stared at by Teacher Mo. Then, he did not say anything and turned around as he quickly walked towards the outskirts of the Northern Spiritual Field.

Teacher Mo and Teacher Xi stared at each other behind him. Afterwards, they stared once again at the cold corpse of Xue Tu. Teacher Xi frowned and said: “How could this boy be so lucky? To actually meet an expert and be rescued by him?”

This possibility was indeed quite low. However, wasn’t the possibility of Mu Chen killing Xue Tu, who was at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase, with his own strength even lower?

Teacher Mo let out a laugh as if he didn’t want to comment on it.

He stared at the boy's figure in front of him. After all, he had witnessed Mu Chen tricking a Conflagration Ape King to death. Thus, he understood that if anyone dares to view him as ordinary, they would probably pay a large price for it.

Others might believe that it was an incredulous situation if Mu Chen was able to personally kill an expert like Xue Tu. However, he himself, didn't think that it was impossible.

The seemingly gentle sunshine that was the boy had a heart that was calmer and sharper than ones that Adventurers hone in life and death situations. His means of dealing with things weren't something that an ordinary person could compare.

He really is an interesting little guy. No wonder he became the only one who qualified for the Spiritual Road within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

...

When Mu Chen returned to the camp, a large commotion rang out. Mo Ling, Tan Qingshan and the others immediately surrounded him. It was obvious that they knew the news about Mu Chen meeting with Xue Tu.

Mu Chen smiled towards them and indicated that he was fine. He tilted his head and looked at the pretty girl who had red eyes.

"Sorry, it was all my fault."

Tang Qian'Er said while she had red eyes. If it wasn't because of her, Mu Chen would not have met with Xue Tu and be forced into a dangerous situation.

"We are teammates, and I formed a team with such a beautiful girl. If no trouble were to occur, wouldn't it fail to live up to good fortunes of mine?" Mu Chen teased her as he spoke.

When the girl heard this, her face instantly turned red. She playfully hit Mu Chen and the sad expression faded slightly.

Teacher Mo and the others also returned quickly. Then, news of Xue Tu being killed spread out. At this moment, many students were stunned and they stared in surprise at Mu Chen, who had an innocent look on his face.

“Could it be that you were the one that did this?” Tang Qian’Er approached Mu Chen and secretly asked.

“Do you think that it’s possible?” Mu Chen smiled. He knew how unbelievable this situation sounds, yet the truth was just that. If Xue Tu wasn’t gravely injured by the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon and consumed his Spiritual Energy desperately in order to escape, it was basically impossible for Mu Chen to kill him.

“If it’s the others, it might be impossible. However, you are so cunning…Who knows.” Tang Qian’Er playfully smiled. She had a strange confidence towards Mu Chen. Others might believe that it was impossible, but she felt that it might be possible for the boy in front of her.

Mu Chen smiled and stretched his body. While stretching, he was thinking about the ancient copper piece within the Mustard Seed Bracelet. It seems that he must find a time to return back to the Mu Territory. Since this item was valued greatly by the Liu Territory, it must not be a simple item. Therefore, he must let his father personally take a look at it…

Since Xue Tu was killed, Teacher Mo and the others were less alert during the following days. Therefore, they did not end the training earlier and instead let the students hone themselves in the outskirts of the Northern Spiritual Field.

Liu Ming brought his men away on the day after Xue Tu was killed. However, the cold gaze that stared at Mu Chen before he left allowed Mu Chen to know that this matter wasn’t over so easily.

Because of this warning, Mu Chen became more careful during the next few days. Although he did not believe that Liu Ming would dare to attack him while Teacher Mo was guarding him, it

was still best if he was a little bit more cautious.

While he remained vigilant, the half a month training gradually reached the end.

In the camp, there was a lively atmosphere. All the students had faces filled with expectations and excitement. This was because today was the day for grading the results of this training.

Mu Chen stood in front of the East Branch students. Beside him was Tang Qian'Er. The girl had also broken through to the Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase a week ago due to the Jaded Essence Fruit. Right now, her beautiful eyes were filled with light. She wanted to know what kind of results she would get together with Mu Chen after all this time.

In front of everybody, Teacher Mo and Teacher Xi looked around at the many students as they nodded in satisfaction. Compared to half a month ago, the students seemed to have become more capable. It was evident that the training had quite the effect on them.

"As of today, the Northern Spiritual Field Training is officially over. Next up, it is time to grade the results. Each team should bring the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essences that they collected over to us during this period. We will record it and grade the results."

Teacher Mo nodded towards the recording staff member beside him and said: "Let's begin."

Chapter 41 – Cheating

"Team Deng Lei, three Low Rank Middle Phase Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence. Eight Low Rank Initial Phase Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence..."

"Team Liu Yun, two Low Rank Middle Phase Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence..."

"Team Ying Zong..."

The atmosphere within the camp became livelier. Many excited students constantly walked up to the recording staff member and brought out their spoils of war during this period of time.

"Mu Chen, do you think that we'll be able to get first?" Tang Qian'Er's eyes flashed brightly as she watched this lively scene and said hopefully.

"Won't the top three have the same treatment? It's fine if we don't get first place." Mu Chen smiled and said. It was obvious that he did not care about the so-called first place result.

"Although that's true, the only one that could surpass us is probably Liu Mubai. The two brothers have always been staring at you for the past few days. If we lose to them, it would feel a bit uncomfortable." Tang Qian'Er muttered.

When Mu Chen heard this, his eyes looked at a nearby place. At that location, Liu Mubai was currently staring at him coldly and beside him was the charming Hong Ling, who was wearing a red dress. However, she was currently spacing out and would stare at Mu Chen occasionally with her watery eyes.

"These guys..."

Mu Chen let out a faint laugh within his heart. Ever since he killed Xue Tu, the gaze that Liu Mubai used to stare at him was strange. It seems that there was a bit of regret and anger within it. This made Mu Chen sense that Liu Mubai was probably involved

with Xue Tu finding him on that day.

“Mu Chen, it’s our turn.”

Tang Qian’Er suddenly touched Mu Chen and said in a low voice.

“Then you should go. Aren’t you the one holding everything?” Mu Chen faintly smiled as he spoke.

Tang Qian’Er nodded her head. She quickly headed over and many gazes projected over from the surroundings. Mu Chen was currently well-known in this place. The event where he brought Mo Ling and the others to hunt Conflagration Apes had unknowingly spread out. This made the other students a bit shocked. After all, Mu Chen already dared to do something that they would not dare to do when they were still coping with Low Rank Spiritual Beasts one by one.

Moreover, the incident with Xue Tu made Mu Chen even more mysterious. Although they did not believe that Mu Chen could really defeat Xue Tu, who was a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase, by himself, the students, who viewed him as a newcomer before, did not dare reveal these emotions anymore.

Therefore, many people were curious about the results of Mu Chen’s team.

Under many people’s gazes, Tang Qian’Er walked over to the recording staff member and extended her slender hand over. She first pulled out tiny clumps of light and these clumps of light let out a dazzling lustre.

“35 Low Rank Middle Phase Spiritual Beast’s Soul Essence.” The recording staff member glanced at them and was shocked. These Spiritual Beasts should have the strength of a Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase when they were alive. Other students would have to form teams in order to kill Spiritual Beasts at this level of strength. It would be quite an excellent harvest if they were able to obtain one every day, so he did not expect Tang Qian’Er to pull out

this many at once.

Tang Qian'Er's hands extended out again and 15 brighter clumps of light emerged out.

"15 Low Rank Late Phase Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence."

A commotion finally appeared in the surroundings. After all, they would often avoid the Spiritual Beasts who had the strength of a Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase. Mu Chen really was amazing for being able to kill this many.

Tang Qian'Er heard the noise from the surroundings and was slightly proud. She thought for a while before carefully pulling out a flame-like clump of light from her arms again.

Inside the clump of light, a mini-sized flame ape seemed to be howling. The surprising Spiritual Energy fluctuation made many students fall silent.

"This is...a Conflagration Ape King's Soul Essence?!"

Mo Ling, Jiang Li and the others stared in shock at that Soul Essence. They had personally witnessed the Conflagration Ape King and saw Mu Chen returning with the Conflagration Ape King's head. Thinking about it now, the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence should have ended up in his hand.

"That's too crazy. Who can compete with them after they pull out a Conflagration Ape King's Soul Essence?" Mo Ling and the others muttered. This was a Middle Rank Spiritual Beast at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase. How was it possible for students to kill them?

Teacher Mo and Teacher Xi also stared at the Conflagration Ape King's Soul Essence. The latter's eyes was filled with astonishment while the former was completely fine. After all, Teacher Mo had personally watched as Mu Chen got rid of the Conflagration Ape King through rousing a tiger to eat the wolf. [^1]

The recording staff member was stunned for a moment. It was

evident that he did not expect that a Soul Essence of this level would be brought out by a student.

“Middle Rank Late Phase Spiritual Beast’s Soul Essence…One…”

Shortly after, the recording staff member suppressed the surprise within his voice and spoke. But when these words resounded out, it undoubtedly caused an uproar.

“Teacher Xi, I won’t accept this. Mu Chen definitely does not have the ability to hunt down a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase Spiritual Beast. He must be cheating!” An unfriendly voice rang out. The crowd looked and noticed Liu Yang walking over as he spoke with doubt.

“I was there when Mu Chen killed the Conflagration Ape King. Although he did use a little trick, it was still an experience itself. Therefore, it isn’t considered cheating.” Teacher Mo said faintly.

Liu Yang’s face instantly turned red and was bitter when he heard Teacher Mo saying this.

“Ohoho, what Teacher Mo said was right. No matter what means you used, as long as you managed to kill the Spiritual Beasts, that is your own ability.” Liu Mubai gently smiled and said.

His voice resounded out as he walked over. Afterwards, he pulled out many clumps of light from his arms. These were all Spiritual Beast’s Soul Essences. And within these Soul Essences, there were two that were Middle Rank Spiritual Beasts. Their strength had reached the Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase when they were alive.

From a certain point of view, Liu Mubai would have directly won if Mu Chen and Tang Qian’Er had not pulled out the Conflagration Ape King’s Soul Essence to secure their spot. However, there were no ifs. Liu Mubai’s results, the Soul Essences, were slightly dim compared to the flame-like Soul Essence.

When Tang Qian’Er noticed this scene, her beautiful eyes had a

hint of joy flashing by it. She did not like this Liu Mubai pressuring Mu Chen.

Although the joy within Tang Qian'Er's eyes was quite vague, it was still perceived by Liu Mubai. His lips immediately twitched slightly and he strength his hand into his arms again.

Everybody watched him closely. Was Liu Mubai still hiding something?

"Ohoho, I had met two Spiritual Beasts at the Spiritual Rotation Late Phase a while ago. Their strength were greatly weakened so I got lucky.

Liu Mubai smiled slightly and stretched out his hand. Within his hand were two clumps of light. One of them was blue and the other was deep yellow. As these clumps slowly jumped, a powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuation emitted out from within them.

These two Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence had actually reached the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase!

Wow!

A sudden commotion erupted out from the surroundings and incredulous eyes stared at Liu Mubai. He actually killed two Spiritual Beasts that had reached the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase?

"Y...You're cheating!" Tang Qian'Er's face turned completely pale and she immediately let out an angry cry. Although Liu Mubai was pretty strong, it was absolutely impossible for him to be able to kill Spiritual Beasts at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase level. Nobody would believe the excuse that he managed to find two greatly weakened Spiritual Beasts!

"Could it be that you think that you're the only one with tricks? Not every good thing would happen to you."Liu Yang coldly smiled.

Teacher Mo and Teacher Xi watched this scene and frowned. Yet

they did not say anything. Normally, this kind of result was easy to evaluate. They were actually more concerned if the students were able to hone themselves and not the final result.

Tang Qian'Er clenched her hands. It was evident that she was quite furious. However, she had nothing that she could do so she stomped on the ground bitterly.

Mu Chen quietly watched this scene. When Liu Mubai pulled out the two Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence, he glanced at Hong Ling for a moment. The latter's face was obviously unnatural and she immediately evaded his gaze when she noticed it.

"Forget it, since the top three will be able to obtain the Accumulation Elixir."

Mu Chen let out a faint smile and pulled Tang Qian'Er away while she was angry.

"But they're obviously cheating." Tang Qian'Er let out an angry cry. Mu Chen nearly lost his life when he killed the Conflagration Ape King. However, she did not believe that Liu Mubai would be able to obtain two Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase Soul Essences with his own strength.

"Ohoho, it's just a little competition. What's wrong with losing once? You'll still have a chance in the future." Liu Mubai smiled at Mu Chen. However, his smile was cold and provocative.

Mu Chen touched his nose and felt a little helpless. I originally didn't plan on playing these childish games with you, but who told you to jump into it yourself...

"Teacher Mo."

Mu Chen suddenly turned towards Teacher Mo and smiled. He said: "I forgot earlier, but I still have some Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence on me. Can I add onto it now?"

Teacher Mo glanced at Mu Chen. He knew that this little guy was

about to do something that would make people's jaws drop and immediately nodded.

When Mu Chen noticed this, he shrugged towards Liu Mubai, who had a dark expression, and his hands dug around.

Everybody's gazes were concentrated at Mu Chen's body. Is it possible that this guy could still bring out more?

Under everybody's gazes, Mu Chen finally extended his arm. Everyone was stunned as they watched the scene. Five clumps of light rose up from Mu Chen's hand and every single one of them emitted a Spiritual Energy fluctuation that was comparable to the Conflagration Ape King's Soul Essence.

These five clumps of light were all Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase Soul Essences!

Mu Chen scratched his head and stared at the pale—faced Liu Mubai. He let out a faint smile and said: "My apologies, a few days ago, five Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase Middle Rank Spiritual Beasts were duking it out. All five of them were injured due to it, so I went to kill them all."

The crowd all vomited blood. This guy, this reason, was it all done to mock Liu Mubai?

Everybody's gazes turned over and watched as Liu Mubai's handsome face became abnormally ugly.

It was obvious that, this time, Liu Mubai was in trouble.

Chapter 42 – Interception

Because of Liu Mubai and Mu Chen, the evaluation of the results had become somewhat amusing. The Soul Essences that they pulled out were far too powerful for the many students.

Moreover... Whether it was Liu Mubai's two Soul Essence or Mu Chen's five Soul Essence, it was simply impossible. Furthermore, the latter did not even tried to care when he made up the excuse. He was basically telling everybody that he was cheating...

However, many of the people knew that Mu Chen was deliberately doing this against Liu Mubai. This is because it was unclear how Liu Mubai obtained the two Soul Essences.

The recording staff member also stopped and stared helplessly at this scene. Then, he turned over to look at Teacher Mo and Teacher Xi.

"The two of you, stop playing around now."

Teacher Mo helplessly shook his head. Then, he became straight-faced. He waved his hand and said: "Put your items away, this training was to hone your real combat abilities. It was not done so you can show off. Both of you shouldn't get the orders reversed!"

Mu Chen gave off an indifferent smile. He never expected that the five Soul Essences would have any effect in the first place. Moreover, the Soul Essences weren't hunted by him. He found them inside Xue Tu's Mustard Seed Bracelet...

He only did this because he didn't like Liu Mubai going against him and wanted to make him feel disgusted.

Liu Mubai's face was a little pale. It was obvious from Teacher Mo's words that he did not believe that Liu Mubai had hunted the Soul Essence himself personally. Although that was true...He was still played around by Mu Chen.

"The results this time, Mu Chen and Liu Mubai's team are both

tied for first.”

Hearing Teacher Mo’s judgement, the camp instantly became lively. It was evident that Teacher Mo and the others did not want to dwell on this matter. For the first place winners, the top three rewards were the same. Therefore, they were too lazy to pull off the two thorns, Liu Mubai and Mu Chen. [1. A Chinese saying where it meant that they couldn't be bothered to do anything regarding about the situation]

But this made it apparent that Teacher Mo did not believe that the Soul Essences they pulled out in the end were hunted by Liu Mubai or Mu Chen personally.

A few students glanced at each other. They pondered for a moment and decided to judge who the true number one was. After excluding the unreliable Soul Essences, it was evident that the Conflagration Ape King had the most worth. Not only did Mo Ling said and the others that Mu Chen had lured away the Conflagration Ape King, but even Teacher Mo said that he personally witnessed it. Therefore, the Conflagration Ape King’s Soul Essence was definitely related to Mu Chen.

And Mu Chen, who held this Soul Essence, naturally defeated Liu Mubai.

When Liu Mubai heard the surrounding uproar, his eyes turned grim. He knew what everybody was thinking about. Not only was he suppressed by Mu Chen, he was even disgraced.

Tang Qian’Er’s mood was elevated. Although Mu Chen and Liu Mubai were tied this time, many students knew who the true number one was.

Thus, the evaluation of the results came to an end.

Mu Chen and Liu Mubai’s team were tied for number one, Mo Ling’s team made it to number two and the third place was achieved by West Branch’s Chen Tong’s team.

As they saw the results, those that failed let out a regretful sigh.

“Since the results have come out, we should give out the rewards as well.”

Teacher Mo smiled. He flicked his finger and numerous lights passed through his hand as it went towards Mu Chen and the others. It peacefully landed within their hands.

Mu Chen stared at his hand as the light faded away. It revealed a tiny and exquisite jaded box. He gently opened the box and saw a fingernail-sized, jaded-blue elixir quietly lying within it. A powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuation slowly emitted out from it.

This fluctuation was many times stronger than the Jaded Essence Fruit. After all, this elixir could only be formed after refining a variety of Spiritual Medicines together and the medical effects would complement with each other. Therefore, it was naturally better than the Jaded Essence Fruit.

The surrounding crowd stared at the Accumulation Elixir within Mu Chen and the other’s hand and had jealous expressions. It was said that the Accumulation Elixir could speed up the time to reach the Spiritual Rotation Stage.

“Since this training session is over, we will head back to the Northern Spiritual Academy. In addition, we will have a month of vacation time. You can decide whether or not you want to head back home or stay within the academy.” Teacher Mo waved his hand and smiled.

When the young boys and girls heard that there would be a month of vacation, they instantly became excited. They were at the Northern Spiritual Academy for so long and were getting slightly homesick.

Among the joyful atmosphere in the camp, the students began to pack up the camp and reunited with the main force. They left according to the time and headed leisurely back to the Northern

Spiritual Academy.

...

After returning to the Northern Spiritual Academy, Mu Chen could finally relax and did not have to be composed. The Northern Spiritual Academy was considered an extremely safe place within the Northern Spiritual Realm. Even with their strength, the Liu Territory did not dare to cause trouble within the Northern Spiritual Academy's grounds.

He completely rested for a day in order to allow him to gradually stop being on guard. Then, he began to prepare for his trip back to the Mu Territory.

But before heading back to the Mu Territory, Mu Chen went to find Su Ling. He first handed that guy a Jaded Essence Fruit and asked the elated guy to help him do one thing.

On the following day, Mu Chen packed up his things and left the Northern Spiritual Academy. He went straight towards the Northern Spiritual City's Transfer Spiritual Array in order to rush back to the Mu Territory.

Mu Chen walked down a familiar street within the city. The streams of people walking around revealed how bustling and lively the city was. He did not plan on staying here for long. Thus, he calculated a shortcut and headed straight through it.

Mu Chen's body turned around a corner and the street became slightly deserted. A light drizzle began to gently fall down from the sky.

Mu Chen sped up within the drizzle and the cold rain landed on his face. It made him shiver slightly and then he suddenly stopped. His keen perception that he had honed within the Spiritual Road made his skin feel a sense of chill.

Unknowingly, the street had become deserted. Not even a single voice was present at the scene.

Mu Chen's face slowly became serious. He lifted his head and stared at the hazy sky. He could vaguely see a few lights flashing as if there were some sort of subtle fluctuation within the air.

"Consciousness Mesmerizing Array..."

Mu Chen clenched his hands tightly. His pitched-black eyes became exceptionally sharp. Soon after, he raised his head and stared in front. A cold voice emitted out from him: "You actually dare to arrange a Consciousness Mesmerizing Array against a Northern Spiritual Academy's student in the Northern Spiritual City. You really have guts!"

However, not a single response came out from the entire street.

"Are you a mouse? When did the Liu Territory people started to enjoy hiding the head and show the tail[2. A Chinese saying where it meant that they were acting secretly]?" Mu Chen let out a cold sneer. He could not think of anyone aside from the Liu Territory, who would attack him before he reached the Mu Territory.

"You are Mu Chen?"

A faint voice finally came from in front. Mu Chen lifted his head suddenly and saw a figure with an umbrella gradually appeared within his vision.

"Hand the item over to me."

Chapter 43 – The Person within the Rain, Ji Zong

"Hand the item over to me."

Under the drizzle, Mu Chen's body tensed up. His eyes were firmly fixed in front. From that place, a figure that was holding an umbrella gradually appeared. It was a slightly skinny man with a feminine face. His thin lips were like blades and carried a chilling sense.

Mu Chen stared at this unfamiliar feminine man, yet he felt a dangerous feeling fill his heart. His eyes narrowed as he said: "You shouldn't be a person from the Liu Territory, right? Why are you finding me?"

"Ohoho, I am, indeed, not a person from the Liu Territory. However, someone paid a considerable price in order for me to take action." The feminine man gently smiled and softly turned his umbrella within his hand. He put his thin lips together as he said: "You can call me Ji Zong."

"Ji Zong? The Person within the Rain, Ji Zong?!" Mu Chen's eyes narrowed. This name was as prominent as Xue Tu in the Northern Spiritual Realm. Of course, this does not mean that Ji Zong was stronger than Xue Tu. His own strength should be at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase. However, he holds another identity that others are fearful of.

He was a Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master.

The Great Thousand World was a place where numerous planes intersect. It was so vast that even the super powerhouses, Sovereigns, would consider themselves as exceptionally small beings. Therefore, the Great Thousand World was dazzling and splintered a place where many would contend for hegemony.

Spiritual Array Master, Spiritual Artifact Master…Aside from the

orthodox Spiritual Energy cultivation, these special professions were extremely dazzling. Moreover, these professions required a demanding amount of talent. Even individuals, who were talented in the path of cultivation, may not necessarily be able to walk smoothly on these paths. Instead, individuals, who may be mediocre in the path of cultivation, may show surprising talent in these paths. The heavens would close a window for you, then, it must open another one for you. This phrase was suitable used in the Great Thousand World.

Overall, the Spiritual Array Master was a highly regarded profession. This is because many forces require the help of the Spiritual Array Master. Whether it was creating a defensive battle array or an offensive battle array, or even maybe an array that is beneficial to cultivation, these would require Spiritual Array Masters. Therefore, a high rank Spiritual Array Master was considered extremely desirable in the Great Thousand World.

Moreover, the Spiritual Array Masters, who had achieved a certain degree of level in Arrays, would be able to instantly arrange an Array and use the might of the Array to shake the heavens and earth.

Ji Zong, who was in front of Mu Chen, was able to become well-known in the Northern Spiritual Realm because he was a Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master. His Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase's strength had no relationship to his fame.

A Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master was extremely frightening if they were in an array. They would not be inferior to a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase powerhouse.

"Although you are an Northern Spiritual Academy student, I never expected you to know my title." Ji Zong smiled and said. His voice was extremely feminine, just like a woman. However, he was genuinely a man. This contrast made others feel highly uncomfortable.

“If you dare attack in the Northern Spiritual City, you would have committed a taboo from the Northern Spiritual Academy. If they were to know this, you probably would not have a good ending.” Mu Chen’s eyes flashed while he spoke.

“This is why I worked hard to arrange a ‘Consciousness Mesmerizing Array’. Nobody on the outside will know about the events that happened here.” Ji Zong pointed at the empty street as he spoke.

“So you should just hand over the item obediently. I don’t want to kill you, because Mu Feng wouldn’t become crazy due to it. Wouldn’t it be great if we were to act friendly with each other?”

Mu Chen’s eyes turned cold. The Spiritual Energy within his body quietly surged out. Although he was caught under Ji Zong’s Array, he was not the type of person who would easily compromise with others.

“You truly aren’t obedient after all”

Ji Zong smiled and flicked his finger. The rain within the sky suddenly began to gather and a dense Spiritual Energy fluctuation emitted quietly out from it.

“You are quite fortunate to be able to personally experience my “Spiritual Rain Array”.”

Ji Zong’s sleeves waved and the rain within the sky suddenly poured down. It was like a torrent of blades as it enveloped Mu Chen.

When Mu Chen saw such an amazing offensive, he was a little surprised. The Spiritual Array Master was definitely powerful. This offense would be quite binding even for a Spiritual Rotation Stage user.

“Condensing Light!”

Mu Chen hurriedly retreated and the dark black Spiritual Energy within his bdoy surged out. It seemed to form a thin black light

screen, which protected the body behind it.

Bang Bang Bang!

The steady stream of rain landed on the black light screen and the light screen instantly began to tremble. Ripples quickly spread out from it and it was obvious that it was quite unstable.

After all, Mu Chen was only a Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase. It was extremely difficult for Mu Chen to resist the power of the array activated by Ji Zong.

“I can’t let this drag on, I must break this array!”

Mu Chen stared at the rapidly collapsing black light and an idea quickly flashed through his mind. With his current strength, he was not a match for Ji Zong in a direct confrontation. His only way out was to break the Array. Once the array was destroyed, it was like snapping a tooth off a tiger for Ji Zong. The threat would be greatly reduced and he would not dare to attack within the Northern Spiritual City after losing the array’s cover.

However, how would it be easy to break a Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master’s arranged array?

Mu Chen took a deep breath. He gradually calmed down during this dangerous and critical moment as his eyes shimmered. Ji Zong was only a Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master. With this level of strength, it was obvious that he could not control the array with just his heart. In other words, he would require the help of a foreign object in order to cooperate and control the array.

This foreign object was the weakness of the Spiritual Array Master. They must put it at a place where they could easily protect it.

Mu Chen’s eye quietly swept through Ji Zong’s body. After a moment, he focused at the umbrella that Ji Zong was holding...

His strength was far inferior to Ji Zong. Moreover, Ji Zong was controlling an array. The fortunate thing was that Ji Zong also

knew this point, so...he would underestimate him. This would soon become Mu Chen's best chance.

"Kacha!"

The black light that was formed by Mu Chen's Spiritual Energy finally shattered completely. The rain passed through his face and left trails of blood. However, Mu Chen's eyebrows also became like swords at this moment. He stomped on the ground as the rain splashed and charged straight towards Ji Zong like a cheetah.

"What an aggressive young boy." Ji Zong saw this and let out a faint smile. He immediately waved his hand and the rain condensed together. It actually formed a spear of rain as it stabbed violently towards Mu Chen.

Mu Chen's body lunged forward and his hand pushed out on the ground. His body jumped up and he dodged the sharp rain spear like a nimble monkey.

"Pretty good skill."

Ji Zong complimented him as he watched. However, he began to attack more viciously. His hands swept through the air and numerous spears of rain were formed. All of them drew a tricky arc as they enveloped Mu Chen's vital areas.

Mu Chen dodged agilely, but a spear still managed to sweep through his chest. It tore apart his clothes and left a trail of blood. Fresh blood immediately surged out from that location.

However, he did not care about the fresh blood on his chest. He charged forward a few steps and finally approached Ji Zong. When the latter noticed this, he narrowed his eyes and said in his feminine voice: "You actually know that you should charge directly at the owner of the array. Boy, you really have a keen eyesight. However, although the idea was correct, you still overestimate your own strength and underestimated the gap between the two of us."

Ji Zong faintly smiled and gripped his hand. The rain began to converge at his palms and directly formed a liquid-like rain long sword. A powerful Spiritual Energy flowed out from the long sword.

Mu Chen clenched his hands into fists and a black light flowed out. Two black light seals immediately emerged while carrying an overbearing Spiritual Energy fluctuation and he did not hesitate as he punched fiercely towards Ji Zong.

The fist howled through the air and actually tore apart the rain. The howling sounds of the winds breaking made Ji Zong shudder. It was evident that he did not expect that Mu Chen would be able to demonstrate such a fierce offensive with his Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase strength.

If he wasn't a Spiritual Array Master and was only a normal Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase person, it would probably be difficult for him to catch Mu Chen, and yet...

"That's still not enough!"

Ji Zong's eyes turned cold. The water sword in his hand trembled and let out a humming sound. The water sword surged out like an anaconda and heavily collided with the two black light seals. A massive and violent Spiritual Energy exploded out!

As the Spiritual Energy exploded out, Mu Chen's body was forced back a bit. Even his two Limitless Death Seals were gradually forced back. Although Ji Zong was only at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase, he was still able to compete against Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase with the help of the Spiritual Array. It was apparent that Mu Chen would not be able to obtain the upper hand in a direct confrontation.

Mu Cheng gritted his teeth as he stared at the two Limitless Death Seals being forced back. He, then, glanced at the razor sharp sword tip. A chill directly pierced through his heart and made him skin feel numb.

“Take this!”

A sense of threat enveloped his heart and Mu Chen glared fiercely. He let out a violent cry and it resounded within his heart. At the same time, the Great Pagoda Art began to circulate.

Through testing it a few times, he already understood that there was a hidden power within his body. However, this power could only be activated when he was in a life-and-death situation.

And now…It was the best opportunity.

“Come out!”

Mu Chen’s cry resounded and echoed within his heart. Sudden lights lit up on the surface of Mu Chen’s body. A faintly discernible tower of light emitted its brightness, which penetrated through Mu Chen’s skin, as it vaguely appeared within his body.

Chapter 44 – Breaking the Array

Buzz!

The moment the faintly discernible light tower appeared within Mu Chen's body, a special fluctuation gushed out.

This fluctuation was not particularly powerful, but it caused Ji Zong to tremble when it reached him. His eyes seemed to have instantly entered a trance.

Hmph.

However, this trance only lasted a moment and Ji Zong quickly recovered from it as he let out a cold hmph. This Mu Chen was definitely different from the ordinary youths. No wonder the Liu Territory paid him to come. However, no matter how much he struggled, it was not easy for him to make up for the humongous gap between them.

Swish!

Ji Zong's arm trembled and the longsword formed from the rain instantly expanded. A violent Spiritual Energy surged out and forcibly shattered the two Limitless Death Seals as it stabbed towards Mu Chen's shoulder with lightning speed.

Don!

Ji Zong's attack was extremely vicious and it passed through the open gaps of the two Limitless Death Seals. Mu Chen was late in defending due to this and the rain longsword pierced into Mu Chen's shoulder. But the moment it made contact with Mu Chen, the vague light tower began to tremble within Mu Chen's body and caused the rain longsword to stop. Thus, the sword tip was the only part that stabbed into Mu Chen's shoulder and allowed the blood to flow out.

"Shuaa!"

Ji Zong watched the scene and let out a faint smile while thinking that the situation was already over. His eyes stared at the boy. Yet, under the drizzle, the pair of black eyes stared at him like a deep black hole. From those eyes, a wordless sense of danger unexpectedly filled Ji Zong's heart.

Shuaa!

The boy in front of him did not care about the longsword that stabbed into his shoulder. The pain didn't even manage to make his eyebrows tremble. His hands shook and a cold light flashed by. In the end, the umbrella that Ji Zong was holding in his left hand flew away under his astonished eyes.

The umbrella landed on the ground powerlessly and caused a little splash. Ji Zong stared as he watched the scene before turning around to look at the boy, who retreated backwards. Blood constantly flowed out from the boy's shoulders.

"You actually saw through it..."

Ji Zong's mouth muttered and his face became serious. The boy in front of him had actually managed to notice the flaw of his array. Not only did he make him tremble, the boy had the courage to use his own body as a lure in order to make him reveal an opening. Moreover, he even managed to take advantage of this opening and cut apart his umbrella without any hesitation. At the same time...It also cut apart his connection to the array.

"You lost."

Mu Chen said to Ji Zong as he grinned and laughed.

Amongst his laughter, the rain suddenly stopped. The surrounding air seemed to flash and Mu Chen began to hear vague human sounds entering his ear.

It was still the same street. However, there were no traces of rain on the ground. The sun even shone brightly in the sky and in the distance, a few figures began to emerge.

It was evident that the “Consciousness Mesmerizing Array” that he had enveloped this place with had been destroyed.

Mu Chen stared in front of him. At that place, Ji Zong was examining him with a serious expression. Then, he let out a laugh as he said: “You’re quite an amazing boy. I never expected that Mu Feng would actually have such an excellent son.”

Mu Chen smiled, but his eyes remained on alert: “Next up, do you still plan on attacking?”

“The array has already been destroyed. I can’t kill you know. The following events have nothing to do with me, but you should behave yourself from now on.” Ji Zong said as he let out a faint smile and stared deeply at Mu Chen. After he finished speaking, he turned around immediately and slowly walked away.

Mu Chen’s eyes remained fixed on Ji Zong as he disappeared in the distance. However, his eyebrows were still tense. This was because the sense of danger he was feeling did not completely disappear. It was evident that the Liu Territory had made up their mind and did not plan on letting him return safely to the Mu Territory.

“This Ji Zong, he really is useless!”

Juts when Mu Chen surveyed the surroundings vigilantly, two cold gazes penetrated through the gap of a certain street and watched the young boy’s figure.

“Third Uncle, what should we do now?” A handsome boy beside the middle-aged man asked. From the familiar appearance, it was obvious that it was Liu Mubai and the middle-aged man was Liu Ming.

“Hmph, it was lucky that I never fully trusted that Ji Zong. I only wanted to use him to test Mu Chen. Naturally, if he managed to kill him, it would be the best. However, since he failed, we will have to do it ourselves!

Liu Ming let out a cold hmph and said: “No matter what, we cannot let Mu Chen bring that item back to the Mu Territory. Otherwise, the Liu Territory’s long-prepared plan will be disrupted!”

“However, if you were to attack him now, you would probably cause the people from Northern Spiritual Academy to come.” Liu Mubai said softly.

“Then we must get rid of him quickly.”

Liu Ming’s eyes flashed. He gestured with his hand and ten figures appeared behind him. These people were covered with an ominous aura and judging from the Spiritual Energy fluctuation, they were all people at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase!

“Move in!”

“Yes!”

The ten figures responded quietly and their bodies flashed as they disappeared into the darkness.

On the street, Mu Chen, who was glancing at his surroundings, focused his gaze in front of him. He saw ten figures suddenly appearing and surrounding him.

“Ten Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase experts.”

Mu Chen noticed the ten figures and his heart trembled slightly. The Liu Territory really wanted to kill him. Although Liu Ming and the others did not dare to personally attack since it was the Northern Spiritual City, they still prepared a big meal for him.

“I must not fight against them, I must escape from this situation!”

This idea flowed through Mu Chen’s mind and he hurriedly backed away. No matter how strong he was, he did not believe that he would be able to defeat ten Spiritual Rotation Stage veterans by himself.

Swish!

However, these ten individuals charged straight at him. Their Spiritual Energy erupted out and a killing intent emitted out from them. Because of this commotion, a ruckus appeared in the distance. It was evident that the commotion here was discovered.

“Damn it!”

Mu Chen cursed loudly within his heart when he noticed how swift these fellows were. The Spiritual Energy within his body gushed out and the two black lights flashed on his arm. It was apparent that he was planning to take a risk and desperately stall for time.

“Swish!”

The ten figures quickly approached and they were highly in sync. When they split up, they had already formed an encirclement and completely blocked all routes of escape for Mu Chen. Two sharp longswords directly rushed towards Mu Chen’s vital points.

Mu Chen’s eyes firmly gazed at the violent attacks and the dark black light on his arms became even denser. However, just when he was about to take a step forward and attack first, a sudden cry rang out. It was like thunder as it resounded out: “Just where did these gangsters come from, they actually dared to hurt out Mu Territory’s Little Lord. Die!”

Accompanying the thundering sound, a figure swept over like lightning. In a few seconds, he appeared in front of Mu Chen and waved his sleeves around. A powerful Spiritual flowed out like a stream and the ten figures flew backwards as they were all gravely injured.

“Uncle Zhou!”

Mu Chen stared at the familiar figure in front of his eyes and was instantly overjoyed. They have finally arrived.

The thin, middle-aged man in front of Mu Chen was Zhou Ye. At

this moment, his hawk-like eyes were fixed at the ten figures that were blasted away. However, he did not pursue them and remained beside Mu Chen in order to protect him.

“Go and kill them all for me!”

Zhou Ye stared coldly at the ten figures and immediately let out a cry. A response quickly erupted out from nearby and dozens of figures flew over quickly towards the ten figures.

Seeing this, the ten figures gritted their teeth and swung their sleeves. Smoke began to appear and it concealed their body as they retreated.

“Bastard!”

From a certain location on that street, Liu Ming watched as Zhou Ye suddenly appeared. He instantly became furious and his face became ashen. He didn’t expect that Zhou Ye would suddenly appear and deal with the situation right when it was a critical moment for Mu Chen!

“Third Uncle?” Liu Mubai frowned. He did not expect that the successive plans would have failed.

“Return back to the Liu Territory and tell everything to your father. I want to see whether or not Mu Feng has the guts to interfere with the Liu Territory’s plans!” Liu Ming said sullenly and immediately waved his hand. He turned around and left.

Liu Mubai could only sigh helplessly when he saw this. His gaze passed through the gap and watched as the people from the Mu Territory protected Mu Chen. A cold chill passed through his eyes. Lucky boy, consider yourself lucky this time. Because, next time, I probably won’t give you a chance.

Chapter 45 – Nine Netherbird

On the street, Zhou Ye was in front as he protected Mu Chen. His hawk-like eyes glanced around at the surroundings. After a while, his body gradually relaxed as he could feel the killing intent beginning fading away.

Shuaa!

Dozens of figures suddenly appeared and surrounded Mu Chen and Zhou Ye: “Little Lord, Master Zhou.”

“Little Mu, are you alright?” After feeling the killing intent disappear, Zhou Ye was relieved and asked Mu Chen as he turned around.

Mu Chen shook his head with a smile and said: “It was great that Uncle Zhou arrived quickly.”

“What happened? I received a message that Su Ling brought over and immediately rushed to the Northern Spiritual City. Just who were those people? Why would they attack you?!” Zhou Ye’s face was a bit grim. Mu Chen was the Little Lord of the Mu Territory. Just which kind of people would be so courageous to actually attack him in the Northern Spiritual City?

“It’s probably the men from the Liu Territory.” Mu Chen said.

“Liu Territory?” Zhou Ye’s face changed. He immediately asked suspiciously: “Although we aren’t in friendly terms with the Liu Territory, we were always fairly restrained towards each other. Why would they…”

“Uncle Zhou, we’ll talk about this after we get back to the Mu Territory. I’ve ruined something important of theirs.” Mu Chen said with a slight smile. The commotion here wasn’t small. Thus, the Northern Spiritual Academy people would soon be here. Although Mu Chen knew that it was done by the Liu Territory, he did not have any evidence to prove it. Therefore, this matter could

only be dropped.

“Yes.”

When Zhou Ye heard this, he nodded and waved his palms. He brought Mu Chen with him directly to the Transfer Spiritual Array. With Zhou Ye’s protection, no trouble occurred. It seems that the Liu Territory understood that the matter of killing Mu Chen was impossible now and temporarily gave up.

…

Mu City, Within the Mu Estate.

“The Liu Territory attacked Little Mu?”

Inside the living room, Mu Feng’s smiling face instantly turned cold as he heard Zhou Ye talk about it. He fiercely stood up:

“What are the people of the Liu Territory thinking of doing? Do they want to completely rip open their faces to the Mu Territory?!”

“Right now, they probably don’t want to completely rip open their faces. Otherwise, they wouldn’t have invited Ji Zong first. Only, after that, they had no choice but to attack me by themselves.” Mu Chen smiled beside him.

“Ji Zong?” Mu Feng’s face sank. Beside him, Zhou Ye also frowned and asked: “He also attacked you?”

“Yes, I was caught in the array that he arranged. However, I broke through it later on and he left.” Mu Chen nodded.

“You broke his array?” Mu Feng and Zhou Ye were stunned. They looked in surprise at Mu Chen. Naturally, they have heard of Ji Zong’s name. Although his Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase strength wasn’t much, his identity of a Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master was still quite troubling. However, the array that he formed was actually broken by Mu Chen?

“Anyhow, I am still someone at the Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase, okay?” Mu Chen laughed when he saw their surprised

expressions.

“Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase?” Mu Feng was surprised again. He nodded immediately with satisfaction. Although Mu Chen had lost a year of time for cultivation due to the Spiritual Road, his talents were definitely great. Right now, he was catching up.

“So what if you’re at the Spiritual Movement Stage. If Ji Zong was to activate his array, even a person at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase would find it tricky. You were able to break his array with your strength?” Even though Mu Feng was quite pleased, he still scolded Mu Chen immediately when he noticed his proud face.

“Ji Zong probably thought the same way as you, dad. That’s why I was able to break through his array.” Mu Chen pouted and said.

“It seems that Mu Chen utilized Ji Zong’s thoughts of underestimating him.” Zhou Ye smiled and said: “This wisdom is definitely hard to have.”

“Just what part of this boy is praiseworthy?” Mu Feng smiled for a while before turning serious again. He said: “Why would the Liu Territory attack you? And they even chose to do it in the Northern Spiritual City. If they were discovered, they would incite the rage of the Northern Spiritual Academy. With their usual style of doing things, they would not commit such a reckless act. Moreover, the spots for the “Five Great Academies” are coming soon. It isn’t wise of them to offend the Northern Spiritual Academy now.”

“A while back, the Blood Slaughter Group seemed to have stolen something from the Liu Territory. Then, they were hunted down by the Liu Territory all the way to the Northern Spiritual Field...” Mu Chen carefully explained the events that he had met in the Northern Spiritual Field to them. He then revealed the Mustard Seed Bracelet on his wrist and said: “This item was stolen by me and they probably know it. Therefore, they were afraid of me

bringing it back to the Mu Territory, so that's why they planned on attacking me in the Northern Spiritual City."

"Oh?"

Mu Feng and Zhou Ye exchanged glances with each other. A hint of seriousness could be seen from their eyes. They had, in fact, heard of the matter between the Blood Slaughter Group and Liu Territory, but they weren't too concerned about it. However, it seems that it wasn't that simple now since the Liu Territory valued it that greatly.

"Although the Mustard Seed Bracelet is quite valuable, it isn't something that the Liu Territory would place a high value on it." Mu Feng smiled and said: "Is it something inside of it?"

Mu Chen nodded. He gripped his hand as an ancient copper piece appeared and said: "It's probably this item. However, I've taken a look at it but I didn't find anything special."

Mu Feng received the old copper piece from Mu Chen's hand and his palm brushed pass the engravings. He pondered for a moment before flipping it over. When he noticed the black giant bird engraving, he paused for a while as if he was thinking about something.

"This thing...It seems a little like..." Mu Feng muttered and his eyes narrowed: "It seems a little like...the Nine Netherbird?"

"Nine Netherbird?" Zhou Ye was shocked and said: "It can't be?"

"Nine Netherbird..." Mu Chen was also astonished. He could not help but ask: "Is it the Nine Netherbird that is ranked 11th on the Myriad Beast Record's Earth Ranking?"

"Judging from the appearance, it is quite similar." Mu Feng nodded. He thought for a moment and gripped his palm tightly. A blazing light gathered in his hand and finally formed into a palm-sized Fire Bird. The Fire Bird's eyes were extremely sharp. Its wings were like a dragon's wings and fiery red dragon scales

covered its razor sharp talons. A powerful, imposing manner emitted out from it.

“Is this the Dragonfire Bird’s Soul Essence that dad ingested?” Mu Chen looked curiously at the exquisite fire bird. This was a true Heavenly Beast. It was ranked 85th on the Myriad Beast Record’s Earth Ranking. It was many times stronger compared to Teacher Mo’s Golden Thunderwolf and Teacher Xi’s Rockturtle Lion.

The Dragonfire Bird stood on Mu Feng’s palm and gently approached the ancient copper piece. When it saw the engraving of the black bird, fear appeared in its sharp eyes. It retreated back a step as if it was extremely terrified and fearful of it.

“To be able to make the Dragonfire Bird this afraid and with this appearance, it is probably the Nine Netherbird.” Mu Feng finally confirmed it when he saw this scene.

Nine Netherbird. It was born in the Northern Lands. Its wings could cover the mountains and the netherworld light could devour the sun and the moon.

This phrase that described the Nine Netherbird flowed into Mu Chen’s heart. He could not resist in smacking his lips. This power was rather hard to imagine.

“If it truly is the Nine Netherbird, it’s no wonder that the Liu Territory would think so highly of it…If a Spirit Stage powerhouse was to obtain the Nine Netherbird’s Soul Essence, their strength… would probably become quite insane.” Mu Feng exclaimed.

“However, if it is truly a Nine Netherbird, would the Liu Territory really be qualified to challenge it with their strength?” Mu Chen frowned. If it was truly a Nine Netherbird, it was impossible for the Liu Territory to hunt it even with all their strength.

“The secret behind that should be within this copper piece.”

Mu Feng let out a faint smile and a powerful Spiritual Energy

gushed out suddenly. It flowed into the copper piece like a flood. Mu Chen had also done this action before, however, there was no response.

However, it did not mean that Mu Feng would fail when Mu Chen failed. After all, Mu Feng was a genuine Spirit Stage Late Phase powerhouse. He was considered as one of the strongest within the entire Northern Spiritual Realm.

The powerful Spiritual Energy gushed in and the silent copper piece finally made a commotion. The light was released out and formed a screen of light in mid-air.

A vast black forest seemed to appear within the light screen. At the same time, a humongous black bird was currently crying to the sky in the depths of the barren hills and turbulent waters. An overwhelming black light swept out from its body. Moreover, the black light seemed to enshroud that location and even covered up the lights.

The black light became denser and finally turned into a black flame as it wrapped the bird with it. The sounds of its cry became more and more shrill. Then, the scene changed. The giant black bird's body was rapidly turning small within the dense flame. With a final sorrowful cry, it turned into a giant black egg and landed in the depths of the black forest.

The scene ended at this location. Then, a complex route appeared. It seemed to be a map.

"It is indeed the Nine Netherbird..."

Mu Feng took a deep breath and his eyes could not conceal his shock as he said: "And this Nine Netherbird was actually attempting to evolve...However, it failed..."

Mu Chen's eyes jumped. The Nine Netherbird was already quite amazing. If it were to evolve further, then wouldn't it qualify in the Myriad Beast Record's Heaven Ranking?

“It seems that the Liu Territory is really planning to head for the Nine Netherbird. We must not let them get it.” Zhou Ye’s face turned serious as he spoke. If the Liu Territory managed to obtain the Nine Netherbird, their strength would definitely increase. At that moment, they probably wouldn’t endure the Mu Territory anymore with their personality.

“Then, we must seize it as well!”

Mu Chen’s eyes flashed. His eyes remained firmly fixed on the ancient copper piece.

“Dad, what place is this? It seems quite familiar.”

When Mu Feng heard this, he let out a gentle smile and said with sharp eyes.

“Of course it’s familiar. This is because it is within the Northern Spiritual Realm. This place should probably be the Northern Spiritual Realm’s Black Eerie Swamp…”

Chapter 46 – Seal

"Black Eerie Swamp?"

Mu Chen was slightly surprised when he heard this name. He immediately smacked his lips. So it was actually in that place.

Black Eerie Swamp, it is an extremely vicious land within the Northern Spiritual Realm. However, it is quite different than the Northern Spiritual Field. At least in the Northern Spiritual Field, Adventurer Teams would often head there. As for the Black Eerie Swamp, it is almost a forbidden land within the Northern Spiritual Realm. During these few years, nine out of ten individuals would become fertilizer for that land. As for the remaining ones, they would be able to make it out. Yet, he would become out of his mind and require an extremely long period of time to recover from it. Even when they come out, they would still be afraid when they hear the name, Black Eerie Swamp.

"The Black Eerie Swamp isn't easy to venture in." Zhou Ye frowned. It was obvious that he was quite knowledgeable about the Black Eerie Swamp. This swamp was known to be extremely dangerous. The slightest mistake could take away their life.

"If it is for the Nine Netherbird, it is worth risking it. And...If we really let the Liu Territory obtain the Nine Netherbird, it would be quite troublesome for us." Mu Feng muttered.

Zhou Ye nodded. The Nine Netherbird was just too powerful. If it was during its prime, nobody in the Northern Spiritual Realm would even dare to hunt it. But based on what was seen, the Nine Netherbird probably failed its evolution and was in the period where it was weakest. Therefore, the Liu Territory would not give up on this opportunity.

"What should we do?"

Mu Feng thought for a while and said: "Let's first send out some

decent men to monitor the Liu Territory's movements. This matter must be kept secret; otherwise many forces would be jealous when this information spreads out. Thus, the Liu Territory would not dare to act on a grand scale publicly and would only do this in secret."

"The Black Eerie Swamp has a deathly miasma enshrouding it back then. It will only weaken during the height of summer every year. From what I see, that day isn't far away. If the Liu Territory is to move, they will definitely select that time." Zhou Ye said.

Mu Feng also nodded his head and muttered: "We should also secretly recruit for men. Once there's an opportunity, we will also take action. Even if we fail to obtain the Nine Netherbird, we must make the Liu Territory return empty-handed!"

With the hostile relationship that the Liu Territory and Mu Territory harbored, it would be a good thing if they managed to stop the other side from doing as they wish.

"Okay, I'll go prepare right now." Zhou Ye has always done things swiftly. He immediately replied and darted away without the slightest indecisiveness.

Mu Feng watched Zhou Ye's departing figure and smiled. Then, he patted Mu Chen's head: "You brat, you sure brought back a big gift to your father."

"Dad, bring me to the Black Eerie Swamp as well." Mu Chen smiled and said.

"That place is too dangerous; it's not suitable for you." Mu Feng frowned.

"I came out of the Spiritual Road, okay? Dad, the situation there probably isn't any better than the Black Eerie Swamp." Mu Chen gently smiled and said.

Mu Feng hesitated before carefully looking at the handsome face in front of him. Although it held a slight trace of immature due to

his age, it already has an unswerving determination in it. He was slightly dazed. The boy that he had single-handedly brought up has unknowingly grown a lot.

“Since you want to do this, then you can follow us. However, you have to remember not to act reckless.” Mu Feng smiled and was somewhat pleased. This son of his will probably soon surpass him, his father.

Mu Chen nodded. Then he smiled as he stared at Mu Feng and said: “Also, there is something that I have to trouble dad to solve my doubts.”

“What?” Mu Feng asked, puzzled.

“It’s about me.” Mu Chen helplessly shrugged his shoulders and said: “Ever since I trained in the Great Pagoda Art, I felt that something seems to be hiding within my body. Dad, can you explain it to me?”

Mu Feng was stunned and immediately let out a smile: “There was something like this?”

Mu Chen only stared at Mu Feng. Based on his understanding of his father, the more he acted calm, the more complicated the matter was.

“Dad, you can’t keep hiding it from me forever, right?”

Mu Feng looked at the serious and persistent eyes of Mu Chen. His smile gradually faded away after a while and he revealed a bitter smile: “I never thought that you would notice it this quickly. I originally thought that it would take at least another 6 months.”

“It’s useless for you to ask me about that since it was done by your mother.”

“That’s within my expectations. With dad’s strength, it’s probably impossible for you to do this.” Mu Chen was not surprised at this answer and smiled.

“Damn brat, you really want to get spanked!” Mu Feng’s face turned red. He was actually looked down by his own son.

“What did mother do to me?” Mu Chen lowered his head and stared at his own body as he asked in confusion.

“Because you are your mother’s own son, your body possesses her blood. Therefore, she arranged a sealing array in your body when you were born. This is also why you cannot detect your Spiritual Pulse after all these years.” Mu Feng explained.

“My Spiritual Pulse was sealed by my mother? Why?” Mu Chen muttered in surprise. He had always thought that he did not possess an Spiritual Pulse, he never imagine that...it was actually sealed by his mother.

“There are two reasons. Although a Spiritual Pulse can improve your cultivation speed rapidly, it would sometimes become an obstacle if you are too much of a genius. In order for you to genuinely become a powerhouse, you must also possess a heart that matches this talent. In this world, there are many geniuses, but how many of them could be truly viewed as a hero amongst them?

Mu Feng smiled faintly and said: “You have also heard about the Heavenly Sovereigns that broke through the shackles of the Lower Planes and entered the Great Thousand World. These people are truly powerful individuals. They possess an unshakable resolve and for you to be able to rival them, you must also have such disposition.”

“Then what about the other reason?” Mu Chen nodded and asked.

“As for the other...” Mu Feng gave a wry smile and spoke: “If your mother did not seal your Spiritual Pulse, the two of us would probably be quite troubled. You might not be able to smoothly grow up.”

Mu Chen frowned: “What do you mean?”

“I told you what I should have told you. But something, you don’t have to know now.” Mu Feng shook his head and seriously looked at Mu Chen: “You only need to know that your mother did this to protect you.”

“And…You cannot act reckless. Your mother paid a great price for you, so you must not touch the seal within your body before you have sufficient strength!” Mu Feng’s expression suddenly became strict.”

“Mother…”

Mu Chen muttered to himself. His hand gently touched his chest. This word seemed to emit a warm feeling from within his soul. Although he had never seen the gentle figure within his heart, he still felt a sense of familiarity due to the blood that they shared.

Just what happened when he was young that separated their family? It made him, when he was still an infant, unable to see the gentle figure clearly.

“When you become strong, you will naturally know everything.” Mu Feng patted Mu Chen’s shoulder and said.

“Then, when will I be able to remove the seal within my body?” Mu Chen hesitated for a moment and asked.

“Heh, remove? How could it be that easy to remove the seal that your mother has left behind? However, she has already handed the key over to you. As long as you have the ability, you will be able to gradually remove it.” Mu Feng smiled.

“Key?” Mu Chen’s eyes flashed: “Is it the Great Pagoda Art?”

“Yes.” Mu Feng nodded and said: “When your Great Pagoda Art reaches the Towerform Level, you should be able to remove the seal set up by your mother.”

“Towerform…”

Mu Chen mouth twitched. He had personally experienced how difficult it was to train in the Great Pagoda Art. He really did not know how long it'll take for him to reach the highest level.

"Moreover, you should also try to understand about Spiritual Arrays during this period of time. I'll find a Spiritual Array Master to teach you a bit." Mu Feng suddenly said.

"Spiritual Array?" Mu Chen was stunned, he immediately rubbed his head and said: "I never learnt it. Dad, you want me to be a Spiritual Array Master as well?"

"Your mother was extremely accomplished in it. As her son, you must know a bit, right? Otherwise, your mother would blame me for not teaching you properly when you two meet. Therefore, you should work hard." Mu Feng smiled as he rubbed Mu Chen's head. Then, he slowly walked out of the living room and left behind a slightly depressed Mu Chen. Just how would it be easy to be a Spiritual Array Master?

His mother knew how to do everything. But if she was this brilliant, why would she fancy dad...

Chapter 47 – Spiritual Array

Apparently it was not a joke when Mu Feng said that he wanted Mu Chen to learn about Spiritual Arrays. Therefore, Mu Chen met the old Spiritual Array Master that Mu Feng brought back on the following day.

It was a somewhat skinny, middle-aged man dressed in white robes. He looked extremely strict and his face did not have the slightest smile. Although he was Mu Feng's subordinate, he did not show much respect or modesty when he saw Mu Feng. Instead, he maintained neither an humble nor arrogant expression.

"This is Mister Wen Ling, he will teach you the basic knowledge of Spiritual Arrays from now on." Mu Feng pointed at the middle-aged man beside him and directed a smile towards Mu Chen.

"Mu Chen meets Mister Wen Ling." Mu Chen cuffed his hand to salute. He did not display the appearance of a Little Lord and looked extremely humble.

The middle-aged man named Wen Ling gently nodded. Yet he did not say any words.

"Boy, you have to work hard, as Mister Wen Ling is famous for being strict. He will not teach you if you're not talented enough, even if you're my son. Do you understand?" Mu Feng cautioned him. Wen Ling could be considered as someone that he invited to the Mu Territory. Although he was only a Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master, there were no more than ten of them within the Mu Territory. Moreover, Wen Ling was considered to be the strongest one.

Mu Chen nodded his head. The Northern Spiritual Academy did not have a course regarding about Spiritual Arrays and they did not specially invite Spiritual Array Masters over. Normal individuals would not be able to invite a Spiritual Array Master to teach them. Thus, it made the Spiritual Array Masters rather

scarce within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

Perhaps after entering the “Five Great Academies”, you would be able to get professional training regarding about Spiritual Arrays. However, you can only learn the basics in the Northern Spiritual Realm.

“Then you should follow Mister Wen Ling and learn. I have something else to do.”

Mu Feng was not worried about his own son. With Mu Chen’s sensibility, he would not do anything that would make the teacher run away in anger. Therefore, he left while being rest assured. The matter regarding about the Nine Netherbird made Mu Feng quite busy recently as he had to watch the Liu Territory’s movements at all times.

“Mister, please sit.”

Mu Chen directed a smile towards Wen Ling when he saw Mu Feng leaving.

Wen Ling nodded. He sat down and was silent for a moment. Afterwards, his stern face looked at Mu Chen and he asked: “I heard from the Mu Territory Lord that you fought against Ji Zong?”

It was evident that Mu Chen didn’t expect Wen Ling to suddenly ask about this. He was stunned for a moment before nodding his head.

“Then do you know what Spiritual Arrays that Ji Zong arranged against you?” Wen Ling asked again.

“It should be two Spiritual Arrays, a Consciousness Mesmerizing Array to trap me and a Spiritual Rain Array to attack me.” Mu Chen thought for a moment and replied.

“Both of them are not complicated Rank 1 Spiritual Arrays, it seems that Ji Zong was afraid of your father so he did not directly kill you.”

Wen Ling said: “Based on my understanding, the strongest Array that Ji Zong can arrange should be the “Murdering Bloodshower Array” and is comparable to a Rank 2 Spiritual Array. Once it was activated, even a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase would be extremely helpless.”

Mu Chen scratched his head. It seems that he won because of luck.

“However, it is also not easy for you to break through the two Spiritual Arrays with your strength.” Wen Ling stared at Mu Chen and nodded his head slightly. A hint of appreciation appeared on his emotionless face.

“We’ll talk a bit about Spiritual Arrays now…”

Wen Ling waved his head and said: “The so-called Spiritual Array is simply a special method of resonating Spiritual Energy. It will activate the Spiritual Aura within the world, effecting both offensive and defensive measures.”

“However, it is rather complex and difficult if you want to trigger this sort of resonance.”

“In a few Lower Planes, it is easy to arrange Spiritual Arrays. This is because the energy there isn’t as rich and complicated compared to the Great Thousand World. Therefore, the Great Thousand World’s Spiritual Arrays are more advanced and complex compared to the ones at the Lower Planes.”

Wen Ling extended his hand out. His hand seemed to be particularly slender and was completely different than his ordinary appearance. Mu Chen stared at his palm and noticed that Spiritual Energy was gathering quickly at his fingertips. Finally, it turned into five exquisite Spiritual Seals. The Spiritual Seals seemed to be quite complex, but it emitted a special fluctuation. Around the five Spiritual Seals, the Spiritual Aura from the world seemed to be overturning quietly.

“This is a Spiritual Seal, it is an essential item for arranging Spiritual Arrays.”

“Spiritual Seal?” Mu Chen was startled. It was apparent that he was unfamiliar about this thing.

“Yes.”

Wen Ling nodded. He flicked his fingers and the five Spiritual Arrays escaped his hand and flew out. It seemed to have fused with the raindrops from the sea and faded away. However, when the Spiritual Seals disappeared, Mu Chen suddenly felt a fierce and unexpected wind blowing, causing his body to be slightly shaky.

Mu Chen exclaimed and his eyes became serious. He was able to see faintly that the air in front of him was slightly distorted. Light beams that were difficult to be seen with the naked eye seemed to be intertwining. And at the source of the light beams, it was the five tiny Spiritual Seals...

“Is this a Spiritual Array?”

Wen Ling nodded and said: “This is just a tiny Spiritual Array. It is not considered even a Rank 1 Spiritual Array.”

“Arranging a Spiritual Array requires absolute control over the Spiritual Seals. Any slight fluctuation and abnormal resonance would cause the Spiritual Arrays to fail. When the Spiritual Arrays fail, the Spiritual Energy will cause a backlash to the user. In serious cases, they would lose their lives. This is because this failure is like losing control over your Spiritual Array and it will cause a heavy blow to the user.

“Generally speaking, the more powerful the Spiritual Array is, the more Spiritual Seals you would require. At the same time, the difficulty for manipulating it will become harder...” Wen Ling said: “I am a Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master, my utmost limit is controlling 20 Spiritual Seals at once. If I add anymore, I’ll lose control over them... Based on my knowledge, the number of Rank

5 Spiritual Array Masters could be counted in one hand. They are able to manipulate over hundreds of Spiritual Seals and this power could even exterminate Spirit Stage powerhouses."

Mu Chen secretly clucked his tongue when he heard this.

"Spiritual Seals are the foundations of arranging a Spiritual Array. Aside from that, you require another essential item."

"What?"

"Diagram Array!" Wen Ling faintly spoke: "Forming an array is extremely difficult. It is equivalent to a large-scaled construction project. The Spiritual Seals are like cornerstone and the paths of connection. On the other hand, the Diagram Array is like the design. Without a complete design, it would impossible for the construction to start."

Wen Ling's hands entered his own arms and he slowly pulled out a emerald jaded script. On the jaded script, a faint light flashed: "This is a Rank 1 Spiritual Array scroll, its name is the Spiritual Lightning Array."

Mu Chen accepted it with curiosity and unraveled it. Light instantly entered his eyes and he could see light beams that would make others dizzy on the Diagram Array. These light beams intertwined complicatedly and finally formed into a flashing, yet faint lightning array.

"A Diagram Array could be considered to be the most attractive item for a Spiritual Array. Whenever a high ranked Diagram Array appears, it would definitely attract many Spiritual Array Masters to seize it."

"And Diagram Arrays are also like Spiritual Array Masters. It is divided into 9 ranks. After all these years, the highest ranked Diagram Array I've seen is only a Rank 4 Diagram Array." When Wen Ling talked about the Rank 4 Diagram Array, his strict face was filled with envy and longing.

“Of course, a Diagram Array is still too early for you now.”

Wen Ling stared at Mu Chen and handed another jaded script to him as he said: “Inside of this, there is the method of cultivating Spiritual Seals. See if you can cultivate it out. From a certain extent, this could be considered as a test for beginners. If you are able to feel that you’re clumsy and slow when cultivating, then you can stop. This means that you are not sensitive to your Spiritual Seals. In other words, it means you do not have the talent for this.”

Mu Chen heard this and accepted the jaded script. He did not say anything more and closed his eyes as he accepted the cultivation method for Spiritual Seals from within the jaded script.

Mu Chen closed his eyes for approximately an hour. Then, he slowly opened his eyes and put down the jaded script within his hand. His eyes showed pondering and thinking.

Cultivating the Spiritual Seal was quite similar to the Limitless Death Seal. However, it was not as complicated. This is definitely not because becoming a Spiritual Array Master was easier than training in the Limitless Death Seal. After all, the amount of Spiritual Seals that a Spiritual Array Master would manipulate far surpasses the amount of Limitless Death Seals. Could the two Limitless Death Seals that Mu Chen was able to condense face 20 Spiritual Seals or maybe even 200 Spiritual Seals? It was obvious which one was harder in condensing and manipulating.

Mu Chen thought for a moment and finally opened his eyes again. His hand stretched out and a dark black Spiritual flickered at his fingertips. As the lights flickered, he was attempting to cultivate a Spiritual Seal.

Wen Ling’s eyes stared calmly at Mu Chen as Mu Chen began to attempt to cultivate a Spiritual Seal. If the latter fails the very first test, there was no need for him to teach him any longer. It would only waste both of their times.

Chapter 48 – Talent

In the quiet room, Wen Ling watched calmly at the boy in front of him with a dull expression. At this moment, the boy currently had his eyes closed and a dark black Spiritual Energy fluctuated at his right hand. The Spiritual Energy seemed to be condensing into a form.

Wen Ling stared at the boy and shifted his eyes away after a while. He let out a sigh deep down inside. Mu Chen had already entered this state for a full hour. This time had far surpassed his expectations.

Generally speaking, a slightly talented Spiritual Array Master beginner would condense his first seal in half an hour after being exposed to Spiritual Seal cultivation. The more talented users would form one even more quickly.

And now, Mu Chen had used an hour, yet he was not able to form his very first Spiritual Seal. This sensitivity could be described as slow. Therefore, Wen Ling let out a regretful sigh. He naturally heard of the impressive talent that Mu Chen displayed in cultivating Spiritual Energy. However, it seems that his talents did not extend to being a Spiritual Array Master.

Although Wen Ling was regretful, he did not care much. After all, he had seen enough of this situation. There were many geniuses at cultivation, who would not be a genius in another area. The war was still fair this way.

Time slowly passed while Wen Ling sighed. This continued for another half an hour before Wen Ling finally saw the boy in front of him open his eyes. A Spiritual Seal still hadn’t formed in his hand, which made Wen Ling feel incredulous. It can’t be that he was so clumsy that he couldn’t even condense a single Spiritual Seal, right?

“What happened? Why haven’t you formed a single Spiritual

Seal, or were you distracted?" Wen Ling frowned and asked with a severe expression.

When Mu Chen heard this, he shook his head awkwardly and said with hesitation: "It's not that I can't condense it, but I don't know if I made a mistake."

"A mistake?" Wen Ling was stunned.

Mu Chen thought for a moment and stretched out his slender palm. A dark light surged out as his dark black Spiritual Energy flickered at his fingertips. Then, Wen Ling saw how a single Spiritual Seal slowly emerged.

"So you did succeed." Wen Ling let out a sigh of relief when he saw this.

But just when he was relieved, he noticed another Spiritual Seal emerging out of Mu Chen's fingertips...

"Two?" Wen Ling could not endure it and raised an eyebrow.

However, when Wen Ling's eyebrow was lifted up, the change within Mu Chen's hand did not stop. A black light surged out and another Spiritual Seal emerged...After the third Spiritual Seal, another two Spiritual Seal appeared one after another on Mu Chen's fingertips.

Five Spiritual Seals!

Wen Ling was in a daze as he stared at the five dark black Spiritual Seals at Mu Chen's fingertips. His mind seemed to have blanked out and a hint of incredulous appeared in his stern eyes.

He would have never expected that Mu Chen would be able to condense five Spiritual Seals on his very first attempt. Back when he was learning, it took him a full half a month before he was able to do that. This was because it would be harder to condense one when the amount of Spiritual Seals increased.

Mu Chen watched Wen Ling's dazed expression and scratched his

head. The Spiritual Seals' fluctuations faded disorderly and he said timidly: "Did I make a mistake?"

Although he had not come into contact with Spiritual Array Masters before, he still knew how difficult this profession was. Moreover, he did not feel the slightest difficulty when he condensed the first seal. It felt as if it was a matter of course and was even smoother than his normal cultivation.

This made him slightly shocked and he doubted whether or not he made a mistake when condensing a Spiritual Seal. Otherwise, how would it flow this smoothly?

Wen Ling finally recovered from his shock, yet his eyes remained fixed on Mu Chen's hand. Then, he opened his mouth and said: "Y…You probably didn't make a mistake."

After he blurted this out, he felt that his voice was a little dried. He immediately let out a dry cough and fully recovered: "It seems that you're quite talented in the area of a Spiritual Array Master."

When Mu Chen heard this, he let out a sigh of relief. It seemed that it was correct.

"Kuh…Although you seemed to be quite talented in this area, you should not act arrogant. A true Spiritual Array Master rank is not achieved simply by talent." Wen Ling became strict again and spoke.

"What Mister Wen Ling said is correct." Seeing that Mu Chen received his lesson, Wen Ling peeked at the boy again. He discovered that the boy's eyes were calm like a quiet lake. Not even the slightest hint of arrogance and pride could be seen within the boy's eyes. This made him let out a praise within his heart. This boy will definitely surpass his father one day and reach an amazing height.

The Territory Lord, Mu Feng, has an impressive son.

"Although the amount of Spiritual Seals you condensed was quite

amazing, the Spiritual Energy was dispersed and was not able to solidify. This is why it faded away this quickly. This kind of Spiritual Seal cannot be used to arrange a Spiritual Array."

Perhaps because of Mu Chen's respectful and humble learning attitude, Wen Ling's strict expression softened. He originally only had the attitude of fulfilling a task when Mu Feng asked him to teach Mu Chen about Spiritual Arrays, but now, he showed a tiny bit of sympathy due to Mu Chen's talent and attitude.

Mu Chen revealed an understanding appearance and nodded his head. The Spiritual Energy within those Spiritual Seals was indeed too dispersed.

"For the remaining time, you will use all your might to condense Spiritual Seals. When you can condense these five Spiritual Seals out as you wish, I will teach you a few Spiritual Arrays for beginners."

"Come, you should continue to condense them. I will explain the details that you have to pay attention to during the process of condensing Spiritual Seals..."

"Thank you, Mister Wen Ling!"

An afternoon passed and dusk soon appeared. Yet, Wen Ling still watched the boy, who was immersed in condensing Spiritual Seals. His face revealed a satisfied expression as he stood up and quietly left.

Wen Ling left the room and headed straight to the rear hall. There, he saw Mu Feng, who was discussing about certain affairs with Zhou Ye at the meeting room.

"Ohoho, Mister Wen Ling, how did the training go for the boy? Does he have any talent in it?" Mu Feng hurriedly asked when he saw Wen Ling. His face was quite urgent. If Mu Chen did not have any talent in it, wouldn't he have inherited his uselessness?

"Congratulations, Territory Lord." Wen Ling cupped his hands

and revealed a smile on his strict face: “The Little Lord displays a talent in this area no weaker than his cultivation talent. Based on this speed, he would be able to complete the introductory course within 10 days.”

When Mu Feng heard this, he let out a sigh of relief and grinned. This boy did not disappoint him and disgrace his mother.

“Little Mu’s talent is really amazing. It seems that it is only a matter of time before he surpasses you.” Zhou Ye’s face also revealed a soft smile as he spoke to Mu Feng.

“That’s of course, why don’t you see whose son this is?” Mu Feng smiled proudly. His appearance seemed to be even happier than when he occasionally obtained the upper hand against the Liu Territory.

“That’s right, did the Liu Territory have any movements?” Mu Feng turned around and asked.

“There was a little bit of movement. Our spies have reported back, saying that many experts were gathering in Liu Territory. It should be part of the preparations the Liu Territory is doing in secret.” Zhou Ye replied.

“Yes.”

Mu Feng nodded. His eyes narrowed slightly and became extremely sharp.

“Watch over them carefully. When they take action, we’ll also move out as well. Heh, we will not let them get the Nine Netherbird!”

…

Time passed day after day. Mu Chen spent the majority of his time on condensing Spiritual Seals. He had recently advanced into Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase. Although he could attempt on charging into the Spiritual Rotation Stage by relying on the Accumulation Elixir and the remaining Jaded Essence Fruit, his

rational mind made him give up on this idea. The cultivation right now was to lay down his foundations. If he was too focused on pursuing speed, it may cause more harm than good.

Moreover, condensing Spiritual Seals would allow him to train in his control of Spiritual Energy and it would kill two birds with one stone.

Under Mu Chen's efforts of training, he managed to completely solidify the five Spiritual Seals within five short days. Therefore, it would not disappear instantly due to the uneven distribution of Spiritual Energy.

When Wen Ling saw Mu Chen successfully solidify five Spiritual Seals, he was shocked, but he did not show it. Furthermore, he began to teach Mu Chen how to arrange a Spiritual Array.

Only when he reached this step, Mu Chen was able to understand just how difficult it was to arrange a Spiritual Array. Even though he displayed an impressive talent in this area, he still failed numerous times without any results when constructing a tiny Spiritual Array, which was not even considered a Rank 1 Array…

And even with his repeated failures, Wen Ling's expression was normal. If Mu Chen was able to successfully arrange a tiny Spiritual Array after a few short days, then it would undermine the profession of a Spiritual Array Master. Also, if that's the case, there shouldn't be this few Spiritual Array Masters within the Northern Spiritual Realm

However, Mu Chen also began to grasp the methods through his repeated failures and he finally succeeded on arranging a tiny Spiritual Array on an afternoon half a month later.

Chapter 49 – Taking Action

In the courtyard, Mu Chen held his breath. 8 Spiritual Seals emitted light and flashed between his palms. This was the results of his efforts after this period of time. Right now, he was able to simultaneously condense and manipulate 8 Spiritual Seals.

At a nearby location, Wen Ling firmly fixed his gaze on him. During this time, Mu Chen had always attempted to arrange a tiny Spiritual Array, but he had not yet succeeded. Although he had always failed, Wen Ling could feel that Mu Chen was rapidly approaching success after all those failures. This boy had the ability of improving himself constantly through failures.

Swoosh!

Mu Chen's eyes were calm and his arms shook slightly in the next instant. The 8 Spiritual Seals suddenly stormed out from between his palms and disappeared quickly as if it had integrated into the air.

The moment the Spiritual Seals vanished in the air, Wen Ling's eyes narrowed. He could faintly see the 8 Spiritual Seals each occupying a unique position within the air. Rays of light emitted out from the Spiritual Seals and intersected and connected in a rather complex trajectory...

Moreover, when the final ray of light finished the complex connection, Wen Ling immediately felt the Spiritual Aura within the world surging more rapidly in this location.

Faint light flashed in the air before it quietly faded away. It was impossible to detect without sensing it carefully.

Mu Chen fiercely opened his eyes and a hint of surprise surged out of his black eyes. He succeeded!

"Clap Clap."

From nearby, Wen Ling gently clapped his hands with a satisfied

smile on his face. He walked over and said: “Congratulations on successfully arranging your first Spiritual Array.”

Mu Chen also let out a delighted smile. The tiny Spiritual Array in front of him wasn’t even considered a Rank 1 Spiritual Array, yet it was enough to get him excited.

Wen Ling took a step forward and entered the range of the tiny Spiritual Array. He could see the air inside suddenly become distorted and a tiny light array emerged. Numerous lights bursted out and bounded Wen Ling’s four limbs and body like a rope.

“Not bad.”

When Wen Ling saw this, he let out a faint smile. His body trembled and Spiritual Energy gushed out from his body as it destroyed the numerous binds. It was evident that a tiny Spiritual Array that didn’t even reach Rank 1 Spiritual Array was not something that could shackle him.

“This tiny Spiritual Array’s name is Spiritual Shackles Array. Although it is not considered a Rank 1 Spiritual Array, it is still quite useful. If your opponent is not careful, it will delay them for a moment. That moment would be your best chance.” Wen Ling explained.

Mu Chen nodded his head. He appreciated the effects of this Spiritual Shackles Array, thus he spent this period of time studying it.

“Mister Wen, when can I arrange a Rank 1 Spiritual Array?” Mu Chen asked. Although the tiny Spiritual Array had a bit of use, it was still limited in application. He would only become truly powerful after he was able to arrange a Rank 1 Spiritual Array.

“Rank 1 Spiritual Arrays require a minimum of 15 Spiritual Seals. There is still quite the distance before you reach this step.” Wen Ling said.

“15 Spiritual Seals, huh…” Mu Chen nodded slightly. Ever since

he condensed 8 Seals, he started to feel the difficulty of condensing. It would require a lot of effort if he wanted to reach the level of condensing 15 Spiritual Seals.

“Since you have the ability to arrange a tiny Spiritual Array, then I would let you learn more about the other tiny Spiritual Arrays during the next period of time. This will help lay down the foundations for you. Although these tiny Spiritual Arrays are not too complicated, they are still the most basic items.” On Wen Ling’s face emerged a rare smile. It seems that he was quite happy regarding Mu Chen’s progress.

“Yes.”

Mu Chen smiled as he nodded. Ever since he came into contact with Spiritual Arrays, he found that he was quite interested in it. Could this be passed down through his mother?

Thinking about this point, Mu Chen’s heart could not help but smile. He was quite curious again. Based on what his father said, his mother had reached an extremely high level of achievement in Spiritual Arrays. However, he did not know what Spiritual Array Master rank she was...

During the next few days, Mu Chen did not let his Spiritual Energy Cultivation slow down while he spent many sleepless nights researching about other tiny Spiritual Arrays. During this study, he understood more about Spiritual Arrays and the amount of Spiritual Seals he could condense increased.

Time passed quickly as Mu Chen was fully immersed in his training. A week later...

On this day, Mu Chen sensed that there was a different atmosphere within the Mu Estate compared to the previous days. He pondered for a moment before his heart trembled and immediately rushed to the Meeting Room within the Mu Estate.

Outside of the Meeting Room, a few heavy guards were guarding

it. However, when the guards noticed Mu Chen, they did not stop him as if they had already received orders earlier.

Mu Chen charged straight into the Meeting Room. Then, he noticed a few figures within the large room. There were five figures which were most striking and they sat inside the hall. Although their body shapes were quite different, they still seemed quite capable. Moreover, the Spiritual Energy fluctuation that emitted from their bodies was not weak.

“It’s the 5 City Lords of the Mu Territory.”

Mu Chen was slightly surprised when he saw the 5 familiar figures. These five men were capable generals of his father. They helped him guard the five cities within the Mu Territory. On most occasions, they were each guarding their own city, but they actually all gathered here today.

Mu Feng did not say anything when he noticed Mu Chen entering the room. He only gestured and Mu Chen came to his side.

“Little Lord.” The five figures all cupped their hands and smiled upon seeing him.

“Uncle Duan, why are you still acting so polite towards me?” Mu Chen smiled. The tone he used was also quite amiable. After all, he was quite familiar with these five individuals.

“Ohoho, the Little Lord has also grown up.” The skinny middle-aged man in the front smiled. The other four also revealed a smile and the originally strained atmosphere loosened up.

Mu Feng also smiled and pressed his hands. The room instantly quieted down.

“I have roughly told you about the matter of this trip. Our spies have reported back with information that the Liu Territory has started to head to the Black Eerie Swamp. Therefore, we must immediately leave as well.”

Mu Feng’s serious eyes scanned the crowd and said: “This time,

the matter is extremely important. I will personally lead the team with Zhou Ye. We'll leave two of you to guard the Mu Territory. As for the remaining three individuals, you will also head out together with us."

Mu Chen clucked his tongue slightly when he heard this. It seemed that the Mu Territory will be sending out all their elites. Looks like dad valued the Nine Netherbird highly.

"The Liu Territory also views this matter as extremely important. Based on the information we've gotten, Liu Qingtian will personally lead their team. Moreover, Liu Zong and Liu Ming from the Liu Territory will go as well." Zhou Ye said.

When Mu Chen heard this he was slightly surprised. The Liu Territory's Liu Qingtian and Liu Zong were both Spirit Stage powerhouses. That Liu Ming would soon advance as well. This line-up was extremely powerful. No wonder dad would head out together with Uncle Zhou.

The five city lords also had a serious expression. They could feel some pressure when they thought of the Liu Territory's line-up. Then, the skinny middle-aged man called Duan Wei pondered before speaking: "Then, Tie Lang, Chen Xiong and I will head out together with the Territory Lord. The other two will protect the Mu Territory, how about this?"

"Yes."

Mu Feng nodded and immediately gestured with his hand: "You will each lead a team. The strength must not be less than a Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase. Moreover, they must be experienced veterans. We cannot fail this mission."

"Yes!"

The five city lords all let out a solemn cry. Then, they immediately grinned and said: "It seems that we'll really fight against the Liu Territory this time. It's really been a long time

since it’s been so refreshing.”

Mu Feng also let out a faint smile. A fire also surged out from the depths of his eyes. Others may be afraid of the Liu Territory, but the Mu Territory wasn’t. This time, for the Nine Netherbird, he would have to fight against them.

Mu Chen stared at the fiery fighting intent that surged up within the meeting room. He also licked his mouth gently. An expectation rose up from within his heart towards the mysterious Nine Netherbird. Such a high ranked Spiritual Beast had never appeared in the Northern Spiritual Realm…

It was really unknown who would get his hand on this thing.

Chapter 50 – Black Eerie Swamp

The Black Eerie Swamp is located in the southern part of the Northern Spiritual Realm. Moreover, it belongs to a rather remote region within the Northern Spiritual Realm. Because of how dangerous it is, there were very few people who went there and hence, it had an extremely low popularity.

The Mu Territory was quite far away from the Black Eerie Swamp. Therefore, Mu Feng and the others only reached the Black Eerie Swamp after 3 days.

Mu Chen stood on the slope of a hill and stared forward. What entered his sight was a dark and primitive forest. A grey deathly miasma covered the endless sky above the forest. This deathly miasma contained a highly toxic poison. Even a Spirit Stage powerhouse would not carelessly allow it to invade his body.

Even though they were separated by quite a bit of distance, Mu Chen could still feel the deathly aura and the stench of blood that emanated from the Black Eerie Swamp. This place was many times more dangerous than the Northern Spiritual Field. No wonder the people within the Northern Spiritual Realm would say that it was a forbidden land.

“The Liu Territory’s men should have reached the Black Eerie Swamp. They are planning to enter from the west passage. Perhaps we will meet them shortly after we entered.” Zhou Ye overlooked the Black Eerie Swamp and said in a serious voice.

Mu Feng nodded his head slightly and immediately pulled out a jaded bottle. Inside the jaded bottle were a couple of pills: “Everybody should swallow these Poison Dispel Pills. Although it cannot stop the overly powerful poisons, it still has a tiny bit of resistance against the deathly miasma.”

Mu Chen also received a Poison Dispel Pill and he could feel a cold aura wandering within his body after he swallowed it. It must

be that the pill has displayed it effects.

“Everybody should know just how dangerous the Black Eerie Swamp is. Therefore, you should all be careful, let’s go!”

Mu Feng saw that everybody had made the proper preparations, so he did not delay it any longer. He waved with his hand and his body darted out in front towards the Black Eerie Swamp within the distance. Behind him, Zhou Ye, Mu Chen and the others immediately followed.

The line-up was approximately 100 men and was not a small party. However, all the men that Mu Feng had brought were all veterans. They had bountiful experiences, so they made no noise as they hurried over. Not even dusts were brought up as they quietly entered the Black Eerie Swamp filled with the deathly miasma.

After entering the Black Eerie Swamp, Mu Chen could feel a cold feeling coming from all directions. It made the blood within his body stiffen up.

Mu Chen’s eyes scanned in vigilance across the dark environment. Compared to the Northern Spiritual Field, this place was exceptionally quiet. However, it was this silence that made everybody feel uneasy.

As the party carefully entered the depths of the Black Eerie Swamp, Mu Chen could feel a sense of tension appearing in their bodies. Their hands clenched onto the shiny swords as the Spiritual Energy quietly circulated.

Even though they were extremely careful, the Black Eerie Swamp was still filled with dangers and death traps.

Ah!

Shortly after the group had entered the Black Eerie Swamp, a shrill scream erupted out from the team. Beneath the earth filled with rotten leaves, a hideous giant serpent sprang out. The instant that the body twisted, it instantly swallowed two men, who

reacted slowly, from the Mu Territory. A black saliva dripped out from his giant mouth, causing the leaves on the ground to become rotten. It was evident that it was highly toxic.

“It’s the Black Eerie Serpent!”

Due to the sudden attack, the party was slightly in confusion. However, they quickly recovered from the shock and let out a cry when they saw the hideous, black, giant serpent. This was a Middle Rank Spiritual Beast, whose strength was comparable to Spiritual Rotation Middle Phase. They never imagined that they would meet such a powerful Spiritual Beast just after they entered the Black Eerie Swamp.

“Hmph.”

When Zhou Ye noticed this, he immediately frowned and let out a cold hmph. He fiercely took a step forward and a dense Spiritual Energy erupted out. His body flashed and directly appeared on top of the Black Eerie Serpent. Then, his legs stomped on the enormous body of the Black Eerie Serpent.

Roar!

When Zhou Ye stomped fiercely, an enormous beast shape seemed to form from his Spiritual Energy behind him. It was a dark yellow, hornless rhinoceros. On the back of the hornless rhinoceros, it was filled with thick scales and it looked like it was carrying a tiny mountain.

Boom!

When the dark yellow, hornless rhinoceros appeared, Zhou Ye’s body seemed to have to turn as heavy as a mountain and an exceptionally heavy weight appeared. He actually directly crushed the Black Eerie Serpent alive. As the earth trembled, the Black Eerie Swamp let out a sorrowful cry as its snake body was crushed into a mass of blood.

A Middle Rank Spiritual Beast that was comparable to a Spiritual

Rotation Stage Middle Phase was directly crushed to death by Zhou Ye like this.

When Mu Chen saw this scene, he could not exclaim out loudly.

“Your Uncle Zhou has now reached the Spirit Stage Initial Phase. The Spiritual Beast’s Soul Essence that he ingested was the Mountain Spirit Rhinoceros, ranked as the 180th on the Myriad Beast Record’s Earth Ranking. When he crushes you down, it is similar to a mountain pressing onto you. It will instantly crush a human to pulp.” Mu Feng said.

Mu Chen nodded in envy. When would he be able to obtain a Spiritual Beast’s Soul Essence that only belongs to him.

Zhou Ye took out the Black Eerie Serpent’s Soul Essence out and walked back over as he said in a deep voice: “The Black Eerie Swamp is filled with dangers. If you do not wish to lose your life, then you should all focus!”

Everybody quickly replied. Although they were already extremely cautious towards the Black Eerie Swamp, it was obvious it was not enough.

After exterminating the Black Eerie Serpent, the party progressed forward. However, this time, they became even more careful. Vigilant eyes constantly scanned the surroundings. They would even check the place properly before even lowering their feet.

Although this carefulness made their movement speed slow down, it still brought quite the effect. After meeting the Black Eerie Serpent, the party had experienced many sneak attacks, but it did not cause any causalities. At most, a dozen people were just slightly injured.

This careful movement lasted for approximately half an hour. Mu Feng and his team had finally reached the initial area for entering into the depths of the Black Eerie Swamp. However, the silence around the surrounding environment made it even

creepier.

“Da.”

Mu Feng, who was in the front, suddenly stopped as his eyes stared sharply inside the dark forest with a rotten smell. He let out a sneer and said: “Liu Qingtian, when did you become concealing yourself to perform sneak attacks?”

After hearing these words, everybody was startled and clenched their swords. Their gazes were fixed on the dark forest. Are they finally going to meet with the men from the Liu Territory?

Mu Chen also stared closely at that direction. This encounter was earlier than his expectations.

“Mu Feng, it’s really hard to shake off your Mu Territory.”

After Mu Feng’s voice faded away, a faint laughter came from within the dark fores. Then, sounds of footsteps rang out and figures slowly emerged from within the forest.

There were approximately a hundred of these figures. The line-up wasn’t weak at all. Mu Chen’s gaze swept through and stared at the person in the very front. A middle-aged man wearing a blue robe was standing with a faint smile at that location. Moreover, this person had a pair of slightly retracted eyes. His eyes were like a tiger as he scanned through the group, making everybody feel that he was awe-inspiring.

Liu Qingtian, the Liu Territory’s Lord.

Mu Chen pouted his lips. It was evident that this man was the Territory Lord of the strongest Territory within the Northern Spiritual Realm, Liu Qingtian!

Beside Liu Qingtian, there was an extremely skinny, middle-aged man. His eyes were jaded green and had an emotionless expression. However, it was evident that he was a Spirit Stage powerhouse from the Spiritual Energy fluctuation that he emitted from his body!

The Second Master of the Liu Territory, Liu Zong.

Because behind Liu Zong, there was a familiar person, Liu Ming, standing there. Thus, Mu Chen's heart changed as he clearly knew the identity of this man. Furthermore, another familiar face was beside Liu Ming. It was Liu Mubai. Mu Chen did not imagine that even Liu Mubai would have followed.

As the two sides collided with each other, unfriendly gazes emerged out. The Spiritual Energy quietly surged as the atmosphere became extremely tense.

"Brat, so you truly were the one that stole away that item!"

Liu Ming and Liu Mubai's eyes instantly turned cold when they noticed Mu Chen behind Mu Feng. Especially the former, he had an grim appearance and he gritted his teeth firmly. Although he had guessed it in the very beginning, it still made him mad as he was played around by a boy.

However, Mu Chen only displayed a smile against Liu Ming's fierce gaze. Then, he stared looked at Liu Mubai, who also had a cold expression, and said: "I really have to thank you for sending such a big gift over to me."

Liu Mubai's eyes narrowed slightly as he said: "You're just lucky that you have such a blessed life."

Mu Chen's smile made Liu Ming grit his teeth even harder.

"Ohoho, Mu Feng, you sure have a good son." Liu Qingtian also glanced at Mu Chen. He probably knew that Mu Chen was the biggest reason why the Mu Territory had appeared.

Mu Feng looked indifferently at Liu Qingtian and said: "The Liu Territory sure is greedy, you have to share benefits with others. If you want to pocket it up by yourself, it's not a good act."

"Are the Mu Territory not afraid of death, since you want to participate in everything?" Liu Zong, who was beside Liu Qingtian, muttered as he coldly looked at Mu Feng and the others.

“It would probably be easier to die if you try to pocket it yourself.” Zhou Ye also sneered.

Liu Zong let out a cold laugh and said: “If the majority of the Mu Territory’s elite troops were to die here, then the Liu Territory will help govern the Mu Territory’s domain for you.”

“I’m afraid that you don’t have the ability to do so!” Zhou Ye said slowly.

The two sides stopped talking with each other and only gazed at the other side. An intense chill and Spiritual Energy fluctuations quietly surged out. It seems that the bloody battle will soon break out.

Mu Chen stared at this tense atmosphere and quietly circulated his Spiritual Energy as well. However, just when he ready, his ears suddenly twitched. His gaze turned towards the darkness in the depths of the Black Eerie Swamp as if a strange sound had appeared from that place.

Buzzzz.

When Mu Chen heard this buzzing sound, he was startled at first. Then, his face instantly changed.

Chapter 51 – Devouring Spirit Bee

Buzzz!

A subtle buzzing sound emitted out from within the depths of the dark forest. Yet, it instantly changed Mu Chen's expression.

Although the Black Eerie Swamp was filled with dangers and a single mistake could cost their lives, there was one thing which people would dread within the Black Eerie Swamp.

It was a Low Rank Spiritual Beast known as the Devouring Spirit Bee.

This Spiritual Beast was only the size of a palm and had the strength of a Spiritual Movement Initial Phase. However, everybody who entered the Black Eerie Swamp knew how terrifying it would be if they met the Devouring Spirit Bee within the Black Eerie Swamp.

With the Devouring Spirit Bee's strength, they would naturally be able to crush it easily if they met one of them. Unfortunately...It did not move by itself and instead, millions of them would move together every single time they took action...

They were like a dark cloud as they swept over the swamp. Any Spiritual Beasts, even if they were Middle Rank Spiritual Beasts comparable to Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase, would turn to bones in an instant as they enter their paths.

Within the Black Eerie Swamp, even the High Rank Spiritual Beasts would have to temporarily retreat if they met a swarm of Devouring Spirit Bees.

"Dad!" Therefore, when Mu Chen heard this subtle buzzing sound, fear appeared within his heart and he hastily whispered: "Hurry and run, there's a swarm of Devouring Spirit Bees!"

When his words came out, Mu Feng's face also changed as a hint of fear appeared. He was immediately decisive and he waved his

hand as he shouted: “Hurry, we’re leaving this place!”

When these words faded, he took the lead and darted away to the other direction of the Black Eerie Swamp. He did not care about confronting Liu Qingtian. If they were bound by the Devouring Spirit Bees, even if he managed to escape, the Mu Territory’s men would definitely suffer heavy casualties.

When their group of men left, the Liu Territory’s side was stunned. Liu Qingtian frowned before his face immediately became serious.

“It’s a swarm of Devouring Spirit Bees, run!”

Liu Qingtian let out a cry and did not hesitate to bring his men in another direction. It was evident that they knew how troublesome a swarm of Devouring Spirit Bees were as well.

The tense atmosphere between the two groups instantly vanished and they hurriedly retreated by themselves.

Just when they were hurriedly retreating, an endless black cloud surged out from within the depths of the dark forest. A buzzing sound rang out as if the air was trembling.

Bang.

When the black cloud surged out, the empty ground also shook. A mouse-like black Spiritual Beast desperately drilled down to escape.

However, it was clear that the black cloud was faster. It flew rapidly towards the black Spiritual Beast and a shrill roar sounded out before fading away quickly.

Only white bones covered with bloodstains were left behind after the black cloud passed by.

If you looked carefully during this moment, you would be able to see that there were actually countless palm-sized black bees within the black cloud. The black bees’ mouths were covered with hideous

fangs and blood dripped out from them.

The Liu Territory and Mu Territory's men withdrew quickly. However, they still underestimated the speed of the Devouring Spirit Bee swarm. In just a few short instances, the huge black cloud spread out and a dozen or so men from both sides were engulfed by the black cloud. Afterwards, shrill screams rang out from within.

Perhaps the fresh blood had aroused the desire for them to kill, because the Devouring Spirit Bees did not immediately head back. Instead, it split into black torrents and headed quickly towards the two fleeing groups.

"Dodge!"

Mu Feng hurriedly shouted when he saw the black torrent stabbing towards them.

The party instantly divided into two and was separated from each other. Then, they gritted their teeth as they stared at the black torrent. They did not dare to pass through.

"Little Mu!"

Zhou Ye's face changed when he noticed that Mu Chen was separated from them. He attempted to forcibly charge through the black torrent formed by the Devouring Spirit Bees. However, he was stopped by Mu Feng.

"Relax, that boy isn't as weak as you think. Moreover, Old Duan and the others are with him. We should first avoid this swarm of Devouring Spirit Bees. He knows where to reunite with us." Mu Feng said as he glanced at the figures which were separated from them by the black torrent.

When Zhou Ye heard this, he hesitated for a moment before nodding his head. Although Mu Chen was still small, his performance had always been quite assuring. With Mu Chen's cautiousness, the dangers within the Black Eerie Swamp should

not be a big problem for him.

Mu Feng waved his hand and led the men following him into the forest. They escaped far away from the dangerous and mighty Devouring Spirit Bees swarm.

“How unlucky.”

On the other side of the black torrent, Mu Chen saw that their group was separated from the others and helplessly shook his head. However, it was apparent that he did not dare to forcibly break through the torrent formed by the Devouring Spirit Bees. He did not hesitate and fled in the other direction. Right now, he must get far away from these dangerous things.

“Little Lord, be careful.”

Old Duan brought a couple of men and followed Mu Chen. Since they were separated now, he had to properly protect Mu Chen. Otherwise, he wouldn’t have the face to see Mu Feng if anything happened to Mu Chen.

Mu Chen nodded. He casted a glance behind him and his eyes were cold. This was because he noticed the black swarm surging towards them.

“Hurry and run!”

Mu Chen let out a shout and dark black Spiritual Energy surged through his body. He quickly pushed his speed to its very limits. If they were surrounded by the Devouring Spirit Bees swarm, they were almost guaranteed to die.

Duan Wei and the others also noticed the danger and swiftly followed Mu Chen. They did not dare to say anything anymore.

Although they were not slow, the Devouring Spirit Bee swarm’s speed was still faster. They could feel that the Devouring Spirit Bees were gradually getter closer to them.

“Damn it!”

Duan Wei was also aware of this situation and he immediately cursed. He gritted his teeth and attempted to turn around to stop them.

“Uncle Duan, don’t act impulsive!” However, just when Duan Wei was about to turn around, he was suddenly grabbed by Mu Chen. The latter pointed and said: “It seems that they have given up?”

Duan Wei was stunned. He looked over and noticed that the Devouring Spirit Bees swarm suddenly stopped their chase. They hovered around as they buzzed. Then, suddenly, they swiftly headed towards the North-Western direction.

Mu Chen was slightly surprised as he stared at this scene. He immediately frowned. It seems that he could faintly hear the sound of a flute coming from a distance away…

This extremely weak and peculiar flute sound seemed to attract the Devouring Spirit Bees swarm.

“Could it be that the Devouring Spirit Bees swarm was actually controlled by someone?” A surprising idea appeared within Mu Chen’s heart. This flute sound did not seem like it was caused naturally.

“Little Lord, these tiny things have finally retreated. We should hurry back to reunite with the Territory Lord.” Duan Wei let out a sigh of relief when he noticed that they had gotten rid of the Devouring Spirit Bees.

When Mu Chen heard this, his eyes flashed for a moment and he gently said: “Uncle Duan, let us follow the Devouring Spirit Bees over and see.”

Duan Wei was stunned for a moment when he heard these words. He quickly said: “Little Lord, it’s too dangerous!”

“It’s fine. We will not get close to them and only watch them. If they are any problems, we will immediately retreat.” Mu Chen

pondered for a moment before speaking. If the Devouring Spirit Bees swarm was really controlled by humans, then could have other forces obtained the information regarding the Nine Netherbird?

Seeing Mu Chen's insistence on it, Duan Wei could only helplessly shake his head. He immediately said: "Fine, we'll follow them. However, if anything happens, I will immediately bring the Little Lord away."

"Yes, thank you Uncle Duan."

Mu Chen smiled. He did not hesitate any longer and swiftly followed. Seeing this, Duan Wei led the men as they followed.

The Devouring Spirit Bees' speed was extremely fast. However, with Mu Chen closely following them, along with the black cloud being too conspicuous, they did not lose it along the way.

As they followed, Mu Chen's face became more and more suspicious. This is because the subtle flute sound was become clearer and clearer.

"Little Lord, the Devouring Spirit Bees swarm has stopped!" Duan Wei suddenly whispered as he looked nervously in front.

Mu Chen also lifted his head over to look when he heard this. He could see a basin in front of them. Within the basin was a tiny black hill. On this black hill was a strange black tree, which was covered densely with Devouring Spirit Bees.

The peculiar flute sound seemed to be coming from there. However, the sound was too subtle. If one did not carefully listen, it was impossible to detect it.

Mu Chen's eyes carefully scanned through this area. However, he did not notice any existence there. This made him confused. Could it be that he misjudged this?

Mu Chen frowned and stared at the black tree. His eyes moved slowly up. Finally, he stared at the top of the tree and his pupils

immediately shrunk.

At that location, he saw a gray figure faintly appearing and disappearing there.

Could there really be someone?

Chapter 52 – Spirit Bug Flute

Mu Chen's gaze remained fixed on the crown of the black tree. At that location, he could vaguely see a grey figure. However, he felt something was off as the grey figure did not show any signs of life.

"What exactly is that?" Mu Chen frowned.

"Uncle Duan, I'll have to trouble you with something." Mu Chen's eyes flashed and he gently whispered.

"What orders do you have Little Lord?" Duan Wei immediately replied.

Mu Chen approached over and said something besides Duan Wei's ears. When the latter heard this, his face instantly changed and turned pale.

"Little Lord, it's too dangerous." Duan Wei earnestly attempted to persuade him. He did not know why Mu Chen wanted to do such a dangerous act. This was the nest of the Devouring Spirit Bees. If they were surrounded, there was no way out.

"Uncle Duan, I know what I'm doing. Trust me." Mu Chen whispered. The boy had an exceptionally serious expression. Not even the slightest recklessness could be seen within his black eyes as they twinkled coldly.

Seeing Mu Chen insisting on this, Duan Wei could only let out a wry smile. He gestured towards the few men beside him and swiftly departed.

Mu Chen also lowered his body when he noticed them heading away. He hid his body within the bushes and had his eyes fixed on the giant black tree.

After approximately ten minutes since Duan Wei and the others departed, a commotion rang out from a distance. A dozen or so Spiritual Beasts were driven out of the forest and headed over this way.

Buzz.

The silence here was destroyed by the dozen or so Spiritual Beasts. Numerous bloody red lights lit up and the air began to tremble. Buzzing sounds instantly rang out as the countless Devouring Spirit Bees surged out. They formed into a black cloud and rushed towards the Spiritual Beasts.

Roar!

Only now did the fleeing Spiritual Beasts discover the crisis in front of them. They instantly roared out crazily and turned around. However, as they bolted away, the black cloud swiftly chased after them.

As the Devouring Spirit Bees left, the giant black tree became completely bare. Although there were still some Devouring Spirit Bees remaining, they were not a concern without their number advantage.

Mu Chen's body instantly charged out at this moment. He directly headed towards the giant black tree and went straight towards the treetop like a nimble monkey.

Along the way, a couple Devouring Spirit Bees tried to interfere with him. However, they were easily taken care of by him.

Mu Chen's speed was extremely fast. Within ten breathes, he had leapt onto the treetop. The treetop was rather spacious, but was quite hidden. The branches which stretched out covered its secrets.

Because of the time constraints, Mu Chen did not dare to act slowly. His eyes instantly looked towards the inside of the tree. He could see a figure actually sitting amongst the weeds.

However, this figure did not have the slightest hint of life because it was a skeleton. Moreover, a tattered grey outfit was on the surface of its body.

Mu Chen stared in surprise at the skeleton on the treetop. He

carefully approached it and waited to see if there was any change before feeling relieved.

As he approached the skeleton, he discovered that half of the bones were charred. Signs of withering seemed to be on the charred bones.

It seemed that this skeleton had suffered a heavy injury while he was still alive.

Mu Chen's eyes glanced through the surroundings and stopped at the bone palm in front. Vague writing seemed to be on it. He waved his sleeves and swept the leaves apart as his vision fixed onto that location.

"My name is Tian Chong, I am from the Bug Spirit Clan. As I was travelling, I found traces of a Nine Netherbird. Greed surged through me and I attempted to get it. After many pains, I finally obtained my wish. However, only then did I discover..."

The writing afterwards became blurry. However, Mu Chen could see words of hatred in the end. This made him stunned and his heart shivered. So this person also discovered the traces of the Nine Netherbird and he nearly succeeded in obtaining it. But at the last moment, some sort of misfortune occurred.

"Bug Spirit Clan..."

Mu Chen muttered to himself. He had heard faintly that there was a rather strange clan in the Great Thousand Worlds, who manipulated millions of bugs within the world. Others named them as Spirit Bug Users. They had extremely secretive means and would be troublesome if they were provoked. Mu Chen did not imagine that one of them would die here.

Mu Chen pondered for a moment. Then, his eyes turned their attention to the other bone palm of the skeleton. He noticed a black flute which was a couple inches long within the bone palm. Various insect patterns were engraved on the flute and a subtle

flute sound rang out from the flute whenever a breeze appeared.

“This item…Could it be a Spirit Bug Flute?

Mu Chen seemed to be lost in thought. It was said that the Spirit Bug Users would all have a Spirit Bug Flute that they used to control the Spirit Bugs that they raised. Could the black flute in front of him be that item?

“So when I heard the subtle flute sound, it was because of the breeze entering this Spirit Bug Flute…It seems that the Devouring Spirit Bees formed their nest here because of the flute sound as well.”

Mu Chen suddenly realized this and immediately let out a cry of praise. These Spirit Bug Users sure have a rather peculiar method.

“Senior, since you have already died, this young one will inherit your relic.” Mu Chen bowed down towards the skeleton. He carefully took the black flute away from it. If he was not mistaken, the Spirit Bug Flute should be able to summon the Devouring Spirit Bees. However, he cannot use it recklessly. After all, he was not a Spirit Bug User. If he really summoned the Devouring Spirit Bees over and he failed to control them, he was simply asking for trouble.

Although that’s the case, Mu Chen was not willing to return back empty-handed. This item would eventually be eroded through years of weathering. Instead of letting this item get ruined, it might have a bit of use within his hands.

Just after Mu Chen collected the Spirit Bug Flute and was about to leave, he suddenly glanced at the grey outfit of the skeleton. He hesitated for a moment before praying to the bones. Afterwards, he touched the tattered grey clothes.

Because of the years of erosion, the grey outfit was reduced to ashes when Mu Chen touched it. Two transparent bottles appeared under the bones. It was obvious that the bottles were not made

from any ordinary material. Even after all these years, they were still well preserved.

Mu Chen picked up the two bottles. Within the bottles, there was a black liquid. However, Mu Chen did not know the effects of the black liquid and pondered for a moment. He carefully opened the bottle cover and a strange aroma drifted out.

Buzzzzzz!

The moment the strange aroma was released, Mu Chen felt the giant black tree tremble for a moment. Then, he noticed that many Devouring Spirit Bees drilled out from the tree trunk and headed towards the treetop with scarlet eyes.

Seeing this, Mu Chen was shocked. He immediately shut the cover of the bottle and quickly placed it within his Mustard Seed Bracelet. The aroma seemed to have an effect of attracting Devouring Spirit Bees.

“I can’t remain here any longer.”

Mu Chen did not dare to stay here any longer when he noticed the commotion. The Spiritual Beasts that Duan Wei and the others had driven out would not pin down the Devouring Spirit Bees for long. If he did not leave now, there was no escape route for him when he was surrounded by the Devouring Spirt Bees.

“Thank you, senior.”

Mu Chen cupped his hands towards the skeleton. He did not remain at this place any longer and jumped off the giant black tree. Then, he quickly rushed to the forest.

After passing through the forest, he stopped suddenly and waited for Duan Wei and the others to come. Suddenly, a fierce wind erupted above his head and he was startled. His toes touched the ground and he dashed backwards.

“Who?!”

A hint of coldness flashed through Mu Chen's eyes. He lifted his head and saw a familiar figure standing on the tree trunk in front of him. That figure was staring at him with indifferent eyes.

It was actually Liu Mubai!

Liu Mubai stared coldly at Mu Chen and stretched out his hand as he faintly said: "It seems that you're really lucky. You can find decent items wherever you go. So what did you get this time above the treetop? Hand it over."

Chapter 53 – Collision

Under the tree shades, Mu Chen stared at Liu Mubai as Liu Mubai stared down from above at him. He did not expect to encounter him at this place. It seems that the Liu Territory's men were also separated by the Devouring Spirit Bees' swarm earlier. Moreover, from this guy's appearance, he also noticed the subtle flute sound and came over. Unfortunately, he reacted a step too slow as Mu Chen was there first.

Since Liu Mubai wanted to make him hand over the item, Mu Chen gently let out a mocking smile.

"This isn't the Northern Spiritual Academy. If I were to kill you, it will not cause any trouble. Therefore, I hope that you can accept reality right now. I think that with your personality, you would not do any foolish and desperate attempts." Seeing Mu Chen ignoring him, a touch of darkness surged through Liu Mubai's eyes as he slowly spoke.

"I was not afraid even when Xue Tu was chasing after me. Just who do you think you are, Liu Mubai?" Mu Chen smiled and replied.

"That idiot, Xue Tu, was probably unlucky and met with the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon within the Northern Spiritual Field, right? You're quite lucky since that kind of thing occurred." Liu Mubai had a hint of ridicule within his eyes. They had actually investigated it after the incident occurred and found traces of a fight within the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon's territory. At that location, scraps of Xue Tu's clothes were found there. This discovery made them understand why Mu Chen was able to escape from Xue Tu.

"So since Xue Tu died against the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon, how is it related to you? You are still naive if you think that you can frighten me with this."

Liu Mubai smiled coldly. They had predicted the events that had happened on that day. However, they thought that the appearance of the Silver-Horned Panther Dragon was just a coincidence. They did not imagine that a boy had meticulously calculated all these steps in order to send Xue Tu to death.

Mu Chen smiled. He did not get hot-headed and argue with Liu Mubai. He was fond of the individuals that tried to act smart.

“Right now, will you hand over the item to me by yourself?” Liu Mubai extended his hand out again. However, a faint Spiritual Energy surged out faintly through his palms this time.

Mu Chen gave a slight smile and shook his head.

Boom!

The instant that Mu Chen shook his head, Liu Mubai’s eyes turned completely cold. He swooped straight down like a hawk chasing its prey and the Spiritual Energy within his palms mercilessly gushed out towards Mu Chen.

Mu Chen’s toes inserted itself into the leaves. He lifted the leaves into the sky and retreated quickly.

Bang!

The fiery red Spiritual Energy gushed out and directly shattered the leaves dancing in the sky. Liu Mubai’s body was like lightning and his hands were like claws. The fiery red Spiritual Energy emitted a boiling fluctuation as it headed straight towards the vital points of Mu Chen’s chest.

When Mu Chen noticed the fierce offensive of Liu Mubai, his eyes also turned cold. A dark black Spiritual Energy surged out from his fist and a Limitless Death Seal appeared.

A punch was blasted out!

The Limitless Death Seal flashed on the surface of Mu Chen’s fist. As the black Spiritual Energy wrapped around it, an overbearing

fluctuation was unleashed.

Dong!

Mu Chen's fist collided with Liu Mubai's sharp claws. A sound rang out and a wave of Spiritual Energy that could be seen with the naked eye spread out. This made the leaves under their feet blast out into the air.

Mu Chen's body trembled slightly and retreated a few steps backwards. His eyes remained fixed on Liu Mubai. This guy really had reached the Spiritual Rotation Stage.

"Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase?" Liu Mubai's body also shook for a bit and a hint of surprise appeared in his eyes. When Mu Chen was fighting against Liu Yang, he had just reached the Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase. He never imagined that Mu Chen would be able to reach the Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase after such a short period of time. This cultivation speed wasn't slow at all.

Moreover, what surprised him the most was Mu Chen blocking one of his attacks head-on. Although Mu Chen did not gain the upper hand, it was still extremely surprising for him to be able to fight against him like this with the strength of a Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase.

"You have a bit of skill. No wonder you also had this annoying appearance. I originally planned on making you lose completely in a formal competition during the fight for the space in the "Five Great Academies". However, I really dislike you so it seems that I shouldn't give you that chance." Liu Mubai said heartlessly. Then, he took a step forward and the fiery red Spiritual Energy gushed out from within his body. This Spiritual Energy pressure directly enveloped Mu Chen. From his appearance, it seems that he really planned on killing Mu Chen here.

Swish!

Liu Mubai did not hesitate at all as his Spiritual Energy gushed out to shapeshift his palms into claws. The fiery red Spiritual Energy seemed to have formed into a shape of a fire eagle and the claws combined with the fire eagle as he swept towards Mu Chen fiercely.

Seeing this powerful offensive come from Liu Mubai, Mu Chen did not directly confront it again. Liu Mubai was indeed stronger than him. If he was to face him directly, it would fit Liu Mubai's intention.

Mu Chen's toes touched the ground and he jumped back vigorously. As he retreated backwards, a dark black light flashed on his fingertips.

Liu Mubai immediately chased after him. He let out a sneer as he watched Mu Chen constantly retreating and dodging his fierce attacks: "Weren't you always so prideful? Why are you dodging here and there like a loser dog now?"

Mu Chen's reply was a sneer as well. However, he still did not plan on engaging in a frontal confrontation.

"Let's see where you can hide!"

Liu Mubai's eyes flashed and he lunged out. As the dense Spiritual Energy burst out, his claws turned into fists and he blasted out a punch from above towards Mu Chen.

"Hawk Inferno!"

A fiery red Spiritual Energy gushed out like flames when the punch was fired out. The winds formed by the fist within the flames erupted out like a matchless fire hawk. It completely surrounded all paths of retreat for Mu Chen.

Mu Chen suddenly stopped and his eyes remained fixed on the fierce offensive that was approaching. In an instant, he placed his hands together and a cold cry came out from his mouth: "Form Array!"

Buzz!

The air within him shook slightly when the words were shouted out. Beams of Spiritual Energy erupted out from the air and actually binded Liu Mubai's four limbs.

This sudden binding made Liu Mubai's body stiffen. He immediately let out a hint of surprise: "Spiritual Array?"

However, the surprise only lasted for a moment. He already noticed how weak the binding ability of this Spiritual Array and let out a sneer: "So it's only a tiny Spiritual Array."

Boom!

A dense Spiritual Energy gushed out and severed the beams formed by Spiritual Energy. Liu Mubai's offensive remained unchanged and he fiercely blasted it towards Mu Chen. However, the momentum of his offensive had weakened due to the tiny Spiritual Energy.

This time, Mu Chen did not continue to dodge Liu Mubai's fierce offensive. A hint of chill gushed out from his black eyes.

The dark black Spiritual Energy surrounded Mu Chen's arms and he immediately charged forward. His hands were placed together and two Limitless Death Seals emerged quickly from between his palms.

"So you finally won't escape?"

Seeing this, a murderous intent surged through Liu Mubai's eyes. Above the winds formed by the punch, the fire hawk that was devouring the fiery red Spiritual Energy let out an abnormal fluctuation as it blasted out towards the center of Mu Chen's chest.

"Limitless Death Seal!"

With a low cry, a sound rang out from within Mu Chen's heart. The Spiritual Energy within his body flowed through his meridians like a flood. His palms were drawn back in towards his

body and them it exploded outwards.

The two Limitless Death Seals let out a domineering glow within the center of his palms.

Under the two vicious and cold gazes, the fist and palms swept over and finally collided with each other.

Chapter 54 – Black Poison Marsh

Boom!

A loud sound suddenly resounded out among the tree shades. A storm-like Spiritual Energy impact spread out and shattered the numerous leaves on the ground. The large trees also vibrated intensely and leaves appeared in the sky.

As the leaves were falling down from the sky, the two figures that collided with each other trembled fiercely. Then, their body staggered backwards.

Mu Chen's feet grazed the ground and he staggered backwards a dozen steps. He took a fierce stomp and stabilized his stature. At this moment, his palms were still trembling slightly. The overly powerful impact caused his palms to ache.

Although his hands hurt, he still forcibly received Liu Mubai's fierce offensive. It was evident that the might of the two Limitless Death Seals was finally revealed.

Ever since he formed the two Limitless Death Seals, Mu Chen was never able to truly unleash it completely. This is because the two opponents that he faced, Xue Tu and Ji Zong, far surpassed him in strength. With this difference in power, it was impossible to make up for it even if he activated the two Limitless Death Seals. Therefore, Mu Chen never knew how powerful the two Limitless Death Seals were.

But right now, he finally knew.

Although Liu Mubai had advanced into the Spiritual Rotation Stage, he was probably still in the Initial Phase. This had surpassed Mu Chen, but the gap wasn't impossible for him to make up for unlike with Xue Tu and Ji Zong.

Thus, in this level of battle, the might of the two Limitless Death Seals were finally displayed completely.

Compared to Mu Chen's expression, Liu Mubai had a somewhat ashen face. His eyes remained fixed at Mu Chen. It was apparent that he did not understand how his opponent was able to fight against him like this by relying on the strength of a Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase. Although he still had some moves that he hasn't displayed yet, he was still in the Spiritual Rotation Stage. This strength surpassed Mu Chen who knows how many times. But even with that, he was still not able to obtain the upper hand. How could he accept this?

"Was your prediction regarding me off? You originally thought that I am someone that you can just step on, but now it seems that it's different than what you expected." Mu Chen stared at Liu Mubai's ashen expression and said with a smile.

The veins on Liu Mubai's forehead twitched. He immediately sucked in a deep breath and suppressed the rage within his heart. His eyes gradually turned abnormally dark and chill was felt within his voice: "You really surpassed my expectations, but...Do you think that you have the right to act arrogant because of this?!"

When the final words filled with chill exited Liu Mubai's mouth, the fiery red Spiritual Energy surged out again from within his body. His eyes were filled with a rich murderous intent.

It was clear that Liu Mubai had finally revealed a true killing intent towards Mu Chen.

No matter what he had to do, he decided that he must wipe out this loathsome fellow.

Seeing this, Mu Chen's eyes narrowed. The corners of his lips slowly rise up and formed a cold smile. Although it would be a bit troublesome to deal with Liu Mubai right now, Mu Chen would not let him get any benefits if this guy continues to pester him.

Under the tree shades, the two of them confronted each other with razor cold eyes. The leaves drifted down between the two of them endlessly as the atmosphere became tenser.

Kacha.

However, just when the two of them had tensed their body up like a fully arched bow, a faint sound rang out from the forest behind. This strange sound caused the tense atmosphere to stiffen.

“Swish!”

The sound was getting closer and closer. Then, a dozen or so individuals suddenly came out from the forest and were behind Liu Mubai.

“Little Master, we finally found you!” Seeing the figures rushing over, Mu Chen frowned for a bit. This is because they were all Liu Territory’s men.

Seeing this, Liu Mubai secretly let out a sigh of relief. He immediately sneered at Mu Chen and said: “It seems that you’ve used up all your luck.”

“That might not be true.”

Hearing this, Mu Chen smiled and his eyes glanced behind him. A few familiar figures rapidly appeared from there. From their statures, it was Duan Wei and the others.

It was clear that Duan Wei and the others were aware of the early commotion. Thus, they hurried over. Moreover, their expressions changed when they saw Liu Mubai’s group. They instantly protected Mu Chen and stared vigilantly and unkindly at the other group.

Mu Chen shook his head and relaxed his tense body. Since both side’s men had rushed over, there was no way of fighting again. Otherwise, the degree of the fight would probably attract a few of Black Eerie Swamp’s Spiritual Beasts over. At that time, both sides would be troubled.

Liu Mubai also seemed to have thought about this point and gritted his teeth as if he was unwilling. He stared at Mu Chen again and said: “It seems that you’ve survived again.”

“It’s useless if you only say it. You should say these words to me when you manage to completely step on me.” Mu Chen said with a calm expression.

“There will be a chance when that happens. I really want to see if you will still have such an annoying expression at that time.” Liu Mubai took a deep glance at Mu Chen before waving his hand. He did not say anything more and brought the Liu Territory’s men back into the forest.

Duan Wei and the others were relieved when they saw Liu Mubai’s group leave. Then, he looked at Mu Chen and asked: “Little Lord, are you alright?”

Mu Chen smiled and shook his head. His black eyes still had a hint of coldness as he stared at Liu Mubai’s departing figure. Only after a while did he rushed out in the other direction.

“We should go as well. Let’s hurry and reunite with my dad.”

…

This is an extremely vast, black swamp and a black deathly miasma was above it. The deathly miasma at this place was exceptionally strong. If anyone dares to charge into it, they would not be able to last for long even if they were at the Spiritual Rotation Stage strength.

In the black swamp, a faint poisonous gas emerges whenever the bubbles explode. From time to time, black mud would roll down. Under the black mud, scarlet and vicious eyes would emerge and slowly sweep around the surroundings.

At this edge of the swamp, a group of men were a bit worried. The one leading them was Mu Feng. At this moment, he was frowning as he stared at the endless black swamp.

“Territory Lord, the Black Poison Marsh is too dangerous to pass. It is impossible for us to pass through the deathly miasma in the skies above. If we were to cross the swamp, not many of us would

be able to survive from the Black Poison Crocodile's attacks." A Mu Territory's City Lord said with a wry smile beside Mu Feng.

"Can we enter the depths of the Black Eerie Swamp from another location?" Zhou Ye frowned and asked.

"There is a way, but we would have to go around for quite the distance. If we waste this much time, we would probably be far behind the Liu Territory." A man replied.

"Those guys, they really came fully prepared!" Zhou Ye gritted his teeth. It was apparent that the Liu Territory had investigated everything carefully. They might have sent a few men to investigate it before. Since they did not head down this way, they must have found another passageway to the depths of the Black Eerie Swamp.

Mu Feng secretly' sighed. Then he asked: "Is there any news from Little Mu and the others?"

"Not yet, should I bring some men to search?" Zhou Ye asked.

Mu Feng thought for a moment. But just when he was about to speak, his expression changed and he said with a smile: "No need, I've said it before, you should not underestimate that boy..." As he said this, he turned around and looked at the forest behind them. He saw the bushes shake and a dozen figures quickly dashed over. The one leading was a handsome boy. It was Mu Chen.

"Dad!"

Mu Chen stared at the men around the edge of the swamp and immediately smiled. He had finally caught up.

"Are you alright?" Mu Feng smiled at Mu Chen and asked.

Mu Chen shook his head and walked forward. He scanned the vast swamp and jokingly said: "Dad, it seems that you've found trouble."

It was evident that Mu Chen also noticed the crisis that Mu Feng

and the others were currently facing.

Mu Feng could only shake his head sourly and let out a helpless sigh. He and Zhou Ye could rely on their Spirit Stage strength and forcibly leap over the swamp. However, it was impossible for the other men.

“If we continue to drag this out, the Nine Netherbird would probably be captured by the Liu Territory.” Zhou Ye also said with a bitter smile.

“Uncle Zhou, relax. The Nine Netherbird probably isn’t that easy to obtain either.” Mu Chen shook his head. Although he had never seen that Nine Netherbird before, he knew that the Nine Netherbird wasn’t that simple to obtain through the information left behind by the skeleton.

“Moreover...It isn’t impossible for us to pass through the Black Poison Marsh safely.” Mu Chen’s gaze swept through the poisonous swamp in front of him and suddenly said with a smile.

“Oh?”

Hearing these words, Mu Feng, Zhou Ye and the others were surprised. Their eyes brightened up as they stared at Mu Chen. At this moment, the boy was leisurely patting his hands and was at ease.

“You have a plan?”

Mu Chen nodded his head when he saw the eager expressions. In the Spiritual Road, there were many places even more dangerous than this Black Poison Marsh...

Chapter 55 – Plan

When they saw the smiling boy in front of them, Mu Feng and the others exchanged looks. A hint of joy and uncertainty appeared within their eyes. Even with their experiences, they were not able to deal with this. However, this boy could resolve it?

“Then let’s hear you explain it. If you say any nonsense, I won’t forgive you.” Mu Feng smiled and asked.

Mu Chen stared at the vast Black Poison Marsh and said, “Even birds will find it difficult to cross the Black Poison Marsh, once they step in, as it will be difficult for them to escape. It is impossible for one to leap through the sky filled with deathly miasma. However, if we were to have a floating object at the landing point, we would be able to progress forward. But soon after that, the numerous Black Poison Crocodile within the Black Poison Marsh would drag us down and rip us into shreds.”

“We all know about this.” Mu Feng chided.

“Actually, it’s not that difficult to pass through. In the Black Poison Marsh, what is able to freely pass through it?” Mu Chen asked with a smile.

“Freely pass through?” Mu Feng was slightly stunned and thought for a moment before saying: “The Black Poison Crocodile?”

“Yes. As long as we capture a few of the Black Poison Crocodile and use its crocodile skin as a boat, we will be able to pass through the Black Poison Marsh without being obstructed. Moreover, the smell emitting from the Black Poison Crocodile’s skin will help us avoid attacks from the other Black Poison Crocodiles.” Mu Chen said.

“It’s that simple?” Mu Feng and the others frowned. This method wasn’t too difficult to execute, but would it be able to pass through

the Black Poison Marsh just with this? Although the Black Poison Crocodile's skin would have some effect, it would not completely allow them to be safe.

"Ohoho, there is indeed another step." Mu Chen smiled and replied. The Black Poison Crocodile wasn't highly intelligent, but it wouldn't be easy to muddle past them.

"As for the final step, we should get the earlier steps completed first. Dad, Uncle Zhou, we'll leave the matter of killing the Black Poison Crocodiles up to you two."

When everybody heard this, they all looked at each other. They weren't sure what Mu Chen wanted to do.

"Boy, you better not be messing around!" Mu Feng gritted his teeth. As of now, they really didn't have any ideas. Moreover, they could not afford delaying the time. Otherwise, they would be thrown far behind the Liu Territory.

"Zhou Ye, we will attack. The others should prepare making boats. Mu Feng waved his hand and made an order.

"Yes!"

Although others were suspicious of the method that Mu Chen was talking about, they still immediately responded due to Mu Feng making it an order. They instantly spread out and began hacking at trees.

Mu Feng and Zhou Ye glanced at each other. A dense Spiritual Energy suddenly erupted out from within their bodies. Mu Feng's body moved and appeared in the skies above the Black Poison Marsh. A fiery red Spiritual Energy swept out from behind him and directly formed into a flame bird. The flame bird's body was filled with fiery red scales and had wings like a dragon. It seemed to be filled with power and an enormous Spiritual Energy pressure emitted out. Furthermore, it caused the Black Poison Marsh below to tremble and numerous Black Poison Crocodiles appeared out as

the swamp shook. They stared in alert at the flame bird in the sky.

“Roar!”

Zhou Ye was also suspended in the sky and a mountain-like, brown rhinocerous emerged behind him. This heavy weight seemed to cause even the air to vibrate.

The Spirit Stage powerhouses, who ingested a Spiritual Beast’s Soul Essence will all possess some of the distinct characteristics and strength that the Spiritual Beast had when it was alive. For example, Mu Feng’s Dragonfire Bird granted Mu Feng speed, while Zhou Ye’s Mountain Spirit Rhinoceros granted him pure strength.

Mu Chen stared at the majestic Spiritual Beasts behind Mu Feng and Zhou Ye. A burning passion could not help but pour out from his eyes. It seemed that the Spirit Stage was so powerful, that they far surpassed the Spiritual Rotation Stage.

Zhou Ye’s hand clenched into a fist and with a cry, a punch was blasted out. A deep yellow Spiritual Energy that seemed to be mixed with the power of being heavy like a mountain roared out like a pillar of light and bombarded into the swamp.

Boom!

The earth seemed to have trembled at this moment. A deep crater was directly formed from the punch in the swamp. This enormous Spiritual Energy caused dozens of Black Poison Crocodiles to fly out into the sky due to the tremor.

Mu Feng also acted at this moment. The Dragonfire Bird behind his back let out a long roar at the sky. A violent and dense light of flame erupted out and directly wrapped around the dozens of Black Poison Crocodile.

Kacha!

As the Spiritual Energy wriggled around, the dozens of Black Poison Crocodile that had the strength of a Spiritual Rotation Stage strength instantly died. Then, Mu Feng waved his hand and

threw them at the edge of the Marsh.

…

When Mu Feng and Zhou Ye attacked, a couple of men suddenly stopped at a certain cliff path that was slightly away from the Black Poison Marsh. It was the Liu Territory's men that Mu Feng and the others met earlier.

"This Spiritual Energy fluctuation…"

Liu Zong's footsteps suddenly paused and he stared at the distance: "It's Mu Feng and Zhou Ye…It seems that they met some sort of trouble."

"They should be trapped at the Black Poison Marsh. Ohoho, with Mu Feng and Zhou Ye's strength, they could forcibly pass over. However, they will consume a large amount of strength. As for the others, they do not have the ability to pass through."

Liu Qingtian, who was in front, said: "If that's the case, they would basically be injured individuals when they reach the deepest part of the Black Eerie Swamp. Would they even have the courage to fight with us then?"

"Big Brother sure is thoughtful. If we have the chance at that time, we should not let them escape. Once the Mu Territory does not have Mu Feng and Zhou Ye, heh, won't that territory be easily and freely obtained by us, the Liu Territory?" Liu Ming said with a sneer.

Liu Qingtian gave a faint smile and nodded. A tiny bit of killing intent surged through his eyes. If they have the opportunity, he naturally would not let it go. Right now, they only have to wait for the Mu Territory's mentally tired and injured individuals at the deepest part of the Black Eerie Swamp.

"Mu Feng, you could have enjoyed a happy life in the Mu Territory, yet you do not want that. You just had to come and try to fight against my Liu Territory for the Nine Netherbird. Then,

don’t blame me…”

…

Boom.

The earth trembled as Mu Chen stared at Mu Feng tossing over a dozen of Black Poison Crocodiles. He could not help but smack his lips. Every single Black Poison Crocodile had the strength of a Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase. However, they were completely powerless against his dad and Uncle Zhou.

Mu Chen let out a sigh of praise. Then, he called a couple of the experts to peel off the crocodile skin from the Black Poison Crocodile. At the same time, a simple boat was already finished at the side. Mu Chen allowed them to wrap the crocodile skin around the tiny boats.

If they were to throw the tiny boat into the Black Poison Marsh, it would probably sink immediately. However, the Black Poison Crocodile’s skin had a bit of Spiritual Energy fluctuation in it when they were still alive. It was just enough to let the boat float on the swamp.

After everybody had finished doing this, eyes began to stare at Mu Chen again. Would this method really allow them to pass through the Black Poison Marsh?

“It’s your turn now.” Mu Feng looked at Mu Chen with a serious expression and said: “Don’t fool around. If trouble appears after we enter the Black Poison Marsh, there won’t be many that will be alive.”

“Dad, relax.”

Mu Chen smiled instead and pointed at the swamp: “Our primary problem is to avoid the attacks from these Black Poison Crocodiles. The Black Poison Crocodiles are Middle Rank Spiritual Beasts. But because they lived in the swamp for so long, their sensing abilities are extremely weak. Moreover, they do not have sharp eyes as

well. As long as we are able to disrupt their vision, we would be able to mix in and pass over with the aura from these crocodiles' skin.

"How would we disrupt their visions?" Mu Feng inquired with a frown.

"That's all thanks to dad allowing me to learn about Spiritual Arrays over this period of time..." Mu Chen smiled and gripped his palms. Eight Spiritual Seals soon emerged at his fingertips.

"You are already able to arrange a Spiritual Array?" Seeing the Spiritual Seals at Mu Chen's fingertips, Mu Feng and Zhou Ye were shocked. The other Mu Territory's men were also surprised as they stared at Mu Chen.

"It's only a tiny Spiritual Array."

Mu Chen said with a smile: "I will be arranging a "tiny Spiritual Array" known as the "Soul Confusion Array". It will be able to cause a slight confusion. Although it will not have much effect, it is perfect to use to deal with the Black Poison Crocodiles with low sensing abilities."

Mu Feng and Zhou Ye exchanged glances at each other. They never imagined that Mu Chen's understanding about Spiritual Beasts surpassed even veterans like them.

After saying this, Mu Chen ignored them and his face turned serious. He flicked his fingertips and the 8 Spiritual Seals vanished at the surroundings of the small boat. Then, everybody was able to faintly feel the air vibrating slightly and emitted out a strange fluctuation.

Mu Chen's hand seals changed and finally let out a sigh of relief after a while. He wiped off the sweat from his forehead and said: "It's done."

Everybody hurriedly glanced over. They really saw that a faint mist emerged on the boat and enshrouded the majority of it away.

This cover would be broken immediately if a human were to see it. Fortunately, the Black Poison Crocodiles did not possess such high intelligence.

“There’s really more to the Little Lord than what meets the eye.” Duan Wei and the others could not help but let out a cry of admiration. They had always treated Mu Chen as a child before. However, now they discovered that this boy wasn’t that simple.

Although they weren’t sure whether or not this method would work this smoothly, they still had a little bit of confidence after seeing this.

“Why are you praising him so early? It’s only good if it works. Otherwise, we would have wasted all this effort and harmed others instead.” Although Mu Feng had traces of satisfaction appearing on his face, he did not let out any praises. This was done so that the boy wouldn’t be too proud of himself.

“Whether it is mule or a horse, you’ll know soon.” [1. A Chinese idiom where it means you’ll only know their abilities only after you test them out.]

Mu Chen pouted his mouth. He directly pushed the tiny boat into the Black Poison Marsh and was the first to jump onto it.

Chapter 56 – A Vicious Scheme

Pop.

Within the Black Poison Marsh, huge black poison bubbles rise up and burst apart. A smelly stench of poison gas rises up and further adds onto the deathly miasma enshrouding the air.

At this moment, above the Black Poison Marsh without many living creatures, a small boat wrapped with Black Poison Crocodile's skin was being paddled over cautiously.

Everybody on the boat was extremely tensed up. They did not dare to make the slightest sounds as their eyes remained fixed on the swamp. Moreover, the Spiritual Energy within their bodies quietly surged.

This group of men was the Mu Territory's men who naturally used Mu Chen's method to pass through the Black Poison Marsh. Although Mu Chen's confidence gave Duan Wei and the others a little bit of confidence, they were still in a dangerous location. The feeling of how the slightest mistake would make the boat to capsize and turning them into the swamp's mud did not make them feel good.

Compared to them being tensed, Mu Chen's face was a lot calmer. However, his eyes still remained fixed at his surroundings. This tiny boat contains many experts of the Mu Territory. It they were to have any loss here, it would be a severe blow for the Mu Territory.

Mu Feng stood beside Mu Chen and had a seemingly calm face. However, it still carried a sense of seriousness. His entire body was tense and he would immediately act if he noticed that the situation was off.

As everybody on board was tensed up, the small boat gradually entered the depths. A little bit of movement appeared in the

swamp and the swamp filled with poison gas shook. Then, numerous hideous Black Poison Crocodiles' heads emerged in the swamp and slowly swam towards the boat.

Everybody on board had their eyes twitch when they saw this. Their heartbeat also accelerated.

Amongst the silent boat, dozens of Black Poison Crocodile were around the boat's surroundings. The pair of scarlet eyes brutally scanned across the black mud.

Everybody immediately became alert.

Under Mu Chen's control, the boat continued to maintain a slow and steady pace as it quietly crossed the swamp. Instead, Mu Feng and the others were able to feel relieved as the Black Poison Crocodiles did not attack them. From their scarlet eyes, they were able to see some sort of confusion in them.

It was evident that the Black Poison Crocodile, who weren't highly intelligent, could vaguely sense that something was wrong, yet they were not able to figure out the reason of it.

The small boat eventually passed through the Black Poison Crocodile's encirclement smoothly. However, everybody on board still did not dare to breathe. Only after half an hour later, when they finally saw the edge of the swamp, they finally spat out the foul smell that had been within their hearts.

"Heh, we really crossed over. The Little Lord is really amazing!"

The atmosphere on the boat suddenly relaxed. Duan Wei and the others had a happy expression and could not help but praise Mu Chen.

"Dad, how is this? I didn't disgrace you, right?" Mu Chen secretly let out a sigh of relief and clapped his hands as he directed a smile at Mu Feng.

"You damn brat."

Mu Feng scoffed at him. However, he could not hide the pleasure within his eyes. This boy had finally grown up and was able to help him share the burden. At least it wasn't in vain for him to separate his father and mother over all these years.

"Little Mu really isn't the same now." Zhou Ye also let out an emotional sigh. Ever since Mu Chen came back from the Spiritual Road, he had changed too much. If he was an understanding boy with talent before, now, he was someone who could take up some of the responsibilities.

Mu Feng nodded his head slightly. His hand rubbed Mu Chen's head and moved. He directly landed on the edge of the swamp and said: "We should also hurry; otherwise, we'll be too far behind the Liu Territory."

"Yes!"

Duan Wei and the others all replied and came onto the shore one after another. After slightly reorganizing themselves, they kept alert and accelerated as they headed towards the depths of the Black Eerie Swamp.

The instant that Mu Feng and the others passed through the Black Poison Marsh and headed to the depths of the Black Eerie Swamp, a cold gaze looked down from above at them from a mountain cliff far away.

"These guys, they actually made it through the Black Poison Marsh safely! How is that possible?!" Liu Ming stared at the figures at the distant and immediately turned pale.

"It seems that the Mu Territory came prepared." Liu Zong frowned. He originally planned on taking them easily after the Mu Territory's men were thoroughly exhausted through their trip across the Black Poison Marsh. However, he never expected them to have passed through without any efforts.

A cold chill flashed through Liu Qingtian's eyes. The more

prepared the Mu Territory was, the greater the obstacle it was for them. These guys must be eliminated and the Nine Netherbird must belong to the Liu Territory. As long as they have the Nine Netherbird, the Liu Territory will become the overlord of the Northern Spiritual Realm. And he, Liu Qingtian, will not be a Territory Lord anymore, but instead the Lord of the Northern Spiritual Realm.

This raging ambition was burning within Liu Qingtian's eyes.

"Big Brother, what should we do now?" Liu Ming asked. Based on this scene, the Mu Territory's men would soon catch up to them.

"There's no need to be impatient." Liu Qingtian said with a smile: "How much time have we used to prepare for this plan? We had surveyed the Black Eerie Swamp since a long time ago. The Mu Territory still wants to fight against us recklessly without any preparations?"

Saying this, he stared at the depths of the Black Eerie Swamp again and a cold chill surged through his eyes again.

"Let's go. At that place, I'll prepare a big gift to welcome them."

...

Because they were gradually entering the depths of the Black Eerie Swamp, Mu Feng and the others were getting more and more careful. In the depths of the Black Eerie Swamp, there were genuine traces of High Rank Spiritual Beasts. If they were targeted by these vicious individuals, it would be particularly troublesome. After all, Mu Feng and the others would still have to be careful about the Liu Territory's men at all times.

The party quietly passed through the dark jungle. Even when they met some Spiritual Beasts, they did not dare to attack them. Instead, they would go around them and swiftly depart.

This sort of torture lasted for half an hour before Mu Feng and the others finally walked out from the jungle. After passing

through the jungle, there was a black mountain cliff. On the body of the mountain, there was an enormous crack that spread out from within it. It made it seem like a demon's giant mouth.

Mu Feng and the others stared at the black mountain abyss. They frowned and their eyes carried a sense of seriousness.

"We are gradually approaching the depths of the Black Eerie Swamp..." Mu Feng said slowly: "The area in front should be considered the true Black Eerie Swamp. Inside this place, High Rank Spiritual Beasts exist."

"High Rank Spiritual Beast."

Duan Wei and the others turned solemn. These Spiritual Beasts are equivalent to Spirit Stage powerhouses.

"Along the way, we will not kill any Spiritual Beasts. The High Rank Spiritual Beasts here are all extremely bloodthirsty. A tiny smell of blood would be able to attract them over to look. If it attracts more than two High Rank Spiritual beasts, we would have to pay a great price."

Mu Chen nodded. This place was a lot more dangerous than the Northern Spiritual Field.

"Let's go, all of you should be careful."

Mu Feng waved his hand and he led the way as he charged towards the dark crack on the body of the mountain. Behind him, Mu Chen, Zhou Ye and the others were cautiously following.

Because the sky was often shrouded by the deathly miasma, the deepest part of the Black Eerie Swamp was quite dark and damp. From time to time, a variety of muffled and bloodthirsty roars would come from the distance.

Mu Feng and the others cautiously walked in the shadows and avoided all places where traces of Spiritual Beasts appeared. Moreover, Mu Chen could feel the surging Spiritual Energy from Mu Feng and Zhou Ye's bodies. It was evident that they were

prepared to deal with any emergency situations.

However, they did not meet with any obstacles along the way. This smoothness made Duan Wei and the others quite relieved. According to the speed that they are going at, they would soon reach the deepest part of the Black Eerie Swamp.

But Mu Chen frowned instead of feeling relieved like the others. This smoothness made him feel uneasy instead.

Just when they turned once at the mountain path, Mu Chen exchanged gazes with Mu Feng. He could also see a sense of vigilance within the latter's eyes. It was obvious that the latter had the same feeling.

As the mountain path turned, their visions widened up in front. It was a vast mountain space. This area was the intersection point between the three mountain peaks and was surrounding by very steep cliffs.

Mu Feng looked at this area and his eyes suddenly became serious. He lifted his head and remained fixed at a secluded location on a cliff. At that location, a few figures slowly emerged.

"Ohoho, Mu Feng, you're really not that slow." On the cliff, Liu Qingtian stared down at Mu Feng and the others with a smile.

"It's the Liu Territory's men, be careful!"

Seeing this, Zhou Ye let out a cry and a dense Spiritual Energy surged out from his body.

"Liu Qingtian, what are you planning to do?" Mu Feng let out a deep cry. The Liu Territory seemed to be completely aware of this Black Eerie Swamp, while they knew nothing about it. This undoubtedly made them to be quite passive.

"Seeing you be this careful, it really makes us not that happy. This is why I want to find you to help us out."

Liu Qingtian smiled, but it was a hideous smile. Then, he waved

his hand and the Liu Territory's men threw a big jar down.

Crack.

The jar burst open when it hit the ground and a black red liquid instantly spread out. The jar was actually filled with sticky, fresh blood. Moreover, with the fresh blood spreading out, a thick stench of blood emitted outwards.

Seeing this scene, Mu Feng and the others' expressions became disgusted.

"The effects of just animal blood aren't that great." Liu Qingtian smelled the stench of the blood and a hint of coldness surged through his eyes again. He suddenly waved his sleeves and dozens of Liu Territory's men were blasted out. Shrill screams emitted out instantly.

Boom.

Liu Qingtian had an expressionless face and flicked his fingers. Numerous Spiritual Energy lights erupted out and fiercely bombarded the dozen individuals.

Bang!

A deep cry rang out. The dozen individuals actually exploded in midair and a mist of blood poured down. This scene was extremely bloody.

Mu Feng and the others' eyes turned quite gloomy and dark.

Roar!

Just when their eyes turned gloomy, numerous roars finally rang out from the depths if the Black Eerie Swamp. The roars were filled with violent Spiritual Energy fluctuations.

High Rank Spiritual Beasts!

Mu Feng's face finally turned completely pale. Liu Qingtian's scheme was really ruthless!

Chapter 57 – Seizing an Opportunity

Roar!

When the bloodthirsty roars rang out from a distance away, Mu Feng and the others had turned pale. They actually fell for the trap that the Liu Territory designed this time.

“Mu Feng, how is it? Do you like this big gift?” Liu Qingtian stared down from above at Mu Feng. The sounds of laughter had a bit of sarcasm within it: “Just how much time do you think we, the Liu Territory, had spent on this Nine Netherbird plan? You think that you’re qualified to compete with us just because you earned a little bit of information?

“Forget it, since you came, you’ll have to pay a price. Just treat it as buying a lesson.”

Mu Feng stared coldly at Liu Qingtian. However, he did not plan on arguing with him. His eyes flashed and he was constantly thinking for a method. From the Spiritual Energy fluctuations within the roars earlier, it was definitely High Rank Spiritual Beasts. If they were entangled by these High Rank Spiritual Beasts, they would definitely be gravely injured and thoroughly consume their strength even if they manage to resolve it. At this moment, Liu Qingtian and the others would not give up on this opportunity.

However, if they were to leave now, they would follow the Liu Territory’s intentions. They would not be able to stop them from obtaining the Nine Netherbird. And once the Liu Territory obtains the Nine Netherbird, the Mu Territory would be in great danger.

In this situation, they were forced into a great dilemma.

“What should we do now?” Zhou Ye could not help but ask.

“We’ll first look at the situation.” Mu Feng whispered with a pale expression.

Beside him, Mu Chen also frowned. The bastards from the Liu

Territory sure are disgusting and are always trying to trouble them.

Roar!

While the Mu Territory's men remained on alert, a beast's roar resounded again from the distant. Then, everybody heard the sound of the winds breaking approaching quickly. Soon, three lights quickly charged over from the depths of the Black Eerie Swamp and appeared around the mountain cliffs.

"3 High Rank Spiritual Beast!" Seeing the three lights, Mu Feng could not help but grit his teeth.

Under everybody's nervous gazes, the three lights swiftly revealed their huge bodies above the cliff. Their scarlet beast eyes were filled with bloodthirstiness and brutality.

On the left mountain cliff, there was a blood-red, giant lion. A pair of sharp, purple wings was on the back of the lion and it looked extremely majestic.

On the right mountain cliff, there was a completely black, giant beast and it seemed to be made of steel. The sunlight shone down on its body and made it extremely dazzling. It was as if it was a killing machine.

"Purple Winged Lion!"

"Blacksteel Beast!"

When Duan Wei and the others saw the two giant beasts, their faces changed and they exclaimed loudly. It really is a High Rank Spiritual Beasts. These two Spiritual Beasts probably possess the strength of a Spirit Stage Initial Phase.

"That is an "Aquablaze Crane!"

Mu Feng's eyes swept pass the two High Rank Spiritual Beasts and landed on the final one. His eyes instantly turned serious. It was a huge black crane. However, the wings of the crane revealed

different colors. One was a blue like the flowing water, while the other was fiery red like a flame. When they flapped, it was quite beautiful as it was like fire and water rushing out.

However, a deadly force was within this brilliance.

The Aquablaze Crane was the strongest amongst the three High Rank Spiritual Beasts. Its strength had reached the Spirit Stage Middle Phase!

“Mu Feng, it seems that you’re quite unlucky. Even the Aquablaze Crane was lured out. It seems that we’ll be able to witness a good fight between men and beast.” Liu QIngtian stared at this formation and could not help but laugh. Then, he waved his hand and his men secretly hid in the cliff. Right now, the High Rank Spiritual Beasts were lured by the blood below and were not aware of them.

“Assholes!” Zhou Ye gritted his teeth and his eyes were filled with fury.

“Territory Lord, what should we do? If we were to fight against the three High Rank Spiritual Beasts, we would probably suffer sneak attacks from the Liu Territory after we dealt with them.” Duan Wei said with a worried expression.

Mu Feng’s eyes turned grim. At this moment, the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts had already targeted them. If they were not going to fight, they must retreat. However, he really wasn’t willing to retreat now.

Seeing Mu Feng’s flashing eyes, Duan Wei and the others did not dare to disturb him. They could only stare at the 3 eagerly High Rank Spiritual Beasts as their palms began to fill with cold sweat.

Mu Chen also understood the situation that they were in. He frowned and an idea flashed through his head. Shortly after, he narrowed his eyes and a light seemed to have passed through the night-like black eyes of his.

“Dad.” Mu Chen said out quietly.

“Eh?” Mu Feng responded absently. He was showing a troublesome expression and had a headache due to thinking too much.

“Can Uncle Zhou and you block off these 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts?” Mu Chen asked.

Mu Feng glanced at him and nodded his head helplessly as he said: “But this way, your Uncle Zhou and I would both consume a great deal of strength. Once the two of us are weakened, Liu Qingtian would definitely attack.”

“You don’t have to kill these 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts. It’s fine as long as you block them off while allowing yourself to consume the least amount of energy.” Mu Chen said.

“Entering into a stalemate like that would not benefit us.” Mu Feng frowned and said: “If we cannot kill these 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts, we can only go away.”

“I have a plan to get rid of them.” Mu Chen hesitated as he spoke.

Mu Feng’s body trembled at this moment. He looked in surprise at Mu Chen. Beside him, Zhou Ye and the others also had an incredulous expression as they stared at Mu Chen.

These were 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts. They are comparable to Spirit Stage powerhouses. How is it possible for Mu Chen, who is merely a Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase, to get rid of them?

“You don’t necessarily have to rely on your fists to get rid of them.” Mu Chen curled his lips and said with a smile: “There’s something calling seizing the opportunity. It’s something I enjoy doing the most. In the Spiritual Road, it saved me many times.”

“What are you ultimately planning to do?” Mu Feng could not help but ask. Could this boy really have a way of dealing with it?

“There’s no time to explain. You should stall them while I go

prepare.” Mu Chen stared at the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts that would lunge over at any time. There was no time to explain it in detail, so he could only urge them to do it.

Hearing this, Mu Feng and Zhou Ye exchanged glances and gritted their teeth as they nodded. Right now, Mu Chen truly made them feel assured. Since he said this, then, he really should have some sort of plan.

“I’ll leave this place to you.”

Mu Chen did not say anything more and immediately turned around. He quickly vanished as he rushed towards the outside.

“Someone ran?” Seeing Mu Chen escape, Liu Qingtian, who was concerned about the movements of Mu Feng and the others, frowned and spoke.

“The one that ran away was Mu Chen. What is he planning to do? Is he planning to escape by himself?” Liu Mubai whispered in confusion. He did not know why, but he always felt a slight unease coming from Mu Chen.

“Forget it. We should not care about him. He is only a boy at the Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase. Without Mu Feng and the other’s protection, he probably wouldn’t be able to escape the Black Eerie Swamp.” Liu Qingtian was not too concerned. Compared to the pillars of the Mu Territory, Mu Feng and Zhou Ye, who would care about a measly Mu Chen?

Liu Mubai also nodded. He had indeed overestimated Mu Chen. How is it possible for him to reverse the situation they are in? What nonsense.

Boom!

While they were talking, a dense Spiritual Energy erupted out from below. They saw Mu Feng and Zhou Ye charging out in the lead as they headed straight towards the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts staring at them.

Mu Feng stopped the Aquablaze Crane and the Blacksteel Beast. After all, he was at the Spirit Stage Late Phase. He would not be disadvantaged even if he was fighting against two by himself.

On the other hand, Zhou Ye was only at the Spirit Stage Initial Phase. He was neck and neck against the Purple Winged Lion.

This amazing confrontation instantly set off bursts of Spiritual Energy impacts. Every time they fought against each other, the air seemed to tremble.

Liu Qingtian let out a playful smile as he stared at the fierce battle. However, his eyes remained cold. Mu Feng, just attack with all your strength. Since you're unwilling to leave, then leave your life behind here!

When the fierce battle broke out in the valley, Mu Chen quickly scurried out. Then, he leapt onto a hill and his eyes looked at a vast black forest. He hands instantly turned over and a flute covered with engravings appeared in his hand.

This item was the Spirit Bug Flute that he had obtained before!

Chapter 58 – Luring Bees

Mu Chen gripped on the icy cold Spirit Bug Flute and he contemplated for a while. Then, he no longer hesitated and placed the flute at his lips. The Spiritual Energy within his body surged out and was blown into the Spirit Bug Flute.

Mu Chen wasn't a Spirit Bug User. He naturally did not have the ability to activate the Spirit Bug Flute. However, he knew the basic method of using it. If it was an experienced Spirit Bug User, they would be able to lure over the Spirit Bugs that they wanted with their Spirit Bug Flute. However, Mu Chen could not do this. But luckily, the most massive population within the Black Eerie Swamp was the Devouring Spirit Bees. It should be feasible for him to lure them over if he blew the Spirit Bug Flute at this place.

Wuuuu!

As the idea flashed through Mu Chen's mind, the Spirit Bug Flute also emitted a faint light. The engravings on it also activated and a strange sound wave came out from the Spirit Bug Flute. Then, it spread out far away.

The sound wave wasn't particularly loud. It was even to the point where it would be easily overlooked if you do not listen to it carefully. However, Mu Chen knew that the Spirit Bugs were extremely sensitive to this kind of sound wave.

Mu Chen continued to pour Spiritual Energy into the Spirit Bug Flute and allowed the sound waves to spread out endlessly. Moreover, he took the time to watch at the sky in the depths of the Black Eerie Swamp. At that location, the Spiritual Energy fluctuation was gradually become more violent. It seems that his dad and Uncle Zhou had already began to fight against the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts.

He must hurry!

A hint of anxiety passed through Mu Chen's eyes. The 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts aren't weaklings. For his dad and Uncle Zhou, every minute that they are entangled with the Spiritual Beasts means a minute of consumption. When their strength is consumed to a certain extent, the men from the Liu Territory hiding in secret would definitely attack.

And that scene was something that Mu Chen did not wish to see.

The sound from the flute leisurely spread out. However, there wasn't much movement occurring in the distance. This made Mu Chen's palms sweat. Was his method useless?

Although he said it confidently in front of Mu Feng and the others, that was only comforting them. Mu Chen knew the struggle occurring in Mu Feng's heart. Since Mu Feng didn't want to leave like this and let the Liu Territory obtain the Nine Netherbird, but at the same time, he did not want the Liu Territory to stealthily attack them, Mu Chen could only think of this plan to break through this extremely unfavorable situation.

If he was unable to lure the Devouring Spirit Bees over, his method of seizing an opportunity would be useless.

"Brothers, please give me some face!" Mu Chen muttered in his heart.

While Mu Chen was waiting anxiously, the time quickly passed. In a blink of an eye, nearly ten minutes had passed. The Spiritual Energy fluctuation in the valley was getting even more violent. Even the earth started to tremble, it was evident that the battle was becoming more intense.

He didn't have much time left!

Mu Chen gritted his teeth and was prepared to turn around. The gaze he stared at the distant suddenly became serious and joy filled his face.

"It's coming!"

In a distant location, a black cloud covered the sky and swiftly approached. A unique buzzing sound came from afar.

The Devouring Spirit Bees were finally lured over!

Mu Chen endured the joy within his heart and put away the Spirit Bug Flute. He immediately turned and scurried back towards the valley.

...

Boom!

In the valley, a violent Spiritual Energy exploded forth. It caused the cliffs to tremble and a few boulders rolled down from the cliff.

Duan Wei and the others stared nervously at the two battle circles. At that location, there were 2 Humans and 3 Beasts. They had already collided fiercely with each other and the lights from Spiritual Energy surged out. It turned the rubbles within the valley into powder.

“Damn it!”

Seeing this stalemate, Duan Wei looked at the certain location on the mountain cliff again. At that place, a cold gaze stared downwards. It was obvious that this situation was what the Liu Territory intended it to be.

“The Little Lord hasn’t come back yet?” Someone looked behind and could not help but speak.

Duan Wei shook his head with a bitter smile. He did not know what Mu Chen had gone to do. However, from his earlier appearance, he probably did this because he had some sort of idea. However, he did not know whether or not Mu Chen’s idea would be able to help them break out of this predicament.

“Just wait a little longer. If the Liu Territory dares to attack, we would not let them have an easy time!” Duan Wei grinded his teeth and said.

The other people nodded as well. Their eyes flashed fiercely.

Just when they were beginning their preparations, a sudden sound rang out from behind. They hastily turned their heads back and saw Mu Chen's figure quickly approaching.

"Little Lord!" Seeing this, Duan Wei and the others were happy.

"Dad, Uncle Zhou, retreat." Mu Chen stared at the two battle circles and shouted out.

Mu Feng and Zhou Ye, who had always been waiting for news from Mu Chen, instantly retreated backwards. However, the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts were hot in pursuit.

Mu Chen stared at the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts as they chased over and gripped his palm. A bottle emerged and he opened the bottle. A strange fragrance emitted out from within it.

Bang.

Mu Chen smacked the bottle and the black liquid within flew out. Mu Chen's palms moved and his Spiritual Energy was like the wind as it spread the black liquid apart. It turned into black moist air and smashed into the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beast's body.

The black moist air stuck itself on the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts' body. However, they did not give the slightest reaction to it. They did not even care about Mu Chen, who was like a weak ant-like existence in their eyes, and continued chasing after Mu Feng.

Duan Wei and the others were also confused when they saw Mu Chen's strange actions.

"Enter that fissure!" Mu Chen pointed at a mountain crack nearby and quickly shouted.

Duan Wei and the others looked at each other. However, they immediately gritted their teeth and nodded their head. They charged straight into the crack within the mountain. Mu Chen also

quickly followed them. In the rear, Mu Feng and the others were at the back and they caused the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts to retreat by erupting out a dense amount of Spiritual Energy.

“What are they doing?”

The Liu Territory’s men watched the Mu Territory’s men enter the crack within the mountain and were stunned. If they did this, isn’t that just cutting off all paths of escape? When did these guys become so stupid?

Liu Qingtian also frowned. With Mu Feng’s intelligence, how could he do such a stupid thing?

“Big Brother?” Liu Ming whispered. It was obvious that he was unsure of this situation as well.

Liu Qingtian narrowed his eyes. Then in the next moment, his face suddenly changed. He lifted his head and stared at the outside of the valley. A buzzing sound suddenly became louder.

“This is…Devouring Spirit Bees?”

Liu Ming and the others also noticed it. They hurried lifted their heads and they saw a black cloud enshrouding the sky within their sights. A buzzing sound echoed in the valley.

“Roar!”

The 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts in the valley also noticed the Devouring Spirit Bees approaching. They instantly let out uneasy growls. Against such a terrifying amount of Devouring Spirit Bees, even High Rank Spiritual Beasts would be in a predicament.

The black cloud finally poured into the valley like a black torrent. They did not stop at all and rushed in like a flood. Then, under the gazes of both Mu Feng and Liu Qingtian’s men, they charged straight towards the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts.

Roarrr!

After being surrounded by the black cloud, the 3 High Rank

Spiritual Beasts instantly struggled fiercely. The violent Spiritual Energy constantly erupted out and they squashed thousands of Devouring Spirit Bees. However, following this, they were surrounded by even more Devouring Spirit Bees.

Mu Feng and the others watched as the roaring sounds became increasingly faint within the black clouds. They could not help but shiver. Afterwards, they slowly turned their heads towards the boy, who was smiling brilliant, and their faces turned stiff.

Could this...be the plan that Mu Chen mentioned?

But how did he attract all these Devouring Spirit Bees over and made them attack only the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts?

The scheme he devised was too incredible!

Chapter 59 – Arrival

Buzz!

The Devouring Spirit Bees' unique buzzing sounds echoed within the valley. It made everybody feel horrified. Especially since there were 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts struggling within the black torrent.

Because of the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts' resistance, the valley floor was covered with corpses of Devouring Spirit Bees. Moreover, the Devouring Spirit Bees did not show the slightest signs of retreating and their scarlet eyes stared crazily at the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts. Waves and waves of attacks continued to charge over at them.

The black torrent seemed to form into a gigantic storm and anywhere that storm passed by, only white bones would remain for any living creature.

The two groups of men hidden in the valley shivered as they stared at the scene in front of them. At this moment, no matter which party was involved, they would probably be completely annihilated.

Mu Chen's body was also hidden in the crack inside the body of the mountain. He peered through the gaps and stared inside the valley. The Spirit Bug Flute and the black liquid with a strange fragrance were already returned to his Mustard Seed Bracelet. He did not dare reveal it all. If it attracted the Devouring Spirit Bees over, there was truly no way out for them.

The black storm inside the valley lasted for approximately ten minutes. The original fierce and powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuations gradually weakened until it finally disappeared completely.

When the 3 Spiritual Energy fluctuations disappeared, everybody

knew that the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts were also wiped out by the Devouring Spirit Bees...This made Mu Feng and the others smack their lips. Although the Devouring Spirit Bees were quite weak individually, they became one of the most deadliest creatures within the Black Eerie Swamp.

After the enormous swarm of Devouring Spirit Bees eliminated the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts, it circled the valley once before quickly disappearing with its buzzing sound.

As the Devouring Spirit Bees left, Mu Feng and the others drilled out from the fissure and gaze at the center of the valley. Only bones remained of the 3 originally majestic High Rank Spiritual Beasts. Traces of blood cling onto the white bones, making it look particularly cold.

At this moment, Mu Chen walked over leisurely and obtained the 3 abnormally dazzling Spiritual Beasts' Soul Essences from within their cranial. He did not show any restraint and placed it within his Mustard Seed Bracelet.

This was a High Rank Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence. Its value far surpassed the ones that they obtained earlier in the Northern Spiritual Field. This level of Soul Essence would even make Spirit Stage powerhouses moved.

After collecting the Spiritual Beasts' Soul Essences, Mu Chen smiled and raised his head. He stared at the mountain cliff and said: "What other schemes do you have? You want to continuing leading the High Rank Spiritual Beasts over? I don't mind luring the Devouring Spirit Bees over again."

In the cliff, the Liu Territory's men all had exceptionally ugly expression. Liu Qingtian's eyes also narrowed and he fixed his eyes at Mu Chen as he said with an incredulous tone: "You lured the Devouring Spirit Bees over?"

"You think that you were the one who did it?" Mu Chen's smile turned cold and said: "I think that you guys should hurry and get

out of the Black Eerie Swamp. Otherwise, you might end up having the same fate as them when the swarm of Devouring Spirit Bees appears again.

The Liu Territory's men were slightly in a mess. Liu Zong, Liu Ming and the others' expressions all changed. They had personally seen how powerful the swarm of Devouring Spirit Bees was. If they fell inside of the swarm, they would definitely die.

"You immature and inexperienced brat, you're still too inexperienced if you want to intimidate me!" Liu Qingtian recovered from the shock and let out a cold sneer as he said: "You might have lured the Devouring Spirit Bees over, but it was obvious that you do not have the ability to manipulate them. The black mist that you sent over before was probably the reason why the swarm of Devouring Spirit Beast would attack the 3 High Rank Spiritual Beasts, right?"

Mu Chen smiled. However, he was shocked at how sharp Liu Qingtian was. He was able to see his earlier actions clearly.

"Mu Feng, you have a good son!"

Liu Qingtian stared coldly at Mu Feng. They should have been able to severely injure the Mu Territory today, yet they were stopped by a boy. This made them feel wrathful flames within their hearts.

"Ohoho thank you for the praise." Mu Feng also laughed and said: "Liu Qingtian, so what other schemes do you have? Are you going to fight personally now? That's great, it's been a while since I sought advice from you. Why don't we have a fight here?"

Liu Qingtian turned gloomy. Although he was quite furious, he still understood that it wasn't the time for them to fight against the Mu Territory. Otherwise, they would suffer too much damage and would not be able to obtain the Nine Netherbird.

"Let's see how long you can act proud!"

Liu Qingtian's voice was cold as he spoke. Then, he no longer said anything and waved his hand. He gathered the Liu Territory's men and headed quickly to the depths of the Black Eerie Swamp. Right now, they did not want to waste time to stop Mu Feng and the others. This is because they knew that it would end up all in vain.

"Let's go, we'll follow them!"

Seeing this, Mu Feng let out a cold cry. His body charged out and led the Mu Territory's men as they followed behind Liu Qingtian. After the Liu Territory's plan failed, they were not able to get rid of the Mu Territory's men anymore.

The two groups of men quickly entered the Black Eerie Swamp one after another. This time, Liu Qingtian and the others became more honest. They no longer dared to cause any more trouble since they were afraid of getting involved in it as well.

Along the way, the two groups of men cautiously headed forward and did not dare to disturb the other Spiritual Beasts. This rapid pace lasted for approximately half an hour.

After half an hour since the two groups of men advanced vigilantly, the black color in the valley began to subside and their vision widened up.

"Swish!"

Mu Feng's team stepped out of the valley and appeared on top of a high slope. He gazed in front and his expression became serious.

In front of him was a vast basin. The ground at this place seemed to be burned by flames, causing it to show a charred color. Of course, the thing that frightened them the most wasn't this, but the white bones within the basin.

From the sizes, these bones were probably from Spiritual Beasts. They assumed a posture where they are crazily running towards the front. From their appearance, it seemed that something had attracted them and made them unable to free themselves.

Mu Chen stared at the white bones on the ground and sucked in cold air. Just what happened over here? Why did so many Spiritual Beasts die...

His eyes slightly went up and stared in front. Then, he saw it. In the center of the basin, there is a large black volcanic mountain. The dark zone on the very peak of the mountain seemed to be like a demon's gigantic mouth and would devour everything.

"This place..."

Mu Chen's eyes turned serious. The scene in front of him was somewhat familiar. He pondered for a moment before he remembered. This scene was exactly the same as the one inscribed on the copper piece!

Mu Chen tilted his head and exchanged glances with Mu Feng. He could tell from the other person's eyes that he was surprised and delighted.

It was apparent that this place is where the Nine Netherbird was located at!

It was also where their goal was located at!

Chapter 60 – The Strange Rock

Inside the black basin, a cool breeze blew and the numerous dense bones trembled slightly. This scene made everybody shiver.

“This place is where the Nine Netherbird is located at!”

In this area, the eyes of the two groups of men lit up. The gazes they used to stare at the black volcano were mouth-watering and filled with heat.

Liu Qingtian’s eyes were burning. He immediately turned around and stared at Mu Feng. Then, he let out a sneer as his dense Spiritual Energy surged out and he charged straight towards the volcano.

Behind him, Liu Zong, Liu Ming, Liu Mubai and the others also immediately follow.

“Let’s move!”

Mu Feng also let out a deep shout. The dense Spiritual Energy erupted out from within his body and formed into a huge flame bird. The Dragonfire Bird’s wings shook and turned into a flash of light. Afterwards, Mu Feng jumped onto the back of the Dragonfire Bird.

The human and bird charged out. This violent Spiritual Energy directly caused a storm to appear in midair.

“Hmph!”

Seeing Mu Feng head over, Liu Qingtian’s eyes turned cold. He let out a low cry and a Silverlight erupted out from within his body. A giant silver beast emerged soon after.

This giant beast was like a giant ape. However, the entire body was filled with silver scales. On the scales, lightning flashed across them. Moreover, lightning rumbling sounds actually burst out as it howled.

“This is...the Lightning Scale Beast?” Mu Chen stared at the gigantic silver beast behind Liu Qingtian and was slightly surprised. This was a powerful Spiritual Beast ranked at the 133th place in the Myriad Beast Record’s Earth Ranking. Although it had not reached the Heaven Rank Spiritual Beasts, it was still a top existence amongst the High Rank Spiritual Beasts.

“Bang!”

The Lightning Scale Beast stopped on the ground and lightning surged out. It carried Liu Qingtian as it stopped Mu Feng.

“Haha, Liu Qingtian, you finally couldn’t resist on fighting? Then let me see, how much we’ve both improved over the past year!” Seeing this, Mu Feng was not afraid and instead laughed. The Dragonfire Bird beneath him let out a sharp cry and charged towards Liu Qingtian as it released out a violent, fiery red Spiritual Energy.

Boom!

The two massive monsters collided fiercely with each other in midair. The violent Spiritual Energy impact caused many of the bones below to shatter.

The Territory Lords from the Mu Territory and Liu Territory had already begun their fight. The men from both sides naturally would not be polite with each other and their eyes were filled with viciousness as they charged at each other.

“Leave Zhou Ye to me!”

The Liu Territory’s second master, Liu Zong, stared darkly at Zhou Ye, who was leading the Mu Territory’s men over. With a cold cry, a green light emitted out and a illusionary giant beast formed behind him.

It was a giant scorpion who was completely green. A faint fragrance came out from its body and it was obvious that it was poisonous.

“Jaded Venomous Scorpion, ranked at the 204th place in the Myriad Beast Record’s Earth Ranking.” Mu Chen immediately recognized the jaded scorpion when he noticed it.

Don!

The men from both sides had finally fought with each other. The sounds from the fight also broke the silence within this place and the Spiritual Energy endlessly emitted out along with murderous intent.

Under Duan Wei and the others’ protection, Mu Chen also collided against the Liu Territory’s men. However, he quickly rushed past and did not hesitate to shoot off like an arrow towards the black volcano.

“Mubai, stop him!”

Seeing this, Liu Ming, who was fighting against Duan Wei, instantly cried out.

Liu Mubai nodded his head when he heard this and turned around. He quickly chased after Mu Chen.

When Mu Chen heard the sounds of winds breaking behind him, the corner of his eyes twitched and he frowned slightly. He immediately circulated the Spiritual Energy within his body and infused it into his legs, causing his speed to accelerate again.

“You want to run away?!” Seeing this, Liu Mubai snorted and accelerated as well in order to pursue him.

The two of them quickly jumped into the black basin one after another and approached the black volcano. They climbed up the steep mountain cliff like a nimble monkey.

“Swish!”

Just when Mu Chen was rapidly arriving at the peak, Mu Chen suddenly felt a fierce wind shooting out from behind him. He immediately lunged forward and pressed onto the ground with his

palms. His body rotated in midair.

Ding!

A sharp dagger fiercely inserted itself at the location where Mu Chen would have landed on. It directly pierced through the hard volcanic mountain.

Swish Swish!

Liu Mubai gripped his hands again and a couple of daggers were fired out again. This time, he directly aimed it in front of Mu Chen. It was obvious that he was trying to drive Mu Chen to retreat.

Feeling the sounds of wind breaking, Mu Chen gripped his hand and numerous Spiritual Seals quickly emerged. Then, it shot out and quickly integrated itself into the air.

Chi Chi!

Numerous light beams emerged. The air became distorted and Spiritual Energy fluctuations stormed out from the beams of Spiritual Energy. It directly blocked out all the daggers.

When he arranged the tiny Spiritual Array for defense, Mu Chen did not plan on letting Liu Mubai have an easy time. He passed through a pile of sharp volcanic rocks and let out an whirlwind kick with one feet as he stepped on the ground with the other.

The sharp volcanic rocks instantly covered the sky as it fired off towards Liu Mubai, who was behind Mu Chen.

“Bang Bang!”

Seeing this, Liu Mubai clenched his hands into a fist and punched out. The fiery red Spiritual Energy mixed with the violent winds shattered the volcanic rocks that were shot over.

Although Liu Mubai blocked the attack, his speed was reduced slightly. He watched as Mu Chen took advantage of this gap and scurried away like a nimble monkey. He could not help but grit his teeth before hurriedly chasing after Mu Chen again.

The two of them continued to display various means to block the other. Anything that could be utilized was used by them. This scene seemed quite lively. However, only the two of them could feel how dangerous it was. They had never shown any mercy when they attacked.

Swoosh!

After a few minutes while one chased and the other ran, Mu Chen was a step earlier to reach the peak of the black volcano. The peak was a sunken crater. However, it was quite dark so Mu Chen was not able to see what was inside.

“Boom!”

Mu Chen’s eyes swept across the crater of the volcano. Behind him, the fist winds bombarded over from behind. He hesitated for a moment before dropping straight down into the volcano’s crater.

Liu Mubai followed him in hot pursuit. He noticed Mu Chen entering the dark volcano’s crater and hesitated for a moment as well. However, he soon gritted his teeth and followed.

The two of them quickly slide into the crater of the volcano and landed vigorously inside of the volcano’s crater.

Inside the volcano’s crater, the lights were dimmed and it was filled with black volcanic rocks.

Mu Chen’s gaze quickly scanned across. But to his surprise, he did not see any traces of the Nine Netherbird. There were only many black volcano rocks here caused by the volcanic impact at this location.

As Liu Mubai entered the crater, he did not immediately attack Mu Chen. He also scanned the surroundings to search for traces of the Nine Netherbird.

The two of them scanned the surroundings, yet their eyes were filled with doubt.

Mu Chen frowned. He carefully moved around the bottom of the crater and continued to search.

At the same time, Liu Mubai also glanced at Mu Chen before moving away. It was apparent that he had the same idea as Mu Chen.

The bottom of the volcano's crater wasn't too spacious. The two of them quickly went in a circle, but they did not have any harvest. This made the doubt within their eyes grow even further.

Could what the copper piece mentioned be fake?

Mu Chen curled his lips and searched the surroundings. At this moment, he had unconsciously walked to the center of the bottom crater. At this location, there were a couple of gigantic, black volcanic rocks that had been pushed out by the volcano in the surroundings.

He stared at these gigantic, black volcanic rocks, yet he did not see anything. He sighed helplessly in his heart and was about to turn around. However, he suddenly stopped and gripped his palms within his sleeves. Then, the ancient copper piece emerged within his palms. At this moment, the copper piece emitted out a faint heat.

"This copper piece...Can it sense the location of the Nine Netherbird?"

An idea appeared in Mu Chen's mind. He immediately looked quietly at Liu Mubai, who was searching at another direction, before heading quietly towards the gigantic, black volcanic rocks.

He touched each of the black rocks as he passed by. Shortly after, he stopped moving and stared at the slightly shining, gigantic black rock in front of him. As he stood here, the copper piece within his hand turned exceptionally hot.

Chapter 61 – The Mysterious Black Egg

The gigantic black rock that was in front of Mu Chen was approximately dozens of Zhang [1.It is a Chinese measure of length which is approximately 3.3 m] tall. There were shattered holes on it, yet it was particularly smooth as if was eroded by magma before.

Mu Chen's palms lightly touched the gigantic black rock. He could feel the ancient copper piece within his palms becoming abnormally hot.

"Could the Nine Netherbird be inside?"

An idea flashed through Mu Chen's mind and his eyes twinkled. Then, he looked at Liu Mubai, who was on the other side, and clenched his fist. A dark black Spiritual Energy surged through his palms and the Limitless Death Seal emerged on the surface of his fist.

Boom!

Mu Chen drew his arm back towards him before blasting out a fierce punch. The sounds of the winds breaking broke out from the short distance. It smashed heavily onto the gigantic black rock as the arm was wrapped by Spiritual Energy.

Bang!

Mu Chen's fist landed on the gigantic black rock and a deep sound rang out. The giant rock shuddered for a bit. Then, Mu Chen was able to see cracks quietly spreading out from behind the fist.

Crack.

Pieces of rubble continued to fall down endlessly from the gigantic rock. The speed of how fast the cracks spread accelerated and it soon filled the enormous rock.

Seeing this scene, Mu Chen took a step backwards carefully. After that punch, he had already discovered that the inside of the rock was hollow...

The gigantic rock continued to tremble and pieces of rubble constantly fell down. Just when Mu Chen was staring at it, his eyes narrowed. This is because he saw a black light emitting out from the cracks of the gigantic rock.

The commotion over here also attracted Liu Mubai's attention. He also stared in surprise at the trembling rock and a hint of surprise appeared in his eyes.

Black lights shot out from the cracks in the rock. A wave of fluctuation spread out and the gigantic rock exploded open after a banging sound.

The rubble shot out and a few crossed through Mu Chen's body. However, he remained motionless and stared at the location where the rubble shot out from. At that location, the gigantic black rock had already erupted and a dark black light quietly appeared as it floated in the bottom of the crater.

As the light floated in the air, a 1 Zhang tall black egg seemed to be inside the light. The black egg was smooth and completely black. On the surface of the egg's shell, there were a couple of exceptionally obscure and mysterious engravings on it. The engravings seemed to be a mysterious black bird spreading its wings out and it protected the egg.

"This is..."

Mu Chen's eyes twinkled when he saw the shining black egg. He hesitated for a moment and joy filled his eyes. From the image within the copper piece, the Nine Netherbird seemed to have turned into a black egg and landed here in the end. Could it be the one in front of him?

When Mu Chen saw the black egg, Liu Mubai was also aware of

it. Greed instantly gushed out from his eyes and he charged straight for the black egg.

Seeing this, Mu Chen's eyes flashed. However, he did not recklessly rush over. He did not believe that it would be that easy to obtain the Nine Netherbird.

Liu Mubai quickly approached the black egg. But just when he was about to enter a couple of Zhang distance away from the black egg, a black light blasted out from the surface of the egg.

Bang!

The black light fiercely bombarded Liu Mubai's body. His originally moving body was shot backwards and he landed heavily on the ground. He could not help but spit out fresh blood.

Fizz!

After the black egg caused Liu Mubai to fly backwards, it seems to be activated and a black light wrapped around its surroundings. Then, it slowly flew up to the sky above the crater.

Seeing this, Mu Chen hurriedly rushed out of the crater and appeared on the peak of the volcano.

Fizzzz!

The black egg finally suspended itself on the sky above the crater. Black lights emitted out and caused the Spiritual Energy within the world to become violent.

This commotion soon attracted everybody's attention. Mu Feng and Liu Qingtian both retreated backwards and stared bewilderedly at the mysterious black egg that appeared.

"Dad, the black egg is formed by the Nine Netherbird. Hurry and take it away!" Liu Mubai also helplessly followed him above and let out a cry.

"The Nine Netherbird?!"

Liu Qingtian's eyes narrowed and ecstasy flowed out from within

his heart. His body turned into a blurry figure as he charged like a lightning towards the mysterious black egg above the crater.

Seeing this, Mu Feng did not want to fall behind and immediately followed.

The two of them were extremely fast and charged to the crater in an instant. They both extended their palms and wanted to capture the mysterious black egg.

“Dad, don’t!”

Mu Chen’s eyes remained fixed on the mysterious black egg. However, he suddenly remembered the skeleton that he met within the Black Eerie Swamp. His heart was suddenly filled with anxiety and he immediately shouted out.

Mu Feng, who was about to seize the mysterious black egg, heard this cry and was slightly surprised. His eyes twinkled and he gritted his teeth. Then, he actually forced himself to stop his body from moving.

Although this was a rare opportunity, he still suppressed the impulse he had within his heart because of the trust he had for Mu Chen.

On the other hand, Liu Qingtian let out a sneer when Mu Feng stopped and touched the mysterious egg with a finger. Just when he was able to take it for himself, his face suddenly changed.

Fizz!

A strange sound came out from the mysterious black egg. Liu Qingtian’s finger, which touched the mysterious black egg, actually quickly became charred and an enormous pain emitted out from his finger.

This sudden change of events made Liu Qingtian’s expression change. He struggled frantically, but found that his finger was stuck to the black egg as if it was glued on. No matter how he struggled, he was unable to get rid of it. Moreover, what made him

terrified was that the Spiritual Energy within his body actually quickly flowed into the black egg through his finger.

“Damn it!”

Liu Qingtian let out an angry howl and his eyes turned ruthless. He raised his blade and actually cut off the finger that was in direct contact with the mysterious black egg.

The finger dropped down and blood spattered out. Liu Qingtian endured the pain from it and desperately retreated backwards.

All this events happened in an instant. Mu Feng was the closest and he clearly saw the scene. He immediately trembled as he stared at the mysterious egg. This item wasn’t a weakling. It was fortunate that he was stopped by Mu Chen earlier. Otherwise, he would probably pay an even greater price.

“Big Brother!”

Seeing the desperately retreating Liu Qingtian, Liu Zong and the others hurried over towards him. Their eyes twitched when they saw that Liu Qingtian’s finger was chopped off.

“Be careful, this damn thing is a bit strange!” Liu Qingtian hurriedly circulated his Spiritual Energy, stopped the blood at his chopped of finger and said with a grim expression.

Liu Zong and the others nodded. It seems that it wasn’t that easy to obtain the Nine Netherbird.

Mu Feng also landed at this moment and reunited with the Mu Territory’s men. He patted Mu Chen’s shoulder and said with a bitter smile: “It’s lucky you warned me quickly.”

Mu Chen’s eyes turned serious. His eyes remained fixed at the mysterious black egg above the crater. Then, he said softly: “Dad, be careful. I feel that something is wrong.”

Mu Feng also nodded his head. The Nine Netherbird wasn’t any ordinary Spiritual Beast. It was a super existence that was ranked

11th on the Beast Record's Earth Ranking. Compared to the Nine Netherbird, his Dragonfire Bird was worth nothing.

The atmosphere suddenly became strange. The two groups of men that were originally fighting in a life and death battle while refusing to let the other get the slightest lead suddenly did not dare to act. They only stared vigilantly and greedily at the mysterious black egg.

A breeze blew in from afar and relaxed the tensed atmosphere slightly.

Mu Chen's eyes were also fixed at the mysterious black egg. However, his eyes suddenly turned cold. This is because he discovered that the mysterious engravings on the mysterious black egg suddenly began to light up.

A strange fluctuation was quietly born from within and emitted outwards.

Chapter 62 – Unusual Change

Fizzzzz.

The mysterious black egg floated above the crater of the black volcano. At this moment, a couple of the obscure light engravings gradually lit up on the surface of the black egg. As these light engravings emerged, everybody was able to feel that the Spiritual Energy within the world suddenly became extremely violent.

Mu Feng and the others all looked solemnly at this scene. He could feel the restless movements of the Spiritual Energy within the world. A hint of unease surged through his eyes. This situation was slightly beyond his expectation.

From the image brought up by the copper piece, the Nine Netherbird should have been in an extremely weak state after failing its evolution. However, from the way the mysterious egg made Liu Qingtian cut his finger off, it seems that this item was not something they could just grab as they thought.

“Be careful.”

Mu Feng said in a low voice: “If the situation seems off, we will immediately retreat. We’ll give up on taking the Nine Netherbird.”

Zhou Ye and the others were slightly taken aback when they heard this. However, seeing Mu Feng’s serious expression, they nodded their heads. It was apparent that they noticed that something was off.

Mu Chen’s gaze was also fixed tightly at the mysterious black egg in the sky. The Nine Netherbird was too powerful. Although they did not know what level the Nine Netherbird had reached before it failed its evolution, it definitely far surpassed the strength of a Spirit Stage.

And the Nine Netherbird which possessed this strength would probably be something that nobody could subdue even if it only

possessed a couple of percent of its power from before.

Not that far away, the Liu Territory's men also stared at the mysterious black egg above the sky of the volcano as if they met a great enemy. Liu Qingtian's face turned extremely grim. On the other hand, Liu Mubai's face was turning red and blue alternately. If it wasn't for his words earlier, Liu Qingtian probably wouldn't have frantically snatched it. Moreover, in the critical moment, Mu Chen decided to shout something completely different than him and saved Mu Feng. After comparing their actions, his handsome face reddened and was filled with hatred.

"Big Brother, are you alright?" Liu Zong and Liu Ming stared at where Liu Qingtian's finger was cut off and asked with concern. If anything was to happen to Liu Qingtian, it would be a severe blow for the Liu Territory.

Liu Qingtian shook his head with a grim expression. His eyes remained fixed at the sky and did not blink at all.

"All of you should stare at it. I don't want to return empty-handed this time!" Liu Qingtian said in a gloomy voice. When the Liu Territory's men heard this, their hearts jumped and they hurriedly nodded.

Under the intense gaze from both groups, the mysterious black egg's light engravings gradually brightened up in the sky. Moreover, it followed a sense of rhythm. It would light up and darken as if it was breathing.

Fizz.

As the light engravings brightened up, the mysterious black egg suddenly trembled. Then under the surprised gazes of everyone, black light erupted out from the black egg.

The sky instantly turned dark at this moment. It seemed to have caused the day to turn into night. This change made everybody's faces change.

Cry!

Just when the darkness enshrouded the location, a clear cry resounded out in the world.

This clear cry seemed to have turned into a sound wave and spread outwards before it vanished at the end of their visions.

Mu Chen stared at the black light that enshrouded the sky. He suddenly jumped and a hint of unease appeared.

“Something’s wrong!”

Mu Feng’s face suddenly changed. He gripped his fist tightly and let out a horrified expression: “The Spiritual Energy within our body are rapidly disappearing!”

After he said this, Zhou Ye and the others’ expression changed. They hurriedly inspected their body. As expected, the Spiritual Energy within their body was vanishing abnormally.

It was as if something was sucking away the Spiritual Energy within their bodies forcibly!

After hearing Mu Feng’s cry, Mu Chen’s heart jumped. He was only at the Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase, so he was not that sensitive to the feeling of losing Spiritual Energy. Instead, Mu Feng and the others with their Spirit Stage would sense it the most.

“It’s because of the black egg!” Mu Chen said in a low voice. At this moment, the mysterious black egg was the only thing that could explain this strange scene.

Not far away, the Liu Territory’s men also entered in a commotion and sounds of exclamation rang out endlessly. It was evident that they detected this strange situation.

“Territory Lord, what should we do?” Duan Wei urgently asked. If this continues, the Spiritual Energy within their bodies would completely be exhausted. How would they leave the Black Eerie

Swamp then?

Mu Feng's eyes changed rapidly and he gritted his teeth: "Leave, we're retreating!"

This situation here was too strange. Mu Feng understood that the trip this time was too recklessly. Just what sort of existence is the Nine Netherbird? Even if it failed to evolve and was in an extremely weak state, how was it possible for them to easily get a bargain with their strength?

At this moment, there was no use being greedy anymore. No matter how precious the treasure was, it would be useless if they could not protect their lives. Therefore, Mu Feng decisively acted and led the others away.

Bang!

However, just when Mu Feng let out the order for retreat, the ground seemed to tremble like an earthquake.

"Territory Lord, look quickly!"

A voice filled with horror suddenly rang out. Mu Feng, Mu Chen and the others hastily looked up and stared behind them. They saw various lights emerged from within the Black Eerie Swamp. The lights were all powerful Spiritual Beasts. In the lead, there were at least a dozen of High Rank Spiritual Beasts!

These Spiritual Beasts were rushing over crazily towards this direction. The scene of dozen of beasts rushing over made Duan Wei and the others turn pale.

Mu Chen could not help but suck in a breath of cold air. What is this situation? Could it be that all the Spiritual Beasts within the Black Eerie Swamp would rush over?

"Hurry and dodge!"

Mu Feng's eyes twitched. He suppressed the horror within his heart and led them to a cliff. Against such amounts of beasts

rushing over, even a Spirit Stage powerhouse would have to hide.

When Mu Feng and the others hurriedly gave way to the beasts, the Liu Territory also discovered this scene. Many of the men felt powerless in their legs. This formation was definitely too terrifying.

Liu Qingtian was also shocked as well. Luckily, he did not lose his cool and brought his men away. They did not dare to appear in front of the beasts rushing over.

The two groups were separated by some distance and did not dare to make a sound. They carefully crouched down and stared at the group of Spiritual Beasts charging over from a distance.

Mu Chen fixed his gaze on the Spiritual Beasts as they charged over. His eyes instantly became serious and he noticed that signs of madness appeared in the Spiritual Beasts' eyes. It seems that something mysterious had caused them to turn berserk.

Mu Chen frowned and finally thought back to the Spirit Bug User's skeleton. He became even more alert to the Nine Netherbird that he never met. It seems that it was not simple at all.

The herd of beasts brought a trial of smoke and charged into the black basin. The dense bones that existed there earlier were squashed under their foot. However, they ignored it and charged in the direction of the mysterious egg above the crater.

Mu Chen stared at the herd of beasts and watched as they charged into the basin towards the mysterious black egg. Then, his eye narrowed when he witnessed the black bird light engraving on the mysterious black egg gently fluttering its wings as if it resurrected itself.

The originally dark sky turned even darker again.

Cry!

Another clear cry emitted out like a black sound wave again. This sound wave was as gentle as the flow of water and it spread over

towards the berserk herd of beasts galloping over.

The heaven and earth seemed to have become completely silent at this moment.

Mu Chen fiercely sucked in a breath of air. A hint of astonishment surged out from his black eyes. This was because he saw the Spiritual Beasts instantly freeze when they were affected by the black sound wave whether it was a High Rank Spiritual Beast or Low Rank Spiritual Beast. Then, their flesh would be stripped apart and revealed dense bones in the form of running over as it stood within the basin.

Mu Chen exchanged glances with Mu Feng. They both saw the shock within each other's eyes. Afterwards, they thought about the white bones that they saw earlier. So the white bones appeared like this...

In other words, it wasn't the first time that this situation occurred.

Chapter 63 – Divine Black Thundercloud

The black sound wave gently rippled and emitted outwards from the black basin. As the black sound wave passed through, all the Spiritual Beasts would instantly turn into dense bones. Not even a single trace of blood existed on the white bones.

Mu Chen and the others stared at this scene, stunned. Then, they shivered as this scene was too abnormal.

Swish.

A dense light would surged out from the Spiritual Beasts that turned into bones and form a light rainbow as it surged through the sky towards the mysterious black egg above the crater.

Fizz.

And while facing the dense light rainbow filled with Spiritual Energy, the mysterious black egg also released a black light. Then, it sucked in all of the light rainbows like a bottomless pit.

Light rainbows endlessly rise up from within the Spiritual Beasts' bodies. Under that brilliance, they devoted their lives.

Furthermore, the most horrifying thing was that the Spiritual Beasts would watch this terrifying scene occur without any panic. A hint of craziness was within their scarlet eyes. It was as if they were flies flying into a fire, yet they seemed to feel glory in their actions.

This strange contrast made Mu Chen shiver. Then, he stared at the mysterious black egg that was endlessly sucking in the light rainbows within the sky. This method had far surpassed the intelligence of all the Spiritual Beasts that Mu Chen had seen before. It was even more cruel and cunning than a human.

"That black egg is probably formed by the Nine Netherbird..." Mu Feng's face became serious as he stared in fear at the black egg absorbing many rainbows in the sky.

“The Spiritual Beasts in the Black Eerie Swamp seemed to be providing an enormous amount of Spiritual Energy to the Nine Netherbird…” Mu Chen softly spoke.

Mu Feng also nodded and said: “Moreover, it’s not the first time that a scene similar to this has occurred. Over these years, the numerous Spiritual Beasts in the Black Eerie Swamp had turned into white bones and devoted all their Spiritual Energy to the Nine Netherbird.”

“The Spiritual Beasts in the Black Eerie Swamp…” Mu Feng’s face turned strange as he said: “It seems that it was raised by the Nine Netherbird. It will let them grow and fatten up before the Nine Netherbird slaughters it to extract their Spiritual Energy.”

On the side, Duan Wei and the others all shuddered when they heard this. If it was done by a human, they wouldn’t be too surprised. However, this scenario was planned by a Spiritual Beast that was considerably powerful.

“And…Perhaps the copper piece that we obtained was also its intention. It used that to lure a few greedy humans over to absorb the Spiritual Energy away from our bodies.” Mu Feng said with a bitter smile and said: “This time, it might not think highly about us. Otherwise, I feel that we would end up no better than the Spiritual Beasts.”

Zhou Ye’s face turned pale. If this was all planned out by the Nine Netherbird, then it would be too terrifying…

Mu Chen also sighed. He knew that what his father said was mostly true. There were probably many humans that came to this place like the skeleton he met in the Black Eerie Swamp due to greed over the past years. However, the skeleton was slightly luckier as he managed to escape. Yet, he still died due to his injuries being too severe.

“Then what should we do now?” Duan Wei and the others wiped the cold sweat off their foreheads. It was still the first time for

them meeting such a terrifying Spiritual Beast. The terror didn't just come from its strength, but also from how it was cunning and ruthless like a human.

"Retreat!"

There wasn't the slightest hesitation in Mu Feng's voice: "Don't even think about the Nine Netherbird. Nobody in the Northern Spiritual Realm will be able to capture this existence. We should immediately retreat while its attention is focused on the Spiritual Beasts!"

"Yes!"

Duan Wei and the others let out a sigh of relief when they heard this. They could not see any hope in this bizarre situation. It would be a wise decision for them to leave as soon as possible.

Mu Feng seemed to have made up his mind on giving up on the Nine Netherbird. After he issued out the order, he waved his hand. A group of men quietly climbed up the cliff and cautiously headed out of the black basin.

"Big Brother, the people from the Mu Territory are retreating!" The Liu Territory was aware of the movement caused by the Mu Territory and Liu Ming shouted out quickly.

"Forget about them!" Liu Qingtian said coldly: "Something is wrong with the current situation. We would feel safer if they leave since we wouldn't have to remain alert against them."

"Then, we..." Liu Ming hesitated for a moment. In fact, he was also terribly afraid when he witnessed the scene in front of him. The mysterious black egg was too bizarre and his instincts told him that it would be smarter for him to get as far away as possible.

"Just wait a little longer!"

Signs of struggling could be seen within Liu Qingtian's eyes. However, he still gritted his teeth and said these words. The temptation of the Nine Netherbird was too great. If he was able to

obtain it, even if the possibility was extremely small, he would instantly become the lord of the Northern Spiritual Realm!

Liu Ming and Liu Zong exchanged gazes with each other and nodded. They had prepared a long time for this plan. If they were to leave now, they wouldn't be willing to accept it.

Just when the Mu Territory was quietly retreating and the Liu Territory was remaining there without giving up, thousands of Spiritual Beasts in the black basin turned into bones from the black sound wave.

Hu.

The numerous light rainbows in the sky whistled out and eventually all of them were sucked into the mysterious black egg. When the final light rainbow was sucked in, the world seemed to have become unusually quiet.

Crack.

During this silence, a sudden cracking sound rang out. It was not loud, but the Liu Territory and the Mu Territory seemed to have been shocked by lightning. Then, all their eyes fixed itself onto the mysterious black egg in fear. They could see that subtle cracks actually emerged on the surface of the black egg.

As the cracks emerged, black flames surged out and wrapped the mysterious black egg completely. When the bizarre black flame rushed out, the Spiritual Aura in the world seemed to show signs of boiling.

"This is..." Cold sweat seemed to drip down Mu Feng's face slowly. His voice became hoarse as he said: "The Nine Netherbird seems to be coming out."

Li!

Just when he finished saying those words, a cry rang out in the world from the mysterious black egg. A black flame instantly enveloped the sky like a storm.

The cracks on the surface of the black light egg were becoming increasingly concentrated. Then with a final crisping sound, it burst open.

As the black flames became increasingly violent, Mu Chen and the others were somewhat shocked to see a pair of black wings that could cover a mountain stretching out from within the flames.

The black flames continued to scorch the sky. Mu Chen and the others could vaguely see a huge shadow within the monstrous flames. It was elegantly stretching its large body as if it was resurrecting from Nirvana like a phoenix rebirthing from flames.

A horrifying Spiritual Energy pressure also emitted out at this moment. It caused the Spiritual Aura within the world to boil.

“Is this the Nine Netherbird?”

Mu Chen watched in shock at the massive creature stretching its body elegantly in the monstrous black flames. Although he was not able to see its appearance clearly, the somewhat vague outline already feels amazing.

“This fluctuation…”

Mu Feng kept a close eye at the vague outline and immediately gulped. This Spiritual Energy pressure probably wasn’t something that a Three Heavens Stage powerhouse could compare with!

They actually had a wishful thinking of capturing this sort of existence. It was truly ridiculous.

“Hurry and run!”

Mu Feng took a deep breath and gathered all the drool he had within his heart. He let out a cry and prepared to retreat no matter what.

Rumble!

However, just when Mu Feng urged his people to retreat, thunder sounds rang out in the sky. They looked up and suddenly froze. A

black thundercloud abruptly gathered above the black flames in the sky. Moreover, they could faintly feel that there was a black lightning dragon quietly surging within the thundercloud.

A destructive energy emitted out from the black thundercloud.

“This is the… Divine Black Thundercloud?”

Mu Feng stared at the black thundercloud and his eyes instantly narrowed. He could not help saying these words out as he suppressed the horror within his voice.

“Divine Black Thundercloud?” Mu Chen was stunned.

Mu Feng took a deep breath and suppressed the shock within his heart as he muttered: “The Nine Netherbird…actually hasn’t given up yet. It is still attempting to evolve!”

Chapter 64 – Evolution

"Evolve?!"

Mu Chen and the others were stunned. They stared at the massive shadow within the black flames which covered the sky. Then, he said: "Didn't it fail before?"

"That's why it would like to try again."

Signs of surprise could be seen within Mu Feng's eyes as he said: "It seems that this Nine Netherbird is extremely prideful. It had to use many schemes in order to resurrect after failing the evolution last time. Who would have thought that it would attempt to evolve again when it had just reappeared?"

Mu Chen was also surprised at the courage that this Nine Netherbird had. If one was ordinary, he would unconsciously avoid doing whatever he had failed at doing. However, this Nine Netherbird wanted to climb back up from where it had fallen. This courage, this pride..., it amazed everyone.

"Will it succeed?"

Mu Chen asked in a low voice. He lifted his head to stare at the sky filled with black thunderclouds. Within the thunderclouds, the black lightning seemed to creep around like a massive black dragon as it released an indescribable power.

"Who knows...The Nine Netherbird is originally an extremely powerful existence. It possesses the 11^{th} rank on the Myriad Beast Record's Earth Ranking. Moreover, if it successfully evolves, it would have the qualifications to charge at the Myriad Beast Record's Heaven Ranking. At that time...It will truly become a Divine Beast." Mu Feng said.

"Divine Beast..."

Mu Chen could not help but bite his lips. This simple phrase gave off an unparalleled pressure. This is because each and every one of

the Divine Beasts were super-existences within the Great Thousand Worlds. Even Sovereign-class existences would be afraid of these overlords belonging to different species.

“However…the Divine Black Lightning isn’t that easy to overcome.” Mu Feng also said gently as he stared at the enormous shadow within the black flames in the sky. In the world are many Spiritual Beasts, but, just how many of them would be able to evolve into these super-existences?

A Spiritual Beast and a Divine Beast may only be different by one word, yet there is an unsurpassable gap between them.

“It has already failed once before. Normally speaking, once one fails to overcome the lightning, the one who was attempting would be annihilated by the lightning. However, this Nine Netherbird seems to have escaped with its life before. If it fails again this time, it might not be that lucky.”

Mu Feng’s pace of retreating gradually slowed down. If the Nine Netherbird is going to attempt to overcome the lightning, then they would be safe. This is because they were just like ants in the Nine Netherbird’s eyes. They simply weren’t worthy enough for it to pay attention to them.

Mu Chen felt a bit of regret when he heard these words. If the Nine Netherbird was to vanish due to the lightning, nobody would be able to obtain its Spiritual Beast Soul Essence. This way, the Mu Territory would not have gotten any harvest for coming here.

However, who would have the ability to ingest the Nine Netherbird’s Soul Essence even if they obtained it? Mu Feng was extremely lucky back then when he ingested the Dragonfire Bird. Not to mention the Nine Netherbird, who was even more powerful than the Dragonfire Bird?

While Mu Chen and the others stared at the sky with regret and admiration, a clear cry resounded throughout the world from within the black flames in the sky. Moreover, it was possible to

hear a deep unyielding fighting spirit from within the cry.

It was issuing a challenge towards the Divine Black Lightning!

“Boom!”

The Divine Black Thundercloud seemed to have noticed the Nine Netherbird’s provocation and immediately let out a deep rumbling sound, which echoed throughout the region. Under the rumbling sound, Mu Chen and the others could feel the Spiritual Aura within the world trembling, as if it was fearful of that terrifying heavenly might.

“Li!”

A clear cry rang out once again. The Nine Netherbird’s wings stretched out from within the black flames and suddenly black flames surged out all over the place. It turned into numerous black flame pillars and fiercely charged at the black thundercloud.

The Nine Netherbird actually dared to take the initiative to launch an attack at the Divine Black Lightning.

Boom!

The black thundercloud quietly surged and a black lightning started winding and swirling. The black lightning dragon stared coldly at the black flame pillars charging over. Then, a black lightning filled with destructive power immediately rushed down.

Bang Bang Bang!

The black lightning and black flames collided fiercely. The entire world seemed to have exploded at that moment. Then, the loud rumbling sound made the earth tremble violently and cracks spread out from the black basin.

Mu Chen and the others stared in shock at the terrifying battle in the sky. At that location, the black flames and black lightning were wreaking havoc crazily.

It was evident that the black lightning is an extremely terrifying

thing. The lightning descended down as if it was attempting to destroy everything in the world and shattered countless black flame pillars.

After the black lightning shattered the countless black flame pillars, it used a terrifying momentum to fiercely descend down into the black flames within the sky. In the end, it descended down onto the massive creature hidden within the black flames.

Li!

Within the cry this time, pain could be heard. But following this, anger emerged in the cry again. The Nine Netherbird flapped its wings and the black flame sea furiously whirled together. Then, it finally turned into several interconnected black flamestorms.

Buzzzz!

The earth began to shatter due to the rotation of the black flamestorms. Luckily, the Nine Netherbird's primary target was the Divine Black Lightning. Thus, the black flamestorms whirled over towards the Divine Black Thundercloud once it was formed.

Facing against the Nine Netherbird's crazy attack, the Divine Black Thundercloud also quickly moved. A dark lightning vortex appeared at the center of the thundercloud and numerous black lightnings gathered inside the vortex.

Boom!

Within the vortex, numerous black lightnings gathered together and eventually formed into a massive lightning pillar. It fired out and bombarded the black flamestorms in a direct confrontation.

Swoosh!

The black lightning pillar was like the Thunder God's punishment and forcibly tore apart the black flamestorms. The entire world seemed to have become dim in that moment.

The black flamestorms that were formed by the Nine

Netherbird's full strength were stopped once again and the Nine Netherbird issued out an extremely furious cry again. This damn lightning had already stopped it once. Could it again be planning to prevent it from evolving?

Its prideful self would never be willing to admit defeat!

The black flames within the sky suddenly shrank abnormally. It was as if all the black flames wormed itself into the Nine Netherbird's body.

As the black flames shrank, the Nine Netherbird's body finally entered everybody's view.

It was a massive creature approximately the size of 10,000 Zhang and its wings were able to cover a mountain when it was spread open. On its body, mysterious black feathers had a hint of black flames surging through them. On its tail, long tail feathers extended out elegantly and clusters of black flames slowly burned at the tip.

Although the Nine Netherbird was extremely massive, it did not have a shred of fat. Its curved body made it seem extremely elegant, slim, mysterious and beautiful. It truly was a fascinating creature.

However, the Nine Netherbird's eyes were showing a fiery red color at that moment. Unacceptance and rage were filled within its eyes as it stared at the entrenched thundercloud in the sky. Then, it flapped its wings and furious winds suddenly appeared in the world. The black flames covered its wings and the Nine Netherbird itself turned into a black flame as it flew up high. In the end, it mustered all its power and rushed straight towards the black thundercloud.

It was going to do a final showdown against the Divine Black Thundercloud!

Mu Chen stared at the flapping wings as it charged without fear

into the black thundercloud, which even the Nine Netherbird felt horror from, like a moth to a flame. His heart was filled with shock.

The Nine Netherbird's unyielding and stubborn personality made a spectator like him feel amazed.

However, when this amazement rose up, a sense of regret also emerged. This is because Mu Chen saw the Divine Black Thundercloud contracting intensely and all the lightning within it seemed to have gathered together at this moment.

This blow would definitely shock the heavens and earth.

Boom!

At that moment, the world became silent. Only the sound of thunder resounded out. Then, a black lightning dragon, which was almost the same size as the Nine Netherbird, pierced through the skies and landed furiously on the approaching Nine Netherbird's body.

Chapter 65 – Self-Destruct

The black lightning descended down from the sky above. The indescribable thunder sound emitted almost spread throughout the entire Black Eerie Swamp. The Spiritual Beasts within the Black Eerie Swamp also issued out fearful roars as they laid on the ground shivering. They did not dare to make even a slightest movement.

Everybody at the scene had shocked expressions as they watched the events happening in the sky. Even Mu Feng and Liu Qingtian, who were the strongest individuals within the Northern Spiritual Realm, were completely horrified. This power was too terrifying. If it landed on them, even their remains wouldn't exist.

"Li!"

As the raging lightning descended down, a mournful cry filled with despair and resignation rang out.

"The Nine Netherbird is going to fail!"

When Mu Chen heard this clear cry, his heart jumped. So the Divine Black Lightning Calamity was this powerful? Even such a mighty existence like the Nine Netherbird couldn't endure it.

In the sky, the berserk black lightning was almost suppressing the black flames completely. No matter how much the Nine Netherbird struggled, it was unable to move forward.

The black flames were finally pushed back completely and helplessness appeared in its cry. It never imagined that it would fail again after its first failure.

The black lightning filled with destructive energy had already oppressed the Nine Netherbird's true body. Afterwards, a loud cry rang out from the Nine Netherbird again. At this moment, the mysterious black feathers on its massive body began to burn up.

As the black flames raged out, the temperature in the world also

began to increase significantly.

“Hurry and retreat, the Nine Netherbird is crazy. It’s going to self-destruct!”

Seeing the black flames ignite on the Nine Netherbird, Mu Feng’s face changed and he immediately shouted out. He instantly grabbed onto Mu Chen and darted away from the black basin, like an arrow.

Behind him, Zhou Ye, Duan Wei and the others also had ghastly expressions as they hurriedly followed. Just how terrifying would the Nine Netherbird’s self-destruction be?

In the distance, the Liu Territory’s men also noticed this situation and their faces immediately turned pale. They frantically fled away towards the opposite direction.

At this instant, they completely gave up on the idea of capturing the Nine Netherbird.

As the two groups of men rushed away recklessly, the black flames within the Nine Netherbird turned increasingly violent in the sky. It flapped its large wings and then its massive body exploded at this moment.

The black flames gushed out and even forcibly destroyed the terrifying black lightning. Even the black thundercloud in the sky was ripped apart by the surging black flames.

Furthermore, the entire world seemed to have become like a steamer. The boiling temperature made the underneath forest burn up instantly.

Bang!

Although Mu Feng and the others had already escaped far away from the center of the explosion, the impact emitted out from it still caused the group of men to helplessly fall to the ground.

Mu Feng climbed up and took a glance at the sky. His face became

increasingly serious. At the location where the Nine Netherbird had self-destructed an enormous black flame lotus bloomed. The black flames were like black meteorites and showered down on to the earth. It was as if the world was coming to an end.

Dong Dong!

No matter where the black flames landed at, the earth would immediately crack open. Then, the cracks would quickly spread. This black basin had instantly turned into shambles.

“Hurry!”

Mu Feng said in a deep voice. They could not afford to stay in this place anymore. If they were unlucky and were hit by a meteorite-like flame, then it would be bad news.

Swoosh!

However, just when Mu Feng had shouted out, he could hear the burning sounds of winds breaking. He quickly lifted his head and his face changed drastically. The black flames that flew across the sky seemed to be shooting at them.

Mu Feng stared as the black flames quickly became larger within his eyes. His face was also pale. At this moment, it was already too late to escape. He hurriedly exchanged glances with Zhou Ye and took a step forward. Then with a violent cry, dense Spiritual Energy poured out from their bodies and formed a thick Spiritual Energy light barrier that protected the people behind it.

Swish!

The black flames with a long black tail showered down and bombarded the Spiritual Energy light barrier.

Boom!

Mu Chen and the others could feel the earth they were standing on start to crack. The boiling heat caused some minor skin irritations.

While the Spiritual Energy light barrier blocked against the impacts of the black flames, cold sweat was constantly dripping down from Mu Feng and Zhou Ye. The hands that maintained the Spiritual Energy light barrier were burned so much that they felt bursts of pain.

However, the two of them continued to maintain it. They understood that if the people behind them were to be affected by it, they would at least be seriously injured with their strength.

Crunch.

The Spiritual Energy light barrier trembled and twisted faintly. As this moment, a crunching sound rang out. Mu Chen and the others who were behind the light barrier hurriedly retreated as if they had met a great enemy.

“Be careful, we can’t block it anymore!”

The Spiritual Energy light barrier was becoming more and more distorted. Finally, Mu Feng and Zhou Ye were not able to maintain it and with a low cry, the Spiritual Energy light barrier shattered as the two of them were blown back helplessly.

The black flames rushed in like a torrent. Although the majority of its strength was canceled out by Mu Feng and Zhou Ye, the impact still influenced Duan Wei and the others. Their bodies grinded across the land for a hundred meters, as if they had suffered a heavy blow, before finally stopping awkwardly.

Bang.

Mu Chen’s body also flew backwards and landed heavily on a giant boulder. His throat instantly had a sweet taste and he could not help but spit out fresh blood. It was as if the bones in his body were collapsing.

“Isn’t this way too powerful?”

Mu Chen wiped off the blood from the corner of his mouth and let out a wry smile. This was only just one of the flames in the sky.

If they all were to bombard at them, wouldn't it instantly erase them? The Nine Netherbird's self-destruction is truly terrifying.

Mu Chen hobbled as he stood up. But just as he was about to call out to Mu Feng and the others, his face instantly changed as he lifted his head. He saw a tiny black flame heading straight towards him.

"Mu Chen!"

This sudden turn of events was also noticed by Mu Feng. His face immediately became distorted as he charged towards Mu Chen.

With his speed, however, he was not comparable to the black flames that rushed over. So even Mu Feng could only watch as the black flames rapidly enlarged itself in his eyes.

"How unlucky."

There was time only for this thought to cross Mu Chen's mind. Then, he felt a burning feeling and pain instantly filled his mind. Darkness filled his vision and his head dropped down.

But the instant before his vision turned dark, he vaguely saw a light flashing within the black flame. Then, he entered the darkness as he suffered a terrible pain.

Chapter 66 – The Change within his Body

Mu Chen's consciousness floated without aim in the darkness. There was not even the slightest trace of light in this place. He was not even aware of time as he drifted around in a comatose state.

Although he did not know how long he drifted around, a strange fluctuation emitted out from within the darkness. A strange black flame surged out in the center of the darkness as it condensed itself.

As the black flames condensed itself, it actually turned into a giant black bird, which let out a cry towards the sky. Then, it seemed to have noticed Mu Chen's drifting consciousness. With a sharp cry, it turned into a streak of black flames and charged over to his consciousness as it glared fiercely.

Ah!

Mu Chen issued out a scream from his mouth and his body sat up like a conditioned reflex. His forehead was filled with cold sweat while his eyes were trembling.

"Little Mu woke up?!"

"The Little Lord is awake!"

Just when Mu Chen was confused about the scene earlier, delighted voices rang out from the surroundings. Only then did he lifted his head up in daze and realized that he was on top of a stretcher. Zhou Ye, Duan Wei and the others were all looking at him with a happy expression nearby.

"Is he awake?"

Mu Feng's familiar voice rang out in surprise. Then, he hurriedly walked over and let out a sigh of relief when he saw Mu Chen safe and sound.

"Dad, what is this all about?"

Mu Chen rubbed his head and asked.

“You were affected by the flames’ impact caused by the Nine Netherbird’s self-destruction and you’ve been in a coma up until now. Luckily, it doesn’t seem to be a major issue.” Mu Feng explained. If anything happened to Mu Chen, he really didn’t know how he would face it.

Mu Chen was stunned when he heard this. He vaguely remembered that a black flame was charging towards him before he fainted.

“What about the Nine Netherbird? Did it die?” Mu Chen shook his head as he asked.

“Yes.” Mu Feng nodded with a bit of regret. Through the self-destruction, nothing was left behind of the Nine Netherbird. They did not obtain any harvest this time. However, at least the Liu Territory also headed back empty-handed. Thus, this could already be considered a success for the Mu Territory since the other goal of this trip was to stop the Liu Territory.

Mu Chen also felt a bit of pity. That was an existence ranked 11th on the Myriad Beast Record’s Earth Ranking. It was not something you could meet easily. He really didn’t know just how powerful one would be if they managed to ingest its Spiritual Beast Soul Essence.

“We have already passed through the Black Eerie Swamp and we’re currently heading back to the Mu Territory.” Zhou Ye smiled as he spoke: “It was all thanks to Little Mu for the Black Eerie Swamp’s trip this time. Otherwise, we would not be able to catch up with the Liu Territory and see that terrifying scene.”

“Ohoho, yes, there’s a successor for the Territory Lord now. Congratulations.” Duan Wei and the others smiled as he spoke. Little Mu had truly impressed them during the Black Eerie Swamp trip.

After hearing these words, Mu Feng could not help but be proud. He immediately waved his hand and said: “Everybody should increase the alertness level after we head back from this trip. Since the Liu Territory came back empty-handed, they would definitely be angry at our Mu Territory. Moreover, with their personality, they would not let this go easily.”

Everybody agreed when they heard this and then they accelerated. Although they have already exited the Black Eerie Swamp, they still felt the chills after seeing the earth-shattering scene earlier. They only wanted to get away from that place as far as possible.

While Mu Chen sat on the stretcher, he immediately rubbed his head. Then, he turned around and stared at the Black Eerie Swamp in the distant. He did not know why, but he had a strange feeling that the Nine Netherbird hasn’t died yet.

Two days later, Mu Feng and the others returned back to the Mu Territory. The dusty group of people felt relieved while they thought back about the dangerous trip they had. They finally managed to return alive.

Mu Feng dismissed everybody and allowed them to rest. As for Mu Chen, he hobbled for a while and returned back to his room. He immediately took a big nap. It was evident that he was completely exhausted because of the past few days.

When Mu Chen woke up from his deep slumber, it was already evening. He stared blankly at the quiet night before stretching his waist.

“It’s time to train.” Mu Chen chuckled and sat cross-legged. He closed his eyes slightly and quickly entered the state of cultivation. The surrounding air trembled around him and tiny traces of Spiritual Aura from the world were attracted over. Then, it finally entered Mu Chen’s body through Mu Chen’s breathing.

He maintained this state of cultivation for approximately an

hour. Then, all of a sudden, he opened his eyes. Within the dark night, his black eyes revealed amazement and hints of joy.

This is because he noticed that the Spiritual Energy within his aurasea had actually reached a state of being completely full. This represents that he had already reached the pinnacle of a Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase. It also meant that he could charge at the Spiritual Rotation Stage!

“It was actually this fast.”

Mu Chen was delighted. He originally thought that it would take at least another two weeks or so. Never did he expect that the Black Eerie Swamp trip would have brought him that much benefit.

After a while, Mu Chen gradually suppressed the joy within his heart and clenched his palms as an exquisite jaded box appeared within his hand. Within the jaded box lies a round emerald shape elixir. It was the Accumulation Elixir that he had received as a reward during the Northern Spiritual Field Training.

This elixir would provide great assistance to the ones charging at the Spiritual Rotation Stage. He had never used it because he was waiting for the best moment to use it. And now, it was time.

Mu Chen picked up the emerald-like elixir and sniffed the faint fragrance emitted by it. His head immediately cleared up and he no longer hesitated as he threw the Accumulation Elixir into his mouth.

Nom.

The Accumulation Elixir immediately melted and turned into rumbling Spiritual Energy. It seemed to pour through Mu Chen’s body like a flood.

Mu Chen quickly closed his eyes as he circulated the Great Pagoda Art. He steadily ingested the dense Spiritual Energy bit by bit and poured it into his aurasea.

With the influx of the large amount of Spiritual Energy, many

changes appeared in his aurasea. The clump of Spiritual Energy that was like a nebula slowly shrank. While it was shrinking, Mu Chen could feel the Spiritual Energy within his body becoming purer and fiercer.

It requires a lot of Spiritual Energy for one to charge at the Spiritual Rotation Stage. Luckily, Mu Chen had the Accumulation Elixir. Therefore, he was about to omit some trouble during this step. He stabilized his mind and slowly ingested the elixir's medical power as he sent it all into his aurasea.

Within his aurasea, the originally palm-sized clump of Spiritual Energy had turned into the size of a chicken egg. However, the edge of the clump had become rounder. Moreover, the black Spiritual Energy had become increasingly abstruse.

The clump of Spiritual Energy was still compressing itself while Mu Chen continued to send Spiritual Energy within his aurasea.

This process lasted for around ten minute before the compression finally stopped. The chicken egg-sized clump of Spiritual Energy had become the size of a pigeon's egg.

Mu Chen could sense the change happening within his aurasea and quietly entered with his mind. He noticed that a pitched-black light wheel gradually floated on top of the pigeon egg.

The Spiritual Energy light wheel was many times smaller than the clump earlier. However, Mu Chen could sense how dense the Spiritual Energy within it was.

It had far surpassed the Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase!

Mu Chen stared at the small and delicate Spiritual Energy light wheel as joy welled up from his heart. He had finally broken through the Spiritual Movement Stage and advanced into the Spiritual Rotation Stage.

Just by this, he had reached the basic acceptance conditions for the "Five Great Academies".

Although he did not feel surprised that he achieved this step, the feeling of becoming stronger was extremely wonderful. Perhaps the guys from the Spiritual Road had completed the final step and obtained a power far beyond his, but so what?

I, Mu Chen, was not inferior to any of you in the Spiritual Road. And I can do the same in the Great Thousand World!

Mu Chen pursed his lips and a sense of pride and persistence emerged on the boy's handsome face.

After he had successfully condensed the spiritual wheel, Mu Chen had completely relaxed. But just when he was about to exit this state, a familiar cry rang out from within his mind.

Li!

This cry was not loud, but Mu Chen seemed to have been struck by lightning when he heard it. His entire body stiffens as a fizzing sound rang out within his mind.

Boom!

Just when Mu Chen's mind lost its capability to think when it heard this cry, he discovered a fierce fluctuation appearing from within his body. Then, it directly charged at his mind as if it was trying to devour his consciousness!

The soul essence swallowing its owner?

This situation stunned Mu Chen as his body instantly turned cold. Then, horror appeared within his eyes.

Chapter 67 – A Page of Black Paper Seals the Spirit Bird

This sudden turn of events had completely made Mu Chen's mind enter a state of chaos and horror. His face also turned extremely pale.

The soul essence swallowing its owner?

Damn it, he had just advanced into the Spiritual Rotation Stage and did not have the strength to even ingest a Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence. How could such a thing appear within his body?

Mu Chen's mind was completely stunned. However, he was still somewhat calm so he quickly recovered from the chaos. It was not the time for him to think why this had happened, instead, he must focus on protecting his life!

The soul essence swallowing its owner was something quite common. A few Spirit Stage powerhouses were quite ambitious and wanted to ingest a powerful Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence. However, they did not realise that it was an extremely dangerous act. In order to ingest the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence, you must first wipe out the consciousness of the Spiritual Beast. They would definitely have to suffer the resistance of the Spiritual Beast while they perform this act. Some of the fiercer Spiritual Beasts would even take the opportunity to counterattack and attempt to swallow its owner instead. If this were to happen, it was almost certain that the owner would die.

An extremely fierce fluctuation charged straight at Mu Chen's mind and attempted to erase his consciousness. While facing this sort of attack from within his body, Mu Chen did not have many ways to deal with it. He immediately took a deep breath and manipulated the Spiritual Energy within his body to circulate it through his meridians. Then, he made it crash against each other.

Dong!

A low and silent sound echoed within Mu Chen's body. This tremor caused his throat to suddenly taste sweet. However, the Spiritual Energy collision also formed a Spiritual Energy fluctuation. These fluctuations quickly spread out and collided with the fierce fluctuation that was charging towards Mu Chen's mind.

As the two fluctuations collided with each other, Mu Chen felt dizzy again within his mind. However, he bit his tongue tightly and used the pain to keep himself awake. Afterwards, he saw a black flame surging within his body.

The black flames drifted around and an elegant black shadow with wings appeared within the flames.

"It's the Nine Netherbird!"

Mu Chen saw the black shadow that had left a deep impression on him and his heart immediately trembled. He would never have imagined that the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence that entered his body would be the Nine Netherbird's Soul Essence!

"It was then!"

Mu Chen suddenly recalled the instant before he had fallen unconscious in the Black Eerie Swamp. The black flame that charged at him had something hidden within it. Could it be that the Nine Netherbird's Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence was hidden within it? And that it entered his body through it?

"Damn it!"

Mu Chen cursed and did not feel any delight from the fact that the Nine Netherbird's Soul Essence was within his body. He could only feel an irregular heartbeat as it was impossible for him to ingest it with his strength right now. If that's the case, there is only one result: his consciousness would be erased by the Nine Netherbird. Moreover, the vicious and cunning Nine Netherbird

might even use a special method to occupy his body to be reborn again.

Mu Chen was definitely not happy to see such a scene.

“Li!”

Within the black flames, the Nine Netherbird seemed to be aware of Mu Chen’s gaze and instantly let out a fierce cry. The black flames turned around and drilled towards Mu Chen’s aurasea.

It was smart. It knew that Mu Chen would not be able to stop him once his aurasea was destroyed. After destroying his Spiritual Energy, he would become a useless person.

“What a vicious beast!”

Mu Chen was shocked by the Nine Netherbird’s viciousness. He angrily cursed as he mobilized his Spiritual Energy and attempted to stop the Nine Netherbird.

The Nine Netherbird within the black flames seemed to have noticed the surging Spiritual Energy. Within its sharp eyes, a hint of contempt flashed. Just what level of an existence is it? Even if it had no body, it was not something which a boy, who had just entered the Spiritual Rotation Stage, could deal with.

The black flames instantly turned a lot brighter and it flapped its wings. Then, flames directly charged at the surging Spiritual Energy. However, Mu Chen could tell that the Spiritual Energy within his body had completely evaporated away when it collided against the black flames.

To the Nine Netherbird, this sort of blockade was simply ineffective against it. On one side, it was a super Spiritual Beast, whose name was vicious and reputed within the world. On the other side, he was a boy, who was only at the Spiritual Rotation Stage. They simply weren’t at the same level.

Mu Chen also noticed the gap between the two of them. However, he did not give up because of this. Instead, he gritted his

teeth and a hint of ruthlessness appeared in his eyes. If you want to cripple me, then I won't let you be better off either!

Mu Chen moved his mind and the Spiritual Energy light wheel that was just formed slowly circulated. The Spiritual Energy that was stored within it was completely drawn out by him. Then, it charged towards the black flames approaching his aurasea mercilessly.

Chi Chi!

The black flames continued to head forward and wherever it passed, the Spiritual Energy evaporated. Even when Mu Chen did everything to stop the black flames were they only delayed for a moment. It was evident that it could not stop the Nine Netherbird.

Within ten short breathes, the black flames have already broken through all the Spiritual Energy barriers that Mu Chen had placed up. Outside of his aurasea, the Nine Netherbird's eyes seemed to have emerged on the black flames as it revealed a touch of pride.

Swish!

Under Mu Chen's furious gaze, the black flames moved and entered his aurasea. A burning pain instantly emitted out and caused Mu Chen's face to become distorted.

He could see the Nine Netherbird heading towards the Spiritual Energy light wheel that was just formed after entering his aurasea. It roared and attempted to destroy it.

The Spiritual Energy light wheel embodies all the Spiritual Energy that Mu Chen had condensed through his life. If it was destroyed, Mu Chen's efforts in training would instantly be wasted.

It was obvious that Mu Chen's schemes were completely powerless in face of such an existence. This difference was not something that schemes could help make up for. Thus, he could only angrily stare at the Nine Netherbird charging at his Spiritual

Energy light wheel.

“I’ll go all out against you!”

In the final moments, Mu Chen let out a furious shout. He did not care and forced his Spiritual Energy light wheel to self-destruct. This was the only thing he could still do. Although he would pay a great price, it would still be better than the Nine Netherbird erasing his consciousness!

The Spiritual Energy light wheel erupted out lights. This sort of Spiritual Energy had also suddenly become particular violent. But just when it was the moment when Mu Chen was going to fight to the bitter end against the Nine Netherbird, a bell-like sound echoed within his aurasea.

Under this strange sound, Mu Chen’s rampaging Spiritual Energy light wheel that was about to explode actually calmed down a bit.

Mu Chen watched this scene and stared at the surface of the Spiritual Energy light wheel. At that location, a page of black paper was quietly lying down. It seems that the sound was issued out from that place.

“This”

Mu Chen wanted to cry, but tears did not flow out. After he obtained the mysterious black paper which he could not detect, it had always remained in his body. Never did it show any effects, but who would have expected that it would suppress the final ability that could take out the Nine Netherbird’s life in this critical moment.

As the Spiritual Energy light wheel was suppressed, the black flames formed by the Nine Netherbird were close at hand. The black flames caused the Spiritual Energy light wheel within his aurasea to show signs of becoming distorted.

“It’s over.”

Seeing this scene, Mu Chen let out a sigh of despair.

Dong!

Just when the fierce black flames were about to smash into the Spiritual Energy light wheel, a black light screen descended down.

Bang!

The black flames that were almost always harmful were actually knocked back. Then, a hint of surprise appeared in the Nine Netherbird's eyes within the black flames.

Mu Chen was also stunned when he saw that scene. He hurriedly looked at the thin page of black paper. This was because a thin layer of a black light barrier descended down from it.

"Buzz."

A strange sound that sounded like Sanskrit started to come out from the page of black paper. Then, dark purple lights emerged on the surface of the black paper that had always remained motionless.

Swoosh.

When these lights appeared, it actually formed into a dark purple light barrier and enveloped the black flames formed by the Nine Netherbird within it.

This unforeseeable development surprised the Nine Netherbird. It hurriedly charged at the light barrier. But what shocked Mu Chen was that the light barrier was completely unmoving against the Nine Netherbird's charge.

It was not the end after the light barrier was formed. A purple light started to gather beneath the Nine Netherbird and gradually extended outwards. It actually turned into purple mandala flowers.

Obscure, dark gold engravings seemed to be covered on the mandala's flower petals. A hint of horror instantly appeared within the Nine Netherbird's eyes when it saw the mandala flower

and it let out a frightened cry.

The mysterious dark purple mandala flower was like a cage and it bounded the black flames formed by the Nine Netherbird. Then, it slowly drifted away and landed on top of the thin black paper.

A mysterious flower cage completely trapped the Nine Netherbird within it.

As the Nine Netherbird became trapped, the rampage within Mu Chen's aurasea gradually subsided. The black flames also began to fade and it turned into a baby fist-sized mini Nine Netherbird.

It struggled angrily, but it could not escape the dark purple mandala flower. Therefore, it could only stop and close its fierce and hateful eyes as it prepared to gather strength for an opportunity.

Mu Chen was completely stunned as he watched this strange battle within his aurasea. Only after a while did he finally recover from his shock. Then, he stared blankly at the dark purple mandala flower on top of the page of black paper.

It was resolved like this?

Chapter 68 – Spiritual Flame Array

When Mu Chen woke up in the morning, his mind was still somewhat confused. If it wasn't for the black paper's purple mandala flower within his aura sea and the trapped Nine Netherbird, he would have thought that what had happened last night was all a dream.

"Damn beast."

Mu Chen gradually accepted the situation after a long time. He fiercely rubbed his face and cursed furiously. Although the Nine Netherbird was caged by the mysterious black paper, he still felt uneasy. After all, the Nine Netherbird was too powerful. It may be extremely weak right now, but what would he do if the mysterious black paper could not stop it after the Nine Netherbird had recovered its strength in the future?

This thing that was left within his body was like an unstable bomb. It could turn him completely helpless at any time.

Only after he had tasted the fierceness and ruthlessness of the Nine Netherbird was Mu Chen aware of how naive he was of hoping to ingest it. With the Nine Netherbird's pride, Mu Chen could guarantee that this damn beast would fight to the bitter end if anyone attempts to forcibly ingest it.

What's the point of holding this sort of Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence?

Mu Chen eventually calmed down after furiously scolding the Nine Netherbird deep down inside. The situation has already happened, no matter how much he vents it out, he can't change anything. Fortunately for him, the Nine Netherbird was currently trapped by the black paper, so he had some time to think of a way to deal with the Nine Netherbird.

He got up from his bed and slightly organized himself before

leaving the room. Then, he walked to the place where he would learn about Spiritual Arrays from Mister Wen Ling. After the Black Eerie Swamp trip, Mu Chen had understood how amazing Spiritual Arrays are and his interest in it increased significantly. Moreover, the ones that he was able to arrange were only tiny Spiritual Arrays, they weren't even considered Rank 1 Spiritual Arrays.

In the training room that he would usually practice in, Mu Chen did not see Mister Wen Ling. Presumably, he had arrived too earlier. However, he was not impatient and sat down cross-legged on the cushions. He then revealed a pondering expression. Right now, he had officially advanced to the Spiritual Rotation Stage and could feel that the Spiritual Energy density within his body had increased significantly. Furthermore, he had become more proficient in his control over Spiritual Energy.

"I wonder how many Spiritual Seals I would be able to condense?"

Mu Chen muttered to himself as a hint of expectation flashed through his eyes. He immediately stretched out his palm and his palm spun. Dark black Spiritual Energy gushed out from it and surrounded his palm completely. Mu Chen was completely satisfied about the speed and the density of the Spiritual Energy. As expected from the Spiritual Rotation Stage, the efficiency of mobilizing Spiritual Energy greatly surpassed the Spiritual Movement Stage.

The dark black Spiritual Energy on Mu Chen's fingertips quickly gathered and changed. 8 Spiritual Seals seemed to be condensed in succession at a fast pace. Then, a 9^{th} Spiritual Seal quietly condensed when Mu Chen moved his fingertips.

Mu Chen stared at the 9^{th} Spiritual Seal, but he did not stop at this. The dark black Spiritual Energy continued to condense and a 10^{th}, 11^{th} Spiritual Seal flashed. In the end, the amount of Spiritual Seals stopped at the 12^{th} Seal.

Mu Chen watched the 12 Spiritual Seals on his palm. He was just barely satisfied with this result as he could feel that this wasn't the limit for him. However, he had just advanced to the Spiritual Rotation Stage and required a little bit of time to stabilize. When that happens, he believed that he would be able to do better.

Mu Chen smiled for himself when he saw his own progress. He clenched his hand and the 12 Spiritual Seals vanished. Afterwards, sounds of footsteps could be heard outside the door. Then, the door was pushed open and Wen Ling entered.

"Mister Wen."

Seeing this, Mu Chen hurriedly got up and greeted Wen Ling.

Wen Ling gestured with his hand and stared at the boy in front of him. A smile was plastered on his strict face as he said: "I heard from the Territory Lord that you used tiny Spiritual Arrays at the Black Eerie Swamp. You've learned quickly."

Wen Ling was asked by Mu Feng to teach Mu Chen about Spiritual Arrays and the latter was able to quickly enter the doorway for Spiritual Arrays. This gave him quite a bit of face. However, he must admit that the majority of it was because Mu Chen had quite the talent in the aspects of Spiritual Arrays.

Mu Chen smiled embarrassedly. The tiny Spiritual Arrays that he used could only trick Spiritual Beasts with low intelligence.

"You probably have to practice by yourself for the next two days." Wen Ling looked at Mu Chen and said: "Your father is planning to construct a Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array within the Mu City. This level of Spirit Convergence Array isn't something that I could arrange by myself. Therefore, your father paid a great price to invite 3 other Rank 1 Spiritual Array Masters to help. During this period of time, I would have to work together with them to see if it will work out."

A "Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array". Mu Chen was slightly

surprised. In the entire Northern Spiritual Realm, the only Rank 3 Spirit Convergence Array was in the Northern Spiritual Academy. As for a Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array, only the Liu Territory had it. Even the Mu Territory only had a Rank 1 Spirit Convergence Array. This must be what his dad has been brooding about. After all, a Spirit Convergence Array is a symbol to show how powerful a force is. For the Liu Territory to be able to become the strongest territory out of the nine territories, the Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array had to play a part in it.

However, a Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array wasn't something that could be easily constructed. Even for a few Rank 2 Spiritual Array Masters, they would not be confident that they could arrange it. Moreover, constructing a Spirit Convergence Array requires a large amount of rare materials. Thus, it was extremely costly. It would be a heavy blow to the Mu Territory if it were to fail. This is why Mu Feng did not recklessly attempt it and endured it all these years. From the looks of it, his dad finally couldn't endure it any longer.

But even if they invited another 3 Rank 1 Spiritual Array Masters to work together with Wen Ling, it was still hard to say if they would succeed on arranging the Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array.

"Yes, Mister Wen. If you're busy, it's fine if you focus on your affairs." Mu Chen nodded his head.

Wen Ling gave a nod. It seems that he was quite hard-pressed because of the Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array. He did not plan on saying anything more and intended to leave as he turned away.

"About that, Mister Wen." Mu Chen suddenly spoke up. He looked at Wen Ling, who was puzzled, and hesitated before saying: "I think I have some understanding about the tiny Spiritual Arrays now. I wonder if Mister Wen could give me a scroll of a Rank 1 Diagram Array so I can study it?"

After hearing that Mu Chen wanted to study a Rank 1 Diagram

Array, Wen Ling frowned. His face became serious again: “It’s good that you have talent, but did you forget the words of how I told you not to be arrogant? A Rank 1 Spiritual Arrays requires at least 15 Spiritual Seals. The complexity of it also far surpasses a tiny Spiritual Array. If you would like to study on a Rank 1 Diagram Array, then you should wait until you formed 10 Spiritual Seals”

Before he even finishing speaking, he suddenly paused. Surprise emerged on his strict face because he saw the boy lifting up his palm. Then, the required 10 Spiritual Seals he mentioned emerged on his fingertips.

“You”

Wen Ling was stunned as he stared at the 10 Spiritual Seals on Mu Chen’s fingertips. He only recovered from his shock after a while before staring strangely at Mu Chen. Just for how long did this guy come in contact with Spiritual Array Cultivation? He could actually already form 10 Spiritual Seals. Isn’t the talent he displayed in this area too terrifying?

“Cough”

Wen Ling let out a dry cough and concealed the shock on his face as he said: “Since you’ve already reached it, then I’ll allow it.”

While he said this, he pulled out a red Diagram Array from within his arms and handed it over to Mu Chen: “This scroll is a rather simple Rank 1 Spiritual Array. Its name is the Spiritual Flame Array. This Spiritual Array requires at least 15 Spiritual Seals in order to arrange it. It’s fine if you’re going to study about it, but do not attempt to arrange it. Otherwise, it would not be fun if the Spiritual Array backfires on you.”

Mu Chen nodded as he excitedly accepted the red Diagram Array.

Seeing this, Wen Ling let go of his hand and immediately left. He still had to discuss with the other 3 Spiritual Array Masters that

were invited regarding about how they should construct the Rank 2 Spiritual Array. This was a hassle. However, it might be a good opportunity for him. He might be able to find a catalyst, which would improve himself, and allow him to advance to a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master.

Seeing Wen Ling depart, Mu Chen carefully opened up the scroll for the Rank 1 Spiritual Array. Then, a red light flashed as a faint heat emerged. Mu Chen focused his mind and concentrated his eyes on it.

Red lights were flashing on the Diagram Array. Light beams would extend out and intertwine with each other and form a rather complex outline.

Mu Chen could not help but smack his lips as he stared at the Diagram Array, which would make ordinary people dizzy. The Rank 1 Spiritual Array was indeed a lot more complex than a tiny Spiritual Array. However, it made him even more interested.

Mu Chen was immersed in the “Spiritual Flame Array” and studied the complex Spiritual beams outline within it. Only after a while, he slowly retracted his gaze. Although he was quite eager to test it out, he would not attempt it recklessly. After all, this Rank 1 Spiritual Array requires at least 15 Spiritual Seals and it was evident that he had not reached the level right now.

“It seems that I should properly condense for a while.”

Mu Chen was content as he put away the Diagram Array. Then, he closed his eyes and attempted to condense more Spiritual Seals.

During the next few days, Wen Ling was busy with the matter of constructing a Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array. He did not have much time to teach Mu Chen and the latter was happily at leisure. He would spend the entire time attempting to condense Spiritual Seals.

His efforts brought a great effect. As Mu Chen had gradually

adapted to the Spiritual Rotation Stage, his control over his Spiritual Energy had become more proficient. Thus, on the fifth day, he had successfully increased the amount of Spiritual Seals to 15.

After the amount of Spiritual Seals had reached 15, Mu Chen could not conceal the excitement within his heart. Then, the excited youth brought out the “Spiritual Flame Array” once again. Right now, he had finally become qualified to attempt a true Rank 1 Spiritual Array.

Chapter 69 – Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array

In the courtyard of the Mu Estate, Mu Chen was standing straight as excitement surged through his eyes. After many days of training, he had finally condensed 15 Spiritual Seals. This also reached the basic requirements for the “Spiritual Flame Array”.

And he was also finally able to test just how powerful a Rank 1 Spiritual Array was.

Mu Chen’s palm opened up and dark black Spiritual Energy flashed before it turned into shining, black Spiritual Seals. He manipulated the Spiritual Seals and channeled them to enter the air. Then, the Spiritual Seals seemed to have vanish like raindrops falling in the ocean. The only thing that others could perceive was a strange, rippling fluctuation.

The complexity of arranging a Rank 1 Spiritual Array was far beyond a tiny Spiritual Array. Although Mu Chen had constantly studied the Diagram Array of the “Spiritual Flame Array” over the past few days, it was still the first time attempting it for him. Thus, he was still quite not used to it. Sweat had emerged on his forehead as he channeled the 15 Spiritual Seals into the air.

“Buzz.”

The 15 Spiritual Seals fused into the air and formed Spiritual Energy lights which were hard to see with the naked eye. Then, Mu Chen controlled his thoughts and manipulated the Spiritual Energy lights to extend into light beams. In the end, the light beams were intertwined with each other.

The Diagram Array was rather complex, so Mu Chen was quite busy. Arranging the complicated Diagram Array requires fine control and a single mistake would lead to failure.

It was evident that a Rank 1 Spiritual Array was not that easy to

arrange. Although Mu Chen was quite talented in that area, he was not able to accomplish it in one attempt.

Thus, when the light beams for the Diagram Array extended to a complicated step, he finally made a mistake. A Spiritual Energy light beam had extended to the wrong location.

The instant that the Spiritual Energy light beam's position was off, Mu Chen secretly shouted out sh*t. Then, he saw the air in front of him emitting out a violent Spiritual Energy fluctuation. A fiery red color surged out from that location and one could faintly see the unfinished shape of the Spiritual Array.

Boom!

The violent fiery red Spiritual Energy directly bombarded on Mu Chen's body and a deep sound rang out. It made Mu Chen fly back dozens of meters and his depressed appearance made him seem like he was quite awkward.

Afterwards, Mu Chen climbed up from the ground. Luckily, he did not suffer any major injuries. He patted his body casually and pondered for a while as he thought back to the area where he had failed. Lights constantly flashed within his black eyes.

Mu Chen's first attempt on arranging a Rank 1 Spiritual Array had ended with failure. However, he did not give up. Instead, it aroused his stubborness and he started attempting it again after a brief rest.

But the result...

Boom! Boom!

In the courtyard, muffled sounds rang out endlessly through the afternoon. At that location, a youthful figure was endlessly being blown away. The patrolling guards looked at each other when they heard the sounds, but they did not dare to disturb Mu Chen's training.

Mu Chen, who was quite awkward, finally stopped his training

when night was approaching. He had spent an entire afternoon in failure. However, this did not take a blow to his confidence. This is because he had overcome the part where he had failed in every time he failed. Based on this speed, he would soon be able to arrange the “Spiritual Flame Array”.

As he thought about this, Mu Chen let out a grin and clapped his hands. Then he turned around and left.

For the next three days, Mu Chen had placed almost all his energy on the “Spiritual Flame Array”. He would attempt it over and over again in the courtyard, yet he would fail every single time.

Sometimes, the patrolling guards within the estate would feel surprised when they noticed Mu Chen crawling up from the ground helplessly. They did not know what Mu Chen was practicing in, but his attitude of climbing up and ignoring all those failures made them admire his perseverance and insistence.

“The Little Lord is quite diligent. It seems that there is a successor for the Mu Territory in the future.” The guards thought this as they walked lightly. They did not want to disturb the boy who was training in the courtyard.

Mu Chen’s failures continued to persist. This continued until the 3rd day’s evening before there was a slight change.

The boy in the courtyard was completely awkward again, only his eyes were still flashing. At this moment, he had a serious expression and 15 Spiritual Seals danced around his fingertips. They immediately integrated into the air and brought out a Spiritual Energy fluctuation.

Compared to the past few days, Mu Chen’s technique had greatly improved. It seems that the failures he had experienced allowed him to progress significantly.

As the fluctuations occurred in the air, the Spiritual Aura within

the world also flew quickly over. A red light suddenly emerged in front of Mu Chen and a complicated red light array gradually emerged.

Within the fiery red light array, lights surged like a flame travelling back and forth. It looked exceptionally majestic.

Mu Chen stared at the finally completed “Spiritual Flame Array” and delight poured out from his eyes. He had finally succeeded after many failures!

Although the “Spiritual Flame Array” still showed some signs of instability at the moment, this was still a successful arrangement made by Mu Chen.

“Go!”

Mu Chen suppressed the joy within his heart and his fingers moved. Two of his fingers weren’t bent and pointed at a giant boulder that was like a mountain in the courtyard.

Buzz.

A fiery light suddenly emerged on the Spiritual Flame Array. Then, a red flame light pillar erupted out like a volcano. It shot off fiercely from the Spiritual Array and bombarded the giant boulder.

Bang!

The earth seemed to tremble at this moment. The giant boulder that was like a mini-sized room instantly shattered and gravel exploded out. It made the courtyard into a big mess.

“What an amazing power!”

Surprised filled Mu Chen’s face as he witnessed the power of the Spiritual Flame Array. This power was probably something that even a Spiritual Rotation Stage Middle Phase powerhouse would find hard to endure. A Rank 1 Spiritual Array truly deserves its reputation. However, the consumption was quite high for him as well.

“Little Lord!”

The guards outside of the courtyard also heard the commotion and hurriedly rushed in. They stared at the mess on the ground and were stunned. Originally, they thought that Mu Chen had suffered an enemy attack and quickly rushed over.

“It’s fine. I did this all by myself.”

Mu Chen smiled and waved his hand. He stared at the awkward appearance he had and smiled helplessly. Then, he turned around and entered the house to clean himself up while the guards exchanged gazes with each other. When did the Little Lord become so powerful? He actually destroyed a mountain-like boulder. Not even their captain, who had reached the Spiritual Rotation Stage, could do it.

After Mu Chen cleaned himself up, he walked out of the room and slipped away as he noticed the guards cleaning up the courtyard. He was quite exhausted after studying the “Spiritual Flame Array” overnight for a couple of days.

Mu Chen strolled down the Mu Estate leisurely and walked near the Meeting Room. Then, he noticed lights within it. It was already this late, yet his dad was still discussing about some affairs?

Mu Chen thought for a moment and walked over. He immediately heard a loud sound coming from the Meeting Room. The sound was quite familiar as it was the sound of Mu Feng smacking the table in fury.

His dad hasn’t been so furious in a long time, what had happened?

Mu Chen hesitated for a moment before straining his ears to listen.

Within the Meeting Room, Mu Feng’s face was dark with rage. The table in front of him was smashed to pieces by him. He stood up and angrily shouted: “Those Liu Territory’s as*holes. They

really like obstructing us secretly!”

Beside him, Zhou Ye also had a gloomy expression and immediately exclaimed: “Those bastards. They spent a great deal of money purchasing the materials and restraining many Spiritual Array Masters when they heard that we were going to construct a Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array. With the remaining materials we have left, we cannot fail again.”

Mu Feng clenched his fist tightly and looked at the other four figures in the room. One of the people in the room was Wen Ling. As for the others, they were all middle-aged individuals. They must be the other three Rank 1 Spiritual Array Masters that Mu Feng had invited over.

“Mister Wen Ling, what other difficulties are we facing now in order to construct a Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array?” Mu Feng lowered his voice and asked slowly.

Wen Ling sighed and said: “Territory Lord. We have already attempted once over the past few days. However, it ended in failure and we wasted a lot of materials. Based on our conjecture, we probably require another Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master to help us.”

Zhou Ye frowned and said: “We have basically invited all the Spiritual Array Masters within the Mu Territory. With the Liu Territory’s obstruction, it would probably be difficult to find another Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master.”

Wen Ling let out a bitter laugh. He also knew that it was troublesome, but there was no other way. They had tried it before and knew that it was not possible with just the four of them.

“Zhou Ye.” Mu Feng’s eyes flashed and immediately waved his hand as he said: “Send the word out to the Spiritual Array Masters which the Liu Territory had drawn away that the Mu Territory will double whatever the Liu Territory had promised them as long as they help the Mu Territory!”

Zhou Ye was shocked. This means that they would have to pay a great price. Moreover, these words mean that the cunning Spiritual Array Masters would probably take the opportunity to squeeze every last bit out from them. If that's the case, it would be unfair to the other three Spiritual Array Masters in front of them. It would easily show that they were being unfair.

Thinking about this, he glanced at the other 3 Spiritual Array Masters. As expected, they were somewhat unnatural.

"The Territory Lord should not say these words out in anger. This might cause us to crumble down instead." Wen Ling said with a wry smile.

At this moment, Mu Feng seemed to have woken up. He first cupped his fists to the other three Spiritual Array Masters before sitting back down as he gritted his teeth with a gloomy expression. Right now, news about the Mu Territory wanting to construct a Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array has spread out. If they were not able to accomplish it, they would become a joke.

Silence filled the Meeting Room again and the atmosphere was quite depressing.

Creak.

Just when everybody was silent, the tightly closed door was suddenly pushed open. Mu Feng frowned and was about to shout. However, he immediately swallowed it back down when he saw Mu Chen's figure.

Mu Chen smiled at Mu Feng and then turned around to Wen Ling as he said: "Mister Wen, I see that you're missing a Spiritual Array Master. Would it be fine if I were to take that spot?"

Chapter 70 – Participation

The atmosphere within the Meeting Room seemed to have slightly frozen due to Mu Chen's sentence. Then, Mu Feng and the others directed their surprised eyes at Mu Chen.

"What madness are you saying?" Mu Feng scolded him as he frowned.

Wen Ling also frowned. Constructing a Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array was a rather troublesome matter. Only a Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master would be able to help. Although Mu Chen had quite the talent in the area of Spiritual Arrays, he had only just started. How could he withstand such responsibilities?

"Ohoho, constructing a Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array isn't something that you could casually participate in. Otherwise, if an accident was to occur, the loss of the materials would be a serious blow to the Mu Territory." A middle-aged man with thick eyebrows smiled faintly. It was evident that he treated Mu Chen's words as a boy acting arrogant.

The other two Rank 1 Spiritual Array Masters also nodded their heads. If a brat was able to participate in this, then why would they need them?

"Mister Wen, if you're able to arrange a Rank 1 Spiritual Array, would you be barely considered as a Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master?" Mu Chen ignored them and asked Wen Ling with a smile.

Wen Ling hesitated and said: "In a broad sense, that is true…"

"I have already successfully arranged the Rank 1 Spiritual Array "Spiritual Flame Array" that you have handed over to me." Mu Chen said.

Wen Ling's voice suddenly stopped. He paused for half a second before immediately shouting out: "How is that possible?!"

"You can arrange the "Spiritual Flame Array"?" The other three

Rank 1 Spiritual Array Masters stared at Mu Chen in disbelief. They could not believe that a young boy would have reached the same level as them.

Mu Feng and Zhou Ye also stared at Mu Chen with a surprised expressions. However, the two of them knew Mu Chen pretty well. Mu Chen would not randomly spout nonsense in front of them. If he says that he could arrange the “Spiritual Flame Array”, there was a certain degree of truth to it.

“You…”

Wen Ling also recovered from the shock and stared doubtfully at Mu Chen as if he still did not believe him: “If that’s the case, then try arranging it out in front of us.”

Mu Chen could not help but nod. He gripped his hand and dark black Spiritual Energy condensed. Then, 15 black Spiritual Seals flashed as it was formed.

“He’s actually able to form 15 Spiritual Seals!”

The three Rank 1 Spiritual Array Masters’ faces turned serious when they saw this. The amount of Spiritual Seals that they were able to condense were only 17. And now, a boy, who was only in his teens, had already almost caught up to them. Just how frightening was his talent regarding Spiritual Arrays?

Wen Ling’s mouth could not help but twitch when he saw the 15 Spiritual Seals. However, he did not say anything. He had already believed Mu Chen’s words within his heart.

Mu Chen’s face turned serious and he flicked his ten fingers. The 15 Spiritual Seals shot off into the air and integrated into the air. Then, his hands were rapidly changing seals.

Buzz.

As Mu Chen’s seals changed, everybody at the scene could feel the temperature in the room rapidly increasing. The Spiritual Energy within the world was rapidly gathering in the air in front

of them.

Everybody at the scene were all individuals with keen perception. Thus, they could vaguely see the quickly forming complex light diagram within the air. A light of fire surged through the Array.

The time slowly passed. After a while, Mu Chen finally stopped his hands from changing. In the air in front of them, a fiery red Spiritual Array gradually emerged as it enveloped half the Meeting Room.

“This...” Wen Ling had a complicated expression as he stared at the formed Spiritual Array. He could not help but sigh as he said: “This is definitely the Spiritual Flame Array.”

The other three Rank 1 Spiritual Array Masters beside him exchanged gazes. They immediately let out a bitter laugh. A boy, who was in his teens, was a Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master? It was the first time they saw it in their lives. Just what kind of freak is the Mu Territory’s Little Lord?

Mu Feng and Zhou Ye’s eyes were filled with joy. Mu Feng stood up and patted Mu Chen’s shoulder as he said with a smile: “Atta boy, it seems that you’ve really inherited your mother’s talent in this.”

“Don’t just ignore my efforts in it, okay?” Mu Chen said helplessly. If he did not spend a week fully immersed in studying the “Spiritual Flame Array” and crawled up after experiencing many failures, how could he have succeeded?

Mu Feng smiled as he nodded his head. He could not conceal the pride and content within his eyes. The anger he had towards the Liu Territory for obstructing him had completely vanished at this moment.

“Mister Wen, what do you think about Mu Chen? Would he be able to help?” Mu Feng looked at Wen Ling and asked.

Wen Ling pondered for a moment and said: “It’s true that Mu

Chen is able to condense the “Spiritual Flame Array”. However, he had only just started out and cannot be considered as a true Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master. After all, he still needs to hone his experience and eyesight.”

Mu Feng glanced at Mu Chen and also nodded his head. Indeed, no matter how talented Mu Chen was in this area, experience wasn’t something which would come to him for no reason.

Mu Chen’s face turned a little sour.

“Ohoho, but experience comes from slowly accumulating it. Constructing a Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array might be a great opportunity for him. Right now, he can barely be qualified to participate in it.” Wen Ling stared at Mu Chen, who was bitter, and smiled. Then, the tone of his voice changed.

Surprise quickly poured out from Mu Chen’s eyes. He smiled and said: “Then, thank you, Mister Wen.”

Wen Ling waved his hand. The eyes that stared at Mu Chen were filled with a surprisingly gentle light. Even he could not help but show some love towards such a talented boy. However, he also quickly understood that he probably wouldn’t be able to give much guidance to Mu Chen due to his talent. This is because it was a simple matter for the latter to surpass him.

The other three Rank 1 Spiritual Array Masters did not refuse after hearing this. It was obvious that they were shaken by Mu Chen’s earlier performance. According to Wen Ling, Mu Chen had not yet been exposed to Spiritual Arrays for a month, yet his abilities were about to catch up to them. Perhaps this boy would soon become the most powerful Spiritual Array Master within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

“I will take Mu Chen with me tomorrow to the Spirit Convergence Array’s location. We will let him get familiar to it and attempt it after a couple of days. How about that?” Wen Ling looked at Mu Feng and asked.

“Okay.”

Mu Feng did not object. As long as Mu Chen was able to improve his understanding on Spiritual Arrays, he would not feel pain even if Mu Chen was to waste all the materials that they gathered.

Since they had already made their decision, Wen Ling and the others talked about the details with Mu Feng before taking their leave.

“Boy, you should follow Mister Wen Ling tomorrow and learn properly. Don’t just be satisfied with your talent. Cultivation in Spiritual Arrays isn’t something that you can go far on with just talent.” Mu Feng watched Wen Ling and the others depart before turning around to talk with Mu Chen.

“No matter what, you must not be ordinary in Spiritual Array Cultivation even if you are ordinary in Spiritual Energy Cultivation. Otherwise, you will disgrace your mother.”

Mu Chen rolled his eyes and could not help but ask: “Mother is really such an amazing Spiritual Array Master?”

“Your mother’s achievement in Spiritual Arrays could be said to be unmatched within the Northern Spiritual Realm. Probably even in the Five Great Academies, nobody will be able to compare with her.” Mu Feng said with a faint smile.

“She was that amazing?” Mu Chen was slightly stunned. He could endure it if it was the Spiritual Array Masters within the Northern Spiritual Realm. But what sort of place are the “Five Great Academies”? In that place, the strongest Spiritual Array Masters could probably annihilate a Spirit Stage powerhouse on a whim. Her mother was actually that amazing?

“But if mother is that amazing, dad, don’t you feel a lot of pressure?” Mu Chen suddenly glanced at Mu Feng and joked around.

“When I first met your mother, her strength was somehow sealed

to an incredibly low level. At that time, I treated her as a common, weak woman and protected her on the way. In the end, I nearly died…"

Mu Feng smiled. Then, he revealed some pride in his eyes and said: "Who would have imagined that she would become that powerful? However, your mother is very gentle, so why would I feel any pressure?"

"So you took advantage of her when she was in a perilous state. When mother had her strength sealed, it must be when she had her guard down the most. Otherwise, why would she fancy you, dad?" Mu Chen said as he understood the situation.

"Damn brat, you're looking for a spanking!" Mu Feng finally turned the shame into anger and pretending to hit Mu Chen. However, Mu Chen laughed as he scurried away while leaving behind a dumbfounded Mu Feng.

"That boy…"

Mu Feng put his fists away and immediately let out a pleased smile as he muttered: "Jing, our son is becoming more and more amazing. I think that he might be able to surpass you in the future. When that happens, it will be the time when our family reunites…"

After talking up to this point, he seemed to have remembered something and darkness flushed through his eyes. He clenched his hands tightly and his drooping face was quite dark.

"You can look down on me. I don't care. It's true that I do not have the ability, but I still have my son!"

On the following day, when morning had just arrived, Mu Chen had already exited his room. Outside of the Meeting Room, he saw Mu Feng, Wen Ling and the others, who had already been waiting for him.

"Let's go."

Mu Feng showed a faint smile when he saw Mu Chen arriving. He took the lead and charged out of the Mu Estate to the northern part of Mu City. At that location, there was a vast square. It was the place where Mu Territory's guards would train daily. If they were able to arrange a Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array at this place, it would increase the attractiveness of the Mu Territory to a few powerhouses. After all, a Spirit Convergence Array would bring great benefits to cultivation.

Right now, the square had already been isolated by the Mu Territory's guard. Mu Feng and the others entered the square and stopped their footsteps. Then, they stared heatedly in front.

Chapter 71 – Joint Array Arrangement

Mu Chen also looked in front of him and could see five deep yellow pillars erected on the vast square. The stone pillars were filled with mysterious engravings. Around the stone pillars, there were traces of Spiritual Aura within the world fluctuating.

“This is a Spirit Convergence Pillar crafted by Spirit Convergence Rocks, right?”

Mu Chen walked forward and looked at the five Spirit Convergence Pillars. The Rank 3 Spirit Convergence Array within the Northern Spiritual Academy also had these things. However, the Spirit Convergence Pillars at that place were shining gold. Its purity was also much higher than the five pillars in front of him.

“These five Spirit Convergence Pillars are the central cores of the Spirit Convergence Array. Every single one of them costs millions of Spirit Coins.” Mu Feng said with a faint laugh.

Mu Chen nodded. A Spirit Convergence Array was different than ordinary Spiritual Arrays. Although it does not possess any offensive abilities, it is an essential item for many forces. Moreover, it is a symbol of strength for these forces. The reason why the Liu Territory was able to become the strongest force within the Northern Spiritual Realm was because they possess a Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array aside from the fact that they were truly stronger than the others.

In order to cultivate within a Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array, many powerhouses would defect to the Liu Territory in order to obtain better cultivation conditions, allowing themselves to go further on the path of cultivation.

And generally speaking, a Spirit Convergence Array could be considered a rather well-known Spiritual Array to people. Many Spiritual Array Masters are aware of its Diagram Array. However, they are only aware of it. It was still extremely difficult if they

want to construct it.

Not to mention about the various rare materials that a Spirit Convergence Array requires, the required number of Spiritual Seals in order to construct the Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array was a total of 50. Even Rank 2 Spiritual Array Masters, who were less skilled, may not create it alone. Moreover, they were extremely rare existences within the Northern Spiritual Realm. It was impossible for the Mu Territory to invite them over. Thus, they could only use numbers and see if it could be completed by a joint force of four Rank 1 Spiritual Array Masters.

Fortunately, Wen Ling had already been long regarded as a top existence among the Rank 1 Spiritual Array Masters and was highly likely to ascend to a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master. With him leading, it would increase the chances significantly.

“To construct the Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array this time, the five of us will each be responsible for one Spirit Convergence Marble. We will base it on the diagram array and each of us will be responsible for a portion of it. Then, we will connect it together and cause the Array to activate.” Wen Ling looked at Mu Chen and said.

“Although this method of being responsible for a portion of the Diagram Array is a way, it seems that it requires a high compatibility rate, right? If even the slightest mistake occurred during the connection process, it will probably...” Mu Chen hesitated for a moment. He was not a rookie in Spiritual Arrays now and could naturally discover the flaw in this approach.

Wen Ling nodded and sighed: “It can’t be helped. I think that it’s impossible to find such an amazing Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master within the entire Northern Spiritual Realm, who could construct a Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array by himself.”

“When the Liu Territory constructed their Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array, they also used this approach. And based on my

knowledge, they secretly failed many times and suffered a huge loss. However, normal individuals did not know this."

Mu Feng smiled and said: "The materials that we gathered could only support one more failure. Otherwise, we will have to spend some time to prepare it again."

"If we were to fail to construct the Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array, the Liu Territory will probably not give up on this chance of attacking us. They will spread it out loudly and that will be detrimental to us." Zhou Ye said helplessly.

Mu Feng waved his hand and smiled as if he did not care: "It's fine if you do your best."

Zhou Ye let out a bitter laugh. He knew that Mu Feng did not want to give too much pressure and responsibility to Mu Chen since Mu Chen had gotten involve with it. This is why he acted so carefree. But in fact, Mu Feng really hoped to construct the Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array. This way, it would reap great benefits to the Mu Territory's fame.

Mu Chen glanced at Mu Feng and did not say anything. After all, they were father and son. Although Mu Feng might be saying this, he could tell how important this matter was to him.

"To arrange the array this time, I will be responsible for 20 Spiritual Seals. As for the remaining 30, Chen Ling and the others will each be responsible for 8. As for Mu Chen, he will be responsible for 6 Spiritual Seals."

Wen Ling looked at Mu Chen and said: "Do not underestimate these 6 Spiritual Seals. If you want to complete this portion of the Diagram Array, it will probably be even harder than the "Spiritual Flame Array"."

Mu Chen nodded. Naturally, he understood this truth. Furthermore, he did not have much experience, so Wen Ling had already thought highly of him when he allowed him to be

responsible for 6 Spiritual Seals."

"Next up, I will explain the key parts of the Spirit Convergence Array. You must carefully remember it, so that you will not make a mistake and ruin everything." Wen Ling said strictly.

"Yes." Mu Chen gave a slight smile and said. Although the boy's handsome face was quite young, he was still humble and polite. This made the other 3 Rank 1 Spiritual Array Masters watching by the side nod their heads. It was rare for this Mu Territory's Little Lord to act so harmonious even with his status and talent. If it was another youth, they would have acted arrogant and butted in already.

Mu Feng watched and seriously listened as Wen Ling explained the key points about the Spirit Convergence Array to Mu Chen. He also smiled pleasantly and waved his hand before heading away with Zhou Ye. It was a headache to listen about this and that about Spiritual Arrays. It was still best to leave that boy to deal with it by himself.

In the next few days, Mu Chen would head to this square and study with Wen Ling regarding this Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array. Moreover, with his gentleness and studious attitude, the other 3 Rank 1 Spiritual Array Masters were quite satisfied with it. They would also talk about their experiences in arranging Spiritual Arrays and Mu Chen would humbly learn from it.

By working hard, Mu Chen had basically understood the Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array after a few days. At the same time, he was surprised about how complex the Spirit Convergence Array was. Compared to it, the "Spiritual Flame Array" that he had learned earlier was nothing much.

Moreover, Wen Ling and the others were quite satisfied after seeing Mu Chen beginning to understand about this Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array. They discussed it for a while and finally decided to take action tomorrow!

Mu Chen stood in the square. He stared at the 5 Spirit Convergence Pillars standing upright and took a deep breath. He gradually allowed himself to calm down.

Beside him, Mu Feng patted his shoulders and said with a comforting smile: “Just do your best, it doesn’t matter if it fails. After all, it will only just be delayed for a while.”

Mu Chen smiled, but he did not reply. He looked at Wen Ling and saw the latter’s face becoming extremely serious. Then, he immediately waved and moved on top of a Spirit Convergence Pillar.

Seeing this, Mu Chen and the others also moved and each of them landed on top of a Spirit Convergence Pillar.

“Prepare yourself.”

Wen Ling shouted and shook his hands. Then, a clump of light floated out from his hand and a powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuation emitted out wave after wave.

Mu Chen and the others also followed. Four clumps of light rose to the sky. These were all High Rank Spiritual Beast’s Soul Essence. In order to construct this sort of array, Spiritual Beast’s Soul Essence is an indispensable item. This is because the array requires the massive energy that is accumulated within the Soul Essence as a guide.

“Let’s begin!”

Wen Ling stared at the clumps of light overhead and let out a shout. He waved his sleeves and 20 Spiritual Seals surged out from his sleeves in an instant. This speed of condensing Spiritual Seals had, indeed, surpassed ordinary Rank 1 Spiritual Array Masters.

Chen Ling and the other two Rank 1 Spiritual Array Masters all stared enviously at this. Although they were considered Rank 1 Spiritual Array Masters, they were far worse than Wen Ling. The latter could highly likely become a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master.

They were jealous for a moment. Then, they collected their thoughts and each of them condensed 8 Spiritual Seals. They carefully controlled it and allowed them to enter the air surrounding the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence above them.

Buzz.

Mu Chen also took action now and 6 Spiritual Seals condensed on his fingertips. With his ability right now, he would be able to manipulate it sophisticatedly if he was only manipulating 6 Spiritual Seals.

The 6 Spiritual Seals vanished within the surroundings of the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence. Then, the air trembled. Mu Chen closed his eyes slightly and moved his long fingers. As his fingertips trembled, a light emerged within the surrounding air of the Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence. Light beams carefully extended out and intertwined with each other.

The square was completely silent. The 5 of them were gathering all their thoughts and carefully arranged the portion of the Diagram Array they were responsible for.

Mu Feng and the others stood nearby and had a serious expression as they stared at the fluctuations caused by the Spiritual Energy. A hint of nervousness flashed through their eyes. If they were to fail this time, this plan of theirs would be delayed for at least 6 months. Moreover, they would definitely be ridiculed by the Liu Territory.

"Pass down an order; do not let anyone approach this location." Mu Feng waved his hand and gently spoke.

"Yes!" A guard hurriedly responded and spread out with a large amount of men.

The time quickly passed while Mu Feng and the others were waiting restlessly. In a blink of an eye, an hour passed. The Spiritual Energy fluctuations at the scene were becoming

increasingly violent. Above the 5 individuals and the Spirit Convergence Pillars, a complex Spiritual Energy Diagram Array was flashing dazzlingly.

Another half an hour quickly passed, Wen Ling was the first to open his eyes. His eyes were filled with nervousness and seriousness. This time, he assumed half the responsibility of arranging the Spiritual Array. If others were to make a mistake, they might be able to save it. However, if he were to cause it, it would basically mean that the arrangement of the array would end up in complete failure.

Following after Wen Ling, Chen Ling and the others also opened their eyes one after another. It was evident that they had completely the portion of the Diagram Array they were responsible for.

“Connect the array!”

Seeing this, Wen Ling’s face became increasingly serious. Next up, it was the most difficult step. If any mistakes were to occur during the connection process, it was likely to affect the situation as a whole and force the entire group to collapse.

The four of them heard this and tensed up their bodies. They gathered all their focus and moved their thoughts. Then, light beams shot out from the complex light array above them and began to intertwine with each other.

At the outside, Mu Feng and the others’ hearts pounced when they witnessed this scene. They knew that whether or not it would succeed would all depend on this step.

Chapter 72 – Heart Array State

Buzz.

A violent and dense Spiritual Energy trembled within the air like a wave. Everybody outside was staring nervously at the sky. At that location, 5 parts of the complex Spiritual Energy light array were beginning to gather slowly above Wen Ling and the other's heads.

Swoosh.

At this moment, the 5 complex light arrays were rapidly trembling. Then, a Spiritual Energy light beam exploded out and suddenly made contact with each other in the center point of the array.

The light beams intertwined with each other complicatedly and bursts of fluctuations emitted out. Wen Ling and the others' faces were extremely serious. They did not dare to be distracted. At this moment, if even a single mistake were to occur when the light beams intertwined with each other, it would lead to serious consequences.

Chi Chi.

The light beams quietly connected with each other. Then, Mu Feng and the others were able to see that the five separated Spiritual Energy light array were showing faint signs of merging together.

However, they still didn't dare to breathe out. This is because they knew that it was not completely successful yet.

The time passed by slowly and the trajectories of the connected light beams also became more complicated. This requires a rather precise control. When two Spiritual Energy light beams made contact with each other, they must control the power of the Spiritual Energy to the same level. Otherwise, it is highly possible

that one side's light beam would be shattered by the other and, thus, the connection would fail.

It truly requires sophisticated and subtle control ability.

As the connection became increasingly complex, Wen Ling and the others' eyes became more serious. Even cold sweat emerged on their forehead. This sort of control had a considerable consumption on their mind.

Mu Chen focused his mind. His eyes suddenly closed, yet Wen Ling and the others did not notice it. Although the sight in front of him was complete darkness, it was strange that his mind seemed to have flowed through the Spiritual Energy light beams that he controlled and wandered within the Spirit Convergence Array like a flood. Not only was it the part he was responsible for, even Wen Ling and the others' parts were reflected within his heart.

At this moment, the other world seemed to have been separated by him. No movement could disturb him. There were only sketched out complex and obscure Diagram Array trails within his heart.

Under this somewhat strange state, the nervousness that Mu Chen had originally felt faded away. His long fingers trembled slightly and the Spiritual Energy light beam moved precisely based on his thoughts.

At this moment, he felt increasingly that he had an innate sense of proficiency over this Spiritual Array.

In mid-air, the five Diagram Arrays were getting closer. The Spiritual Energy light beams converged together and gradual signs of it completely merging had appeared.

When Mu Feng and the others witnessed this scene, they could not hold back the delight surging out from their faces. Everything seemed to be going smoothly.

However, Wen Ling did not relax. He understood that it was not

considered successful as long as the final step of the connection process was not complete. That is because this tiny step could cause the entire array to collapse.

“There’s only the final bit left…”

Wen Ling gritted his teeth and attempted to calm himself down. He continued to manipulate the Spiritual Energy light beams stably and allowed it to connect with the other four portions of the Diagram Array.

And when he completed this final step, he could not help but let out a sigh of relief. However, at this moment, he felt a strange fluctuation coming out from the Spiritual Array.

This fluctuation was not strong, yet it instantly changed the color of Wen Ling’s face. He hurriedly lifted his head and noticed that traces of disorder had actually appeared in the Spiritual Array in front of Chen Ling.

“Sh*t!”

Wen Ling’s heart jumped and his face became pale. It turned out that when Chen Ling was connecting the Spiritual Array with the Spiritual Array Master to the left of him, the latter’s Spiritual Energy light beam was slightly stronger. It actually caused his Spiritual Energy light beam to shatter.

Upon seeing this, Chen Ling’s face changed. He quickly attempted to save it and hastily converged light beams to reconnect them. However, he made a mistake while he was in a rush and, instead, cause the originally stabilized Spiritual Array to tremble.

“Kacha.”

A sudden sound of breaking emerged from a part of the Spiritual Array formed by Chen Ling. Then, he stared with a pale face as the Spiritual Energy light beams were disappearing bit by bit. Finally, it affected the Spiritual Seals and caused 3 of the Spiritual Seals to

completely shatter.

This sudden turn of events made the other two Spiritual Array Master's face change. Especially the one whose Spiritual Energy was too strong and caused Chen Ling's Spiritual Energy light beam to fade away. His face was exceptionally ugly.

Once a Spiritual Seal was destroyed, it basically meant that half the Spiritual Array was destroyed. Moreover, it was impossible to complete the Spirit Convergence Array without Chen Ling's disappeared portion of the Spiritual Array.

"This..."

This accident was immediately perceived by Mu Feng and Zhou Ye. Their hands gripped together on the spot as they stared at the disorderly Spiritual Array in front of Chen Ling. They glanced over and noticed a hint of bitterness from the other person's eyes. Indeed, a problem had appeared.

"Chen Ling, stabilize your mind, do not get confused!" Wen Ling shouted out lougly.

Chen Ling gritted his teeth and took a couple of deep breaths. He quickly used all his power to stabilize the Spiritual Array. However, after the 3 Spiritual Seals shattered, his Spiritual Array could be considered as incomplete.

"Brother Wen, I'm afraid that I cannot maintain it for long. Sorry, I've dragged you down this time." Chen Ling said with a bitter smile.

"You only have 3 Spiritual Seals that were shattered, so the Spiritual Array is only slightly incomplete. Can you form more Spiritual Seals to save it now?" Wen Ling gritted his teeth and asked.

"I..." Chen Ling's face reddened up and he said ashamedly: "I probably cannot stabilize this incomplete Spiritual Array as I continue to form Spiritual Seals..."

Wen Ling sighed. Then, he turned to look at the other two Spiritual Array Masters. They, too, shook their heads embarrassedly. If they were to distract themselves to help save Chen Ling's portion, problems would probably appear on their side.

Seeing this, Wen Ling let out a bitter expression. He had already took the responsibility of completing the most complex portion during this joint array arrangement. Right now, manipulating 20 Spiritual Seals was already hit limit. It was impossible for him to create any more.

"Eh..."

He sighed and shook his head helplessly at Mu Feng. It seems that they failed this time as well.

Mu Feng let out a bitter laugh and nodded his head. But just when he was about to wave his hand to allow them to stop...

"Huh?"

However, when he intended to end this time's array arrangement, Zhou Ye suddenly said aloud: "Little Mu, he..."

Mu Feng hurriedly lifted his head when he heard this. He noticed that Mu Chen had his eyes closed tightly and did not seem to have noticed the situation occurring right now. However, 3 Spiritual Seals suddenly appeared on his fingertips.

"What is he doing?"

Wen Ling and the others also became aware of Mu Chen's action and were stunned. However, their color of their faces instantly changed as they noticed Mu Chen flicking the 3 Spiritual Seals over and it landed above Chen Ling.

These 3 Spiritual Seals quickly fused into the air. Then, Wen Ling and the others were able to see Spiritual Energy light beams rapidly extending out and the incomplete portion of the Spiritual Array were being drawn out.

“It’s the shattered portion of Chen Ling’s Spiritual Array!”

Wen Ling and the others had a keen vision over the others. They instantly saw that the portion of the Spiritual Array that Mu Chen had drawn out was Chen Ling’s shattered portion of the Spiritual Array!

However, they were immediately astounded. How was this possible? Mu Chen had always been studying about the Spiritual Array portion that he was responsible for. Moreover, he had never made contact with the Chen Ling’s portion. How could he form out the missing portion this quickly and without any mistakes?

Wen Ling exchanged glances with each other and saw the surprise within each other’s eyes. Then, they discovered that Mu Chen had kept his eyes shut the entire time. In other words, he did not need to see it at all and he formed the shattered portion out.

“How could this be possible?!” The other two Spiritual Array Masters were speechless.

Wen Ling was also surprised. He fixed his sight at Mu Chen, who had his eyes closed while his fingers trembled. Then, his eyes focused and he slowly said: “He seems to have entered the state of “Heart Array”.

“Heart Array State?”

Chen Ling and the others hesitated for a moment before gasping. Their eyes were filled with an incredulous expression: “Isn’t the Heart Array State only possible for Spiritual Array Masters, who are at least Rank 3? How could he enter such a state?”

Wen Ling also felt incredulous, yet he only said with a bitter smile: “I am not too sure as well. He seemed to possess great talent within the areas of Spiritual Arrays. Although this situation is rare, it has appeared before. A few highly gifted individuals would be able to rely on a certain catalyst to enter this state before reaching Rank 3 Spiritual Array Master.”

Chen Ling and the others were completely speechless. Soon, they were filled with envy. They would probably never enter this state within their lifetime. However, the boy in front of them seemed to have entered it inadvertently. It really made them sigh deep down within their hearts.

“Chen Ling, control the rest of your Spiritual Array to connect it with Mu Chen’s. Then, continue to combine the array!” Wen Ling said in a deep voice.

Hearing this, Chen Ling nodded. He carefully controlled the incomplete Spiritual Array and slowly connected it to the part that Mu Chen had saved.

“Combine the Array!”

Hearing Wen Ling’s shout, Chen Ling and the others urged the Spiritual Arrays to connect once again. This time, no accidents occurred and the five Spiritual Arrays merged together perfectly. All of a sudden, a powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuation burst out from mid-air. A large brilliance enshrouded the light barrier and everybody within the Mu Territory could feel that the Spiritual Aura within the world was gathering in the direction of the square.

“Success!”

Wen Ling and the others stared at the complex Spiritual Array that enveloped the sky above the square. A sense of relief and delight poured out from their eyes. Outside of the venue, Mu Feng also had an excited expression as he saw that the situation took a dramatic turn.

Gradually, Wen Ling and the others detached their thoughts away from the Spirit Convergence Array and stared complicatedly at the boy nearby. At this moment, the boy gradually opened his eyes. He looked at Wen Ling and the others as he scratched his head. With a slightly dazed voice, he said: “We finished it?”

Hearing this, Wen Ling and the others’ faces completely

stiffened.

Chapter 73 – Seeded Entry

“You don’t know what happened?” Wen Ling could not help but ask as Mu Chen’s confusion showed.

Mu Chen frowned. He vaguely remembered that he seemed to have entered a certain state earlier. However, he was not particularly clear about what had just happened.

“Earlier, you have entered the ‘Heart Array’ State.” Wen Ling said softly.

“Heart Array State?” Mu Chen was surprised.

“It is a mysterious state you would only be able to touch after you become a Rank 3 Spiritual Array Master. At that time, you will be able to get rid of the binds of the naked eye and use your heart to observe the array. All of the trajectories of the Spiritual Array would be within your heart and it will move based on your thoughts.”

Wen Ling stared at Mu Chen and said, “An accident occurred for the Spirit Convergence Array earlier and it was going to fail. However, it seems that you have unconsciously saved it.”

Mu Chen was slightly stunned. He seemed to have remembered that the Spirit Convergence Array had completely reflected itself within his heart. Moreover, the originally completed Spiritual Array seemed to have a flaw at the final moment. Then, at a conditioned reflex, he seemed to have done something to it.

“So that is called Heart Array State.” Curiosity filled Mu Chen’s eyes. Under that state, he could feel that it has become a lot easier to arrange a Spiritual Array and the Spiritual Energy light beams would move based on his thoughts. The feeling like how water floods in made him feel extremely comfortable.

“However, based on your appearance, it seems that you have unconsciously entered that mysterious state. You must try to

comprehend that feeling more. If you are able to control whether or not you can enter the Heart Array State, it will greatly benefit your Spiritual Array Cultivation." Wen Ling smacked his lips. This time, he could not conceal the jealousy within his tone. The Heart Array State, it is a state that many Spiritual Array Masters would dream of. Even he had never experienced it before.

Beside him, Chen Ling and the other Spiritual Array Master also stared at Mu Chen with a complex expression. They did not have the slightest mentality of looking down on him. They understood that the boy in front of them was probably at a completely different level. Perhaps in the near future, they would be looking up at the boy, who had once humbly asked for advice.

"Haha, thank you, everybody. You've done a great deed to the Mu Territory since you've constructed the Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array this time!" At this moment, Mu Feng walked in from the outside with a delighted expression. Then, he cupped his fist and thanked Wen Ling, Chen Ling and the other.

Wen Ling let out a faint smile. Moreover, Chen Ling and the others had slightly reddened faces. They had nearly ruined the entire thing. If it wasn't for Mu Chen entering the Heart Array State, they would probably cause the Mu Territory to have a major loss.

"Territory Lord Mu, the ones who performed the majority of this service are Brother Wen and the Little Lord..." Chen Ling said embarrassedly.

"Mister Chen Ling, what are you saying? There is no size of this service. Without the 3 of you, how could we have arranged this Spirit Convergence Array?" Mu Feng said in a stern voice.

Hearing this, Chen Ling and the others also emotionally cuffed their hands. They did not have arrogance within their eyes anymore. For Mu Feng to be the Mu Territory's Lord, his tolerance was really impressive. In the future, they might decide to move

around the Mu Territory more. Furthermore, Mu Chen's talent in Spiritual Array Cultivation was extremely terrifying. He will reach a staggering height in this aspect. At that time, they would benefit greatly if they were able to get some pointers from him.

Mu Chen also quietly smiled when he saw Mu Feng's act of winning them over. His own father was quite crafty. There aren't many Spiritual Array Masters in the Northern Spiritual Realm. If they were able to rope in three Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master, it would be a considerable assistance.

Because Wen Ling and the others have also consumed a lot of strength due to the Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array, Mu Feng only talked with them briefly before sending them off so they could rest. Afterwards, he let out a sigh of relief and smiled as he stared at Mu Chen beside him: "Good boy, it's all thanks to you this time."

"You are my father, of course I have to help you." Mu Chen grinned as he spoke.

"Damn brat." Mu Feng scolded him for a moment before rubbing Mu Chen's head. He sighed and said: "If you want to help me, then hurry and get admitted to the 'Five Great Academies'. The Northern Spiritual Realm may seem very big, but we are only a group of visionless toads sitting within a well. You will only be qualified to become a true powerhouse if you obtained the resources and education from the 'Five Great Academies'."

"Your talent far surpasses me, your father. Therefore, you will walk much farther than me and you will be able to do things that your father cannot do."

Mu Feng muttered to himself: "You are all my hope."

Mu Chen stared at Mu Feng's gentle and comforting eyes and smiled: "Dad, relax. I have said it before, there will be a day when I bring mother back."

Mu Feng laughed. He only felt that his eyes started to become obscure and firmly nodded his head. He believed that his son would never let him down.

“I’ll head back to the Northern Spiritual Academy tomorrow. After calculating the time, the spaces within the Five Great Academies should have been sent over by now. I’ll see how many spaces were assigned to the Northern Spiritual Academy this time.”

Mu Chen stretched his waist and his black eyes stared at the red glow on the horizon. An elegant and soft figure was reflected within the depths of his eyes. She seemed to have long silver hair as well as a pair of glass-like eyes. Her exquisite and tiny face, which would definitely create a calamity in the future, would often be covered with a coldness that separated others away from her. However, only he knew how gentle she was underneath that coldness.

“The Five Great Academies…I really have to go there.”

…

The next day. After Mu Chen said farewell to Mu Feng, he used the Mu Territory’s Transfer Spiritual Array to hurry back to Northern Spiritual City. However, he did not stay within the city for long and headed straight back to the Northern Spiritual Academy.

At this moment, three figures were sitting up straight in a study within the Northern Spiritual Academy. The Principal of the Northern Spiritual Academy, Xiao Mu, was in the front. Behind him on the left and right were the two highest level of instructors within the Northern Spiritual Academy, Teacher Mo and Teacher Xi.

“The spaces for the Five Great Academy have been sent over.”

Within Principal Xiao’s hand, he held a golden picture scroll. On

the picture scroll, there were five different, yet extremely oppressive emblems. These five emblems represent the Five Great Academies.

“How many spaces did our Northern Spiritual Academy obtain this time?” Teacher Mo asked interestedly.

Principal Xiao’s dry fingers gently touched the golden picture scroll within his hand. He said with a strange expression: “Five entries.”

“Five?” Teacher Mo thought for a moment before saying: “There are only 5 students within the East Branch, who would be eligible to reach the Spiritual Rotation Stage in a short period of time. As for the West Branch, there will probably be 7 students. It seems that there will be a fierce competition for it.”

Principal Xiao nodded his head. The requirements for the Five Great Academies were quite harsh. It isn’t a place where you can enter just by wanting to enter it.

“Moreover, aside from these five entries...there is a special entry.” Principal Xiao’s expression became increasingly strange as he stared at Teacher Mo and Teacher Xi.

“A special entry?” Teacher Mo and Teacher Xi stared in puzzled at Principal Xiao.

“It is a Seeded-Class Entry.” Principal Xiao said as he lowered the golden picture scroll within his hand.

“A Seeded-Class Entry?” Teacher Mo and Teacher Xi’s faces finally became serious and they could not help but ask: “How could they hand over this sort of entry to our Northern Spiritual Academy?”

The Five Great Academies’ entries were divided into three classes. The lowest class was the ordinary entries. The second level was the Seeded-Class entries. Right now, the Northern Spiritual Academy had received this type of special entry. However, these

entries would only be obtained by powerful academies. A Spiritual Academy like the Northern Spiritual Academy should never obtain this level of entrie.

The highest level entry was the Core Entries. It is extremely rare and everyone, who earned it, were monster-like existences. Only the most dazzling individuals in the Spiritual Road would be able to obtain it.

Moreover, these entries were not just in name. It would also provide you an identity after you've decided which one of the "Five Great Academies" you'll enter. The status and resources you'll obtain would depend on it. Thus, many people would fight to the bitter end in order to obtain this high class entry.

"A Seeded-Class Entry. After including all the Spiritual Academies, there will only be twenty of them within the Hundred Spirit Heavens...I can't believe that one would actually land in our Northern Spiritual Academy's hands." Principal Xiao let out a strange laugh as if it was incomprehensible.

Hundred Spirit Heavens is the vast land outside of the Northern Spiritual Realm. Within the Hundred Spirit Heavens, there were dozens of large and small realms and the Northern Spiritual Realm was only a relatively weak realm. Therefore, the Northern Spiritual Academy would not be able to obtain an advantage over all the other Spiritual Academies within the Hundred Spirit Heavens. If it was in the past, this Seeded-Class entry would definitely be divided through the other powerful Spiritual Academies within the Hundred Spirit Heavens. How could it be their turn?

"I've heard a little bit of information. This Seeded-Class entry was probably allocated to us directly due to a decision of the Five Great Academies." Principal Xiao said faintly.

"Oh? A decision from the Five Great Academies?" Teacher Mo and Teacher Xi exchanged gazes with each other. Just what sort of

existence are the Five Great Academies? Why would they take care of a measly Northern Spiritual Academy? Moreover, they did not have any powerful figures within the “Five Great Academies”.

“We aren’t the ones that obtained it…” Principal Xiao narrowed his eyes slightly: “I think…that it might be a certain student within the Northern Spiritual Academy who has attracted the attention of the Five Great Academies.”

“Student?”

Teacher Mo and Tecaher Xi was stunned. Then, their eyes immediately lit up: “It’s Mu Chen?!”

Within the entire Northern Spiritual Realm, Mu Chen was the only one who had participated in the Spiritual Road. Moreover, he had surprisingly been kicked out half way. This was extremely difficult to understand and also made thoughts flash through other people’s mind. Just what on earth did Mu Chen do in the Spiritual Road?

Principal Xiao slowly nodded his head and said: “It should be that little guy…Heh, the Five Great Academies kicked him out of the Spiritual Road, yet they purposely handed a Seeded-Class Entry to us. What is the meaning of this? Is it to compensate him? Or are they reluctant to let him go?”

“Reluctant to let him go? To the Five Great Academies, what genius haven’t they seen? It’s only Mu Chen, it shouldn’t be enough, right?” Teacher Xi frowned.

Teacher Mo let out a faint smile and said: “You should not underestimate a person who killed a vicious individual, who was at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase, by relying on his Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase strength.”

Principal Xiao smiled and waved his head as he said: “We should not care what the Five Great Academies are thinking of. Since they handed this entry to us, we should just take it.”

“Then what about the entry? Should we hand it directly to Mu Chen?” Teacher Mo inquired.

Principal Xiao shook his head and said: “That would only lead to dissatisfaction with the other students. Moreover, if the Territory Lords within the Northern Spiritual Academy knew that we actually have a Seeded-Class Entry, wouldn’t they all be envious of it? If we handed it to Mu Chen, they would all be filled with fury and say that we were unfair.”

“Then…”

Principal Xiao stood up and let out a faint smile as he said: “We’ll follow the rules. Strength is supreme. We will hand over this Seeded-Class Entry to whoever is the strongest. Although it is possible that it was prepared for Mu Chen, he can only blame himself if he does not have the strength.”

As he said this, he waved his hand.

“Convey the news out. I think that many little guys would go crazy about it…Ohoho, a Seeded-Class Entry. It is the first one since the establishment of the Northern Spiritual Academy.”

Chapter 74 – Chen Fan, Huo Yun

Northern Spiritual Academy, East Branch, Training Grounds.

It was evident that the training grounds were quite lively today. It seems that every East Branch Heaven Class student came. This is because today was the day that the Northern Spiritual Academy would announce the amount of entries for the “Five Great Academies”.

Most of the students, who came to train in the Northern Spiritual Academy, came for the entries of the “Five Great Academies”. They would work hard year after year in order to use the Northern Spiritual Academy as a stepping stone and enter the rumored “Five Great Academies”...

When Mu Chen entered the training grounds, he was startled by the loud noise. He looked at the tightly packed heads and secretly smacked his lips. He never imagined that there will be so many students in the East Branch’s Heaven Class.

“Mu Chen, over here!”

Not far away, a girl’s sweet voice rang out. Mu Chen turned his gaze over and saw Tang Qian’Er waving her slender hands at him. The moving smile on her pretty face attracted a lot of attention from the youths nearby.

Mu Chen also directed a smile towards Tang Qian’Er and walked over. They had not met in a month. This young girl has increasingly become more slim and graceful. Although she was dressed in black training clothes, it is still possible to see her exquisite curves.

“I haven’t seen you in one month, yet why do I feel that you’ve change a bit?” Tang Qian’Er tilted her head and asked in surprise as she glanced at Mu Chen. After all, Mu Chen had stepped into the Spiritual Rotation Stage. Even though he had not revealed it, a girl

is indeed perceptive and could still feel a little bit of change.

“I nearly died inside the Black Eerie Swamp. Of course, I’ll change a bit.” Mu Chen smiled and said.

“You also went to the Black Eerie Swamp? I heard from my father that the Mu Territory seemed to have fought with the Liu Territory within the Black Eerie Swamp. I never imagined that you would have gone as well. Are you okay?” Tang Qian’Er frowned and asked.

Mu Chen shook his head. It seems, on that day, the commotion within the Black Eerie Swamp was quite large. Even the Tang Territory had received news about it. However, it seems that they did not know that the commotion was caused by the Nine Netherbird’s evolution.

“Brother Mu!”

A shout suddenly rang out from nearby. He noticed that Mo Ling, Tan Qingshan and the others all walked over with a smile. It seems that they have seriously trained during this month and appeared to be darker, especially Mo Ling. Mu Chen could feel that the Spiritual Energy within his body had become increasingly dense. It was only a step away from advancing to Spiritual Rotation Stage.

“Hehe, Brother Mu. It’s all thanks to the Jaded Essence Fruit you’ve gave me last time. I will probably reach the Spiritual Rotation Stage soon. When the happens, I’ll leave you behind.” Mo Ling directed a smile at Mu Chen and spoke.

Mu Chen smiled as he glanced at him. He was too lazy to correct him.

“I wonder how many entries the Northern Spiritual Academy will receive. Last time, it seemed to be 3 entries only. The East and West Branch fought to the bitter end for those 3 entries.” Mo Ling licked his lips. His eyes twinkled as he talked about the entries. It was apparent that he really wanted it.

Mu Chen also nodded his head. But just when he was about to speak, he heard a commotion coming from behind. He turned his head around and noticed two figures slowly walking over.

“Huh? It’s Chen Fan and Huo Yun...So these two guys finally decided to appear.” Mo Ling whispered as he looked at the two men and was a little surprised.

Hearing this, Mu Chen was also shocked. He glanced at the two individuals for a moment. When he was in the Earth Class, he had heard of these two names. Based on their strength, they were probably at the pinnacle of the East Branch’s Heaven Class. They were only slightly weaker than Liu Mubai. However, they were rather low-key and would rarely appear in the Northern Spiritual Academy. Therefore, their names would never appear in the rankings.

“It was rumored that they joined an Adventurer’s team and would often hunt Spiritual Beasts.” Mo Ling said.

Only then, Mu Chen nodded his head suddenly. No wonder he could feel a faint smell of blood from them. Moreover, from their calm eyes, it was indeed different from the youthful students nearby.

“Most likely, these two individuals have already attempted to charge into the Spiritual Rotation Stage.” Mu Chen said softly. He could feel that the Spiritual Energy fluctuation from their bodies were even stronger than Mo Ling. It seems that they have gradually condensed a Spiritual Wheel.

“It’s those two.” Tang Qian’Er whispered as her beautiful eyes stared at them

Mu Chen could hear that her tone had changed and could not help but glance at her in confusion.

“Hehe, Brother Mu. Chen Fan and Huo Yun knew each other since they were young. Both of them had fought against each other

as they grew up. Moreover, they both fell in love with Qian'Er after entering the Northern Spiritual Academy and would often fight with each other because of her. However, they were both rejected by her in the end. Then, these two grouped together and joined an Adventurer's Team to train. They said that they would court her again after they obtained the entries for the Five Great Academies." Mo Ling whispered on the side.

Mu Chen was stunned. He immediately glanced with a funny expression at Tang Qian'Er, who had a red face. The attractiveness of the East Branch's flower really couldn't be covered and would come wave after wave.

While Mu Chen was talking with Mo Ling, Chen Fan and Huo Yun also looked over to this side. To be exact, they saw Tang Qian'Er beside Mu Chen and a smile emerged on their indifferent faces as they walked quickly over.

Seeing that they were coming for her, Tang Qian'Er helplessly bit her lips and hid her body behind Mu Chen.

This tiny action made Chen Fan and Huo Yun completely stunned. They immediately fixated their gaze over at Mu Chen. Chen Fan's gaze was still alright, but Huo Yun had an ill gaze.

"You should be Mu Chen, right? I've heard of your name before. So we finally meet today." Chen Fan gave a faint smile at Mu Chen and held out his hand.

"Nice to meet you."

Mu Chen also replied with a smile and glanced at Chen Fan's outstretched hand. Then, he immediately shook it.

The moment when the two hands clasped with each other, Spiritual Energy surged out from Chen Fan's palm and the veins jumped on the arm that gripped Mu Chen's hand.

Mu Chen could feel a powerful squeeze coming from the palm and helplessly shook his head. He did not resist and allowed Chen

Fan to utilize his strength. However, his face did not have the slightest movement.

“Chen Fan, what are you doing!” Tang Qian’Er also noticed this scene and immediately frowned and shouted out.

Chen Fan stared at the trace of ridicule at the corner of Mu Chen’s mouth and frowned as well. This Mu Chen really had some ability.

“Ohoho, Qian’Er. I only had a teasing inclination. It’s been a while since such an amazing person has appeared in our East Branch.” Chen Fan retracted back his hand and smiled at Tang Qian’Er.

“Brother Mu Chen probably didn’t mind, right?” Chen Fan looked at Mu Chen.

“If it’s only this amount of strength, naturally, I wouldn’t mind.” Mu Chen smiled and said.

“Then we definitely should have a duel sometime.” Huo Yun challenged Mu Chen as he spoke.

“We’ll talk about it when you have the chance.” Mu Chen did not make any comments and ignored these two individuals as he walked towards the direction of the training grounds. On the other hand, Tang Qian’Er gave off a fierce glare at the two of them before following Mu Chen.

“Could Qian’Er have fallen in love with that boy? Wouldn’t we have benefited someone else because we were fighting with each other all the time?” Huo Yun glanced at Tang Qian’Er’s figure and muttered.

“That will depend if he has the ability to let us allow him to do so.” Chen Fan rubbed his chin and said.

“Let’s find an opportunity to beat him up.” Huo Yun said.

“Okay.” Chen Fan smiled and nodded his head.

More and more students appeared in the training ground. After approximately 30 minutes, a familiar figure slowly walked out. The commotions at this place instantly quieted down and stared eagerly at Teacher Mo, who walked over to the training grounds.

Teacher Mo glanced at the tightly packed heads and let out a faint smile. He cut straight to the point and said: “This time, the Northern Spiritual Academy has received 5 “Five Great Academies” entries.”

“Five?”

An uproar suddenly burst out within the training grounds. Although there were more entriess than last time, it was still quite short in supply for the qualified students.

“Moreover...” Teacher Mo’s eyes suddenly glanced at Mu Chen and said: “Aside from the five entries, we also have a Seeded-Class Entry.”

“A Seeded-Class Entry?”

All sounds seemed to have disappeared within the training grounds as looks of astonishment were directed at Teacher Mo. After a long period of them, a few people fiercely inhaled a breath. Even Chen Fan and Huo Yun took in a deep breath.

Mu Chen was probably the only person who remained calm. A Seeded-Class Entry was indeed quite rare. However...if he had successfully completed the Spiritual Road, he would have probably obtained an even higher class entry.

“Only the strongest student within the Northern Spiritual Academy would qualify to obtain this Seeded-Class Entry. Therefore, if you want to obtain it, you must defeat all other competitors.”

Teacher Mo stared at the shocked students and glanced once again at the calm Mu Chen. He smiled and said: “Within our East Branch Heaven Class, there are only five individuals who are

qualified to compete for it. They are: Chen Fan, Huo Yun, Mo Ling, Tang Qian'Er and…Mu Chen."

After hearing these five names, regretful sighs rang out from within the training grounds. However, they also understood. The ones who qualified for it must possess the ability to reach the Spiritual Rotation Stage in a short period of time. In this location, only these five individuals would meet this requirement.

"For the next month, I will personally guide the five of you individually and allow you to complete the final step and advance into the Spiritual Rotation Stage!" Teacher Mo said in a deep voice.

"Yes!"

Hearing this, Mo Ling and the others nodded excitedly. Teacher Mo was a Spirit Stage powerhouse. If he was to personally guide them, their cultivation would be smoother.

However, Mu Chen smiled helplessly and hesitated for a moment before holding up his hand.

"Mu Chen, do you have a question?" Seeing Mu Chen raise his head, he asked in confusion.

"Teacher Mo, that step is probably unnecessary for me."

Teacher Mo was stunned. He immediately guessed what that meant and his eyes fixated itself onto Mu Chen's body. Then, he could feel the Spiritual Energy fluctuation within the latter's body was different than the rest of the students.

"Y…You've advanced to the Spiritual Rotation Stage?" Teacher Mo exclaimed.

WAAA.

Sounds of wowing erupted out from nearby. Not only did Tang Qian'Er, Mo Ling and the others stare in shock at Mu Chen, even Chen Fan and Huo Yun opened their mouths slightly.

This guy…actually reached the Spiritual Rotation Stage already?

Chapter 75 – Spiritual Arts Room 3

In the training grounds, the atmosphere turned into an uproar due to the sudden and explosive news. Everyone's gaze fixated onto the figure of the young boy.

Spiritual Rotation Stage?

Although there were many excellent students within the current Northern Spiritual Academy, who have reached the critical point of their breakthroughs, there was only one person who managed to advance into that level. Based on everybody's knowledge, that person is the West Branch's Liu Mubai. He is also the strongest student within the Northern Spiritual Academy.

However, a second one had appeared in the East Branch now?

At the side, Mo Ling and the others stared blankly at Mu Chen. Then, he immediately let out a bitter laugh. Previously, he still tried to show off, yet he never knew that Mu Chen had left him in the dust a long time ago.

"What an insane person." Mo Ling and Tan Qingshan exchanged gazes with each other and saw this thought emerging from within their eyes. Especially the latter one, he had originally ascended to Heaven Class together with Mu Chen. However, right now he had only reached Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase, yet Mu Chen had already surpassed him by far.

"He really is a tough nut to beat."

Chen Fan and Huo Yun's expression became solemn. Although the Spiritual Energy within their aurasea had shown traces of condensing into a wheel, they were still quite far from reaching the actual Spiritual Rotation Stage.

Staring at the boy in front of them wearing a calm and composed expression, they were flabbergasted. It seems that this competitor would be difficult to deal with.

Teacher Mo waved his hand and stopped the noise within the training grounds. He stared deeply at Mu Chen before saying: “Although you managed to enter the Spiritual Rotation Stage, you should still remain in the Northern Spiritual Academy during the next month. It would probably be beneficial to you as well.”

After hearing this, Mu Chen’s heart moved slightly. He looked at Teacher Mo and nodded his head without saying anything.

“Alright, everyone should train by themselves now. Mu Chen, follow me for a moment.” Teacher Mo waved his hands and left the trainings grounds. Seeing this, Mu Chen immediately followed him.

With the departure of these two men, the training grounds became an uproar completely. It was evident that they were still immersed in the shock that Mu Chen had already advanced into the Spiritual Rotation Stage.

Mu Chen ignored the uproar that he had caused and walked forward. Then he saw Teacher Mo with his hands behind his back.

“Mu Chen, I think that you should be able to guess why our Northern Spiritual Academy obtained a Seeded-Class Entry?” Teacher Mo laughed as he looked at Mu Chen. Although the latter was only a youthful boy, he understood that Mu Chen was quite mature and more cautious than any battle-hardened veterans.

“Is it because of me?” Mu Chen, indeed, managed to predict it a bit. A Seeded-Class Entry was considerably rare even within the Hundred Spirit Heavens, not to mention about the Northern Spiritual Realm. Therefore, it would not have landed within the Northern Spiritual Academy unless of a special reason.

Teacher Mo nodded his head and said:” Indeed, it is related to you. However, Principal Xiao does not intend to hand the seeded entry to you directly.”

“I understand, that thing is too attractive. If it was handed over

to me, it wouldn't be good to the Northern Spiritual Academy." Mu Chen was not particularly surprised. The Northern Spiritual Academy has always remained neutral, if it were to be given to him so easily; others probably would not see things favourably.

"And..." Mu Chen let out a laugh. The boy's smile seemed to be a little bit conceited, yet it did not annoy anyone: "Since it belongs to me, I will rely on myself to obtain it. I don't need others generously gifting it to me.

Teacher Mo was stunned for a moment. He couldn't resist laughing out loud and a hint of admiration passed through his eyes: "You sure feel confident about it, if you're competing to obtain the seeded-class entry, you should know who is the greatest opponent for you, right?

"Liu Mubai." Mu Chen shrugged. Although that person was indeed quite annoying, Mu Chen had to admit that he had quite the strength.

"Do you know Liu Mubai's strength? " Teacher Mo asked again.

"He should have advanced into the Spiritual Rotation Stage a long time ago. Although the rumours within the Northern Spiritual Academy say that he is in the Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase, I feel that he is probably stronger than that." Mu Chen thought for a moment before saying this. He had fought against Liu Mubai earlier and the latter had definitely concealed a part of his strength.

"Yes, Liu Mubai currently might be in the Spiritual Rotation Stage Middle Phase." Teacher Mo nodded and he spoke.

"As expected." Mu Chen narrowed his eyes. He was indeed a formidable opponent. However, he had also advanced into the Spiritual Rotation Stage right now. Mu Chen wasn't exactly afraid of him if they had to fight.

"Moreover, Liu Mubai refused Teacher Xi's personal guidance

when he heard about the news of a Seeded-Class entry and headed straight back to the Liu Territory. Furthermore, he even took one month off." Teacher Mo said with a faint smile.

"He refused Teacher Xi's guidance?" Mu Chen was slightly surprised. Teacher Xi was still a genuine Spirit Stage powerhouse. Ordinary students would not be able to receive his personal guidance, yet Liu Mubai actually ignored it?

"There must be a reason why he chose to do this. It means that he believes that the Liu Territory has some sort of method to greatly improve his strength." Teacher Mo said softly.

Mu Chen nodded his head seriously. Although Liu Qingtian was a Spirit Stage powerhouse, he did not believe that Liu Qingtian would be better than Teacher Xi if it was about guidance for cultivation.

Then where did this belief of his come from?

Mu Chen bit his lips as he felt a sense of crisis. The most frightening thing were the unknown facts.

"During this one month, I will also teach you personally. Of course, if you believe that you will be able to improve more rapidly in the Mu Territory, I will not stop you." Teacher Mo smiled as he spoke.

"Teacher Mo, don't joke around. Although my father is also at the Spirit Stage, he has never taught others regarding cultivation. He is not good at it." Mu Chen said helplessly. Mu Feng's strength might be stronger than Teacher Mo's, but he was not suitable to teach others about cultivation.

Teacher Mo smiled and said: "Since that's the case, I will personally teach you during this one month. But before this, I will first talk about the compensation that the Northern Spiritual Academy would be handing to you."

"Compensation?" Mu Chen was startled. He immediately shook

his head and said: “Is it about the Seeded-Class Entry? Teacher Mo, the Northern Spiritual Academy did not do anything wrong. Moreover, I do not feel that I’ve lost anything.”

“Ohoho, Principal Xiao was the one to say it. No matter what, you are the reason why the Northern Spiritual Academy obtained this Seeded-Class Entry. If you think that compensation does not sound good, then you can change it to a reward.” Teacher Mo smiled.

“Then, fine.” Mu Chen scratched his head and did not refuse it anymore. Since the Northern Spiritual Academy was going to give him some benefits, it would be too pretentious if he continued to reject it.

“Then follow me to the Spiritual Arts Room.” Teacher Mo smiled.

“Spiritual Arts Room?” Mu Chen was stunned.

“Weren’t you interested in the Spiritual Arts Room’s 3rd Floor? This time, I’ll let you enter it.” Teacher Mo gave a faint laugh before turning around and walking away.

“The Spiritual Arts Room’s 3rd Floor?” Mu Chen licked his lips. A hint of delight surged out from his eyes. The Spiritual Arts Room’s 3rd Floor contains the most powerful Spiritual Arts within the Northern Spiritual Academy’s collection. The collection over there must be many times more bountiful than his father’s collection.

It seems that the Northern Spiritual Academy really decided to pay a price. The Spiritual Arts Room’s 3rd Floor is a place that very few students would be able to enter. At that location, the Spiritual Arts were all at least Spiritual Tier!

Mu Chen’s heart was filled with excitement and he quickly followed.

He followed Teacher Mo as they went all the way through the Northern Spiritual Academy and directly entered the Spiritual Arts Room. Then, they headed straight towards the 2nd Floor. At this moment, a few Heaven Class students were searching through Spiritual Arts. They were surprised when they saw Teacher Mo bringing Mu Chen up here.

"Mu Chen?"

A voice came from the side and Mu Chen looked over towards the red dress. It was evident that the charming Hong Ling was staring at him with her mouth slightly opened.

"Senior Hong Ling."

Mu Chen gave a slight smile and directed a nod towards Hong Ling. However, he did not say much more and directly followed Teacher Mo to the depths of the 2nd Floor. At that location, there was a faint light barrier. A dense Spiritual Energy fluctuation emitted out from the light barrier.

The two of them stopped in front of the light barrier and caused the students on the 2nd floor to turn their gaze over at them. They knew that this was the passageway to the Spiritual Art Room's 3rd Floor. However, no students were ever permitted to enter.

"Teacher Mo, what are you doing?"

A few Heaven Class students stared in astonishment at Teacher Mo and Mu Chen. Their eyes flashed as if they understood. Then, a surge of surprise filled their eyes.

"No way..."

While they exclaimed in a low voice, Teacher Mo waved his sleeves and cracks slowly appeared on the light barrier. However, just when he was about to bring Mu Chen in, a voice suddenly rang out from behind: "Teacher Mo, why is he allowed to enter the 3rd Floor?!"

Teacher Mo stopped for a moment and turned around. He could see many Heaven Class students staring angrily over at this location. Moreover, many of their eyes were filled with jealousy and unwillingness. They had longed to enter the Spiritual Arts Room 3rd Floor, yet they were not qualified to enter. However, seeing Teacher Mo bring Mu Chen in, it instantly imbalanced their psychological state.

Teacher Mo swept his eyes across them and said in a faint voice: "This is because his performance in the Spiritual Road has helped us to secure the first-ever Seeded-Class Entry for the Northern Spiritual Academy. Is this reason enough?"

The entire Spiritual Arts Room's 2nd Floor instantly became silent. Numerous incredulous gazes began to fixate themselves onto Mu Chen. So the first-ever Seeded-Class Entry of the Northern Spiritual Academy came because of him? Wasn't he kicked out of the Spiritual Road halfway through? Why would the Five Great Academies still purposely hand over a Seeded-Class Entry to the Northern Spiritual Academy?

Hong Ling could not help but conceal her lips with her slender hand. She immediately stared complicatedly at the boy, who had become the center of attention. The boy that had been ordinary within her eyes had slowly emitted out heat and light, causing him to become dazzling.

Seeing that nobody was questioning him anymore, Teacher Mo waved his hand and walked past the light barrier. Mu Chen also followed him immediately.

After the two individuals disappeared behind the light barrier, the Spiritual Arts Room 2nd Floor was still completely silent. It was evident that they were still immersed in the shock brought by the sudden news.

Chapter 76 – Two Spiritual Arts

The 3rd Floor of the Spiritual Arts Room was not as luxurious as imagined by Mu Chen. Instead, it was quite simple. It seemed like an ordinary attic, yet the spotless floor made others understand the importance of this place to the Northern Spiritual Academy due to its maintenance.

It was the first time Mu Chen had entered the treasured location, which every single Northern Spiritual Academy student would drool about and he immediately looked around curiously.

Teacher Mo walked forward. In the center of the attic, there was a bluestone platform. A delicate jade box was placed neatly on top of the bluestone platform. He waved his hand and the jade box opened. A light slowly floated out and many jaded scripts of different color were within the light.

“These are all Spiritual Tier Spiritual Art. You can pick from them.” Teacher Mo stared at Mu Chen and smiled.

“These are all Spiritual Tier Spiritual Arts?” Mu Chen stared at the dozen lights and could not help but smack his lips. As expected from the Northern Spiritual Academy, this collection was many times more powerful than his father’s collection.

Mu Chen hurriedly walked up and eagerness filled his eyes. He did not train in many Spiritual Arts right now and the only one that could be displayed was the Limitless Death Seal. Moreover, it may have a high potential, but it was still Common Tier. As for the Great Pagoda Art, it was too profound. It also could not bring obvious benefits to Mu Chen currently.

Therefore, he needed this level of Spiritual Art to increase his combat abilities. Otherwise, he did not believe he would be able to defeat Liu Mubai, who returned to the Liu Territory to prepare, one month later.

Mu Chen stretched out his hand and a clump of light appeared within his hand. The light faded away and a brown colored jaded script floated out. He glanced at it for a moment: “Earth Spiritwave, Spiritual Tier Low Rank.”

This seems to be a script for a Spiritual Tier Low Rank Attack Spiritual Art. Mu Chen pondered for a moment, yet he shook his head. Although this Spiritual Art was pretty good, it did not feel like it suited him.

Mu Chen lowered the Spiritual Art within his hand and looked at the other ones. Teacher Mo stood at a corner and quietly watched.

After 10 minutes since Mu Chen had started the selection, his eyes had finally lit up. Then, he stared in great interest at the jaded script in his hand. This jaded script was a faint cyan color. However, it was not an Attack Spiritual Art, but a Movement Spiritual Art. Moreover, it’s rank was not that low as well.

Shadowspirit Step, Spiritual Rank Middle Rank. If this Spiritual Art was to be trained to the Great Achievement Stage, your figure would be like a spirit while the afterimages would confuse others. It was also untraceable.

Mu Chen had learned a few Movement Spiritual Arts before, but these Movement Spiritual Arts were too ordinary. It was still the first time for him to see one of this level.

“Done? You really have a pretty good discerning eye. You’ve picked one of the few Spiritual Tier Middle Rank Spiritual Arts.” Seeing this, Teacher Mo let out a faint smile and spoke.

Mu Chen smiled embarrassedly before he stared at the Spiritual Arts reluctantly. He actually also took a liking to an Attack Spiritual Art. However, it would seem that he was too greedy if he picked another one.

“You’ve taken a liking to another one?” However, Teacher Mo still noticed his expression and immediately frowned as he asked.

Mu Chen smiled awkwardly.

“I originally planned on letting you select one Spiritual Art as compensation,” Teacher Mo stared at the resentful Mu Chen that was rubbing his head. He thought about it for a moment before he said with a smile, “However, I can make an exception to it and allow you to select one more. However, there is a condition.”

“What is the condition?” Mu Chen hurriedly asked.

“You must guarantee that you’ll defeat Liu Mubai and let the Northern Spiritual Academy East Branch obtain the Seeded-Class Entry,” Teacher Mo said.

“Eh?” Mu Chen was surprised for a moment. This was originally his goal. He stared at Teacher Mo’s eyes that contained a smile and seemed to have understood the meaning behind it. He immediately nodded his head, “Don’t worry, Teacher Mo. I will not let others obtain what belongs to me!”

Teacher Mo smiled as he waved his head, “Since that’s the case, then I’ll watch your performance. Choose it.”

Mu Chen nodded his head gratefully. Then, he did not hesitate and grabbed onto a jaded script amongst the ones that he had looked at. Ancient light writings emerged on top of the jaded script.

Spirit King Finger, Spiritual Tier Low Rank. It walks down the path of fierceness and hardness. Moreover, it allows the finger to be like metal and could fracture bones.

This was a Spiritual Art that trains the fingers. Mu Chen was quite interested in it. In the past, he had trained in a threat level Finger Spiritual Art. He was extremely satisfied with this type of attack, which was sharp and lethal without using weapons.

“Oh? It’s actually a Finger Spiritual Art?”

Teacher Mo was also stunned for a moment when he noticed Mu Chen selecting this Spiritual Art. It was quite painful to train in

this sort of Spiritual Art. This is because it requires you to train solely your fingers. Moreover, during the training period, the pain caused by training your fingers was not something an ordinary person could endure. After all, the nerves of the fingertips are linked with the heart.

“I’ve gotten accustomed to it.” Mu Chen smiled. There was no power that you could obtain without effort. If you want to obtain it, you would naturally have to pay a price.

Teacher Mo nodded his head. He felt even more satisfied regarding the boy in front of him. He has talent, yet he was not conceited nor was he reckless. He could endure what ordinary people could not endure. A boy like this was considered to be the most excellent student he had seen through the many years of teaching in the Northern Spiritual Academy.

“During this one month, I will help you with the training of these two Spiritual Arts and allow you to succeed in it as soon as possible.” Teacher Mo waved his hand before he walked out of the building.

“I will not disappoint Teacher Mo.”

Mu Chen stared at the back of Teacher Mo and nodded his head heavily. He was not a person, who would only talk about how grateful he is to another person. Teacher Mo had helped him greatly, so what he needed to do was not to disappoint him. It would be enough if he snatches the Seeded-Class Entry away!

Liu Mubai. Let us have a good fight this time!

Liu Territory, Inside the Liu Estate.

“Seeded-Class Entry?!”

Within the room, the Liu Territory Lord, Liu Qingtian, immediately sat up when he heard these words. He stared in surprise while revealing a hint of excitement at Liu Mubai as he said, “How is it possible for the Northern Spiritual Academy to

obtain a Seeded-Class Entry?"

"I'm not too sure as well." Liu Mubai shook his head and said, "However, it is indeed true."

"A Seeded-Class Entry. This is probably the first time that the Northern Spiritual Academy has obtained it, right? If Liu Mubai is able to obtain this Seeded-Class Entry, he would definitely obtain better resources when he entered the Five Great Academies. His achievements would also surpass ordinary Five Great Academies' students." Liu Zong was also shocked by the news, but he immediately said with a delighted expression.

They were aware that a student, who obtained the Seeded-Class Entry, would be in a different level compared to an ordinary student.

"Haha, if Mubai becomes a seeded student in the Five Great Academies. Perhaps he would have reached the Three Heavens Stage by the time he graduated. At that time, not only would the Liu Territory become the Northern Spiritual Realm's Lord. We would even obtain a decent position in the Hundred Spirit Heavens!" Liu Ming laughed.

Liu Qingtian licked his lips and stared eagerly at Liu Mubai as he said, "Mubai, no matter what price you have to pay, you must obtain the Seeded-Class Entry!"

"That's right. Within the Northern Spiritual Academy, who is the most threatening opponent to you?"

Liu Mubai's eyes narrowed. He thought about the brief fight he had with Mu Chen in the Black Eerie Swamp. Although he had hid quite a bit of strength back then, he could feel, with his instincts, that Mu Chen seemed to have some other means as well.

If there was still a student within the Northern Spiritual Academy that could cause him some uncertainty, it would probably be Mu Chen.

“Mu Chen.” Liu Mubai replied. “Dad, this Mu Chen had obtained the qualifications to the Spiritual Road before. We cannot underestimate him too much.”

“Mu Chen? That boy?” Hearing this name, Liu Qingtian’s eyes turned cold. He remembered that Mu Chen had lured the Devouring Spirit Bees over in the Black Eerie Swamp and helped Mu Feng solve their dilemma.

“Big Brother, that boy is quite strange. Back then, Xue Tu went to kill him, who was only a Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase, but in the end, he was the one who somehow died.” Liu Ming also opened his mouth to speak. He could still remember deeply about the matter back then.

Liu Qingtian nodded his head and a hint of coldness immediately surged through his face. He said, “The Seeded-Class Entry must fall into the hands of the Liu Territory. Otherwise, it would be a calamity. Therefore, we must not make any mistakes about this matter!”

“Mubai. From today onwards, you will enter the forbidden lands behind the mountain. Your grandfather will assist you with your training!” Liu Qingtian’s eyes flashed and he muttered.

“Grandfather? Grandfather is inside the forbidden lands? Didn’t he go missing 3 years ago?” Hearing this, Liu Mubai was surprised and became speechless.

“Heh, that is what is said at the outside. Your grandfather secluded himself to try and enter the Three Heavens Stage. If we wait until that old man succeeds, wouldn’t the Northern Spiritual Realm be completely controlled by our Liu Territory?!”

Liu Qingtian let out a dark laughing sound and said, “That group of idiots from the Mu Territory thought that they would be safe if they hindered the Liu Territory from obtaining the Nine Netherbird. Just you wait, as long as your grandfather comes out, I will make Mu Feng kneel down in front of me like a dog!”

“An upstart force wants to compare backgrounds with my Liu Territory? What an idiotic dream!”

“Yes!”

Hearing this, Liu Mubai also had a hint of excitement flash through his eyes. If his grandfather could personally assist him, his strength would definitely increase greatly after one month. By then, who would care about Mu Chen?

As he thought back about the shame that Mu Chen made him feel in the Black Eerie Swamp, Liu Mubai gritted his teeth tightly. A hint of cruelness appeared at his mouth. At that time, I want to trample you fiercely in front of everybody’s face...in front of everybody, who had confidence in you. The most excellent youth in the Northern Spiritual Realm is me, Liu Mubai, and not a trash like you!

Chapter 77 – Harsh Training

Northern Spiritual Academy, Behind the Mountains.

Over at this location, there was a lush forest as well as a huge waterfall. The waterfall hanged down from the mountain like a silver water python as sounds of rumbling bombarded down. A mist rose up from it and emitted outwards.

Teacher Mo had his hands behind his back as he stood in the empty space below the waterfall. In front of him, Mu Chen, Tang Qian'Er, Mo Ling, Chen Fan and Huo Yun were all there.

"From today onwards, I will give each of you a specialized training. Aside from Mu Chen, the rest of you must officially advance to the Spiritual Rotation Stage within the month. Otherwise, you will be disqualified and lose the rights to fight for the Five Great Academies' entries." Teacher Mo's gaze swept across the few people as he spoke faintly.

Hearing these words, Tang Qian'Er, Chen Fan and the others' expressions became serious. They trained at the Northern Spiritual Academy because of the Five Great Academies' entries. If they were to lose the qualifications, it would be a hard blow for them to resist.

"The four of you are currently at the pinnacle of Spiritual Movement Stage Late Phase. Chen Fan and Huo Yun have even begun to attempt to condense a Spiritual Wheel. However, all of you are still a step away. Therefore, all of you will require using some external pressure in order to condense the Spiritual Energy into a wheel."

"External pressure?" Chen Fan and the others exchanged gazes.

"Do you see this waterfall?" Teacher Mo smiled and pointed at the waterfall causing a rumbling sound behind him. Numerous currents flowed down and crashed into the rocks below with a

massive energy. It splashed and caused the sky to be filled with mist.

“Starting from today, the four of you will sit beneath the waterfall and train. You will use all your Spiritual Energy to resist the impact of the waterfall. The external pressure will gradually seep into your body and gradually force the Spiritual Energy within your aurasea to condense into a wheel.”

“Ah?”

Chen Fan and the others were astonished. Sitting and training underneath a waterfall? Wouldn’t they become dizzy just after resisting this terrifying impact for a minute?

“There are no shortcuts for training. If you want to advance to the Spiritual Rotation Stage within a month, you must take ruthless methods. If you can’t even do this, then there’s no need for you to compete for the entries!” Teacher Mo said in a deep voice.

“Yes!”

The four of them hurriedly replied.

“If you do not have enough Spiritual Energy within your body, you can exit temporarily to recover your Spiritual Energy. Afterwards, you’ll head back in!” Teacher Mo swept his sharp eyes across them as he spoke.

“Yes!”

“You can begin now.” Teacher Mo waved his hand and said.

Tang Qian’Er and the others exchanged gazes. Then, they gritted their teeth as Spiritual Energy surged out from their bodies. Afterwards, their body moved and passed by the wide river before reaching the bottom of the waterfall.

Bang Bang Bang!

However, just when they reached the bottom of the waterfall,

they did not even manage to sit cross-legged and were directly blown into the lake by the powerful impact. Everyone of them became a drowning chicken.

The four of them climbed out from the lake as their Spiritual Energy poured out constantly and they forcibly resisted the impact from the water current as they sat down. Then, they gritted their teeth and endured the pain from the waterfall's impact. They stubbornly resisted it and circulated their Spiritual Energy.

Mu Chen stared at the four individuals sitting cross-legged underneath the water fall and secretly smacked his lips. This method of training was quite serious; it was indeed a demonic training.

"Mu Chen."

Teacher Mo's gaze fixated on Mu Chen. This made the latter's heart jump and he felt a bad feeling.

"Did you read the two Spiritual Arts?" Teacher Mo asked faintly.

Mu Chen nodded his head.

"The training ground for you is over there." Teacher Mo pointed at a place down the river. Mu Chen turned his gaze over there and was suddenly numb. He could see that it was a location where the waterfall would fall down without hitting any obstacles. If you have to say it, the place where Tang Qian'Er and the others were training had a few rocks above to ease the impact. As for him, it was completely vast and empty. There was nothing blocking it.

And most importantly, there seemed to be only wooden logs with the size of his feet standing tall and upright underneath the waterfall.

"If you want to successful learn the Shadowspirit Step, it is very simple. You only have to shuffle back and forth through those wooden logs without getting wet at all." Teacher Mo said.

"What?"

Mu Chen was completely stunned. He had to shuffle back and forth, yet he could not get wet. How was that possible?

“These waterfalls will not be maintained continuously. There will be a momentary gap. If you want to fulfill this condition, your speed must be able to keep up with the momentary gap of the water current.”

Mu Chen let out a bitter smile. This difficulty wasn’t small. However, it was indeed an excellent method of training his movement.

“Moreover, the Spirit King Finger is indeed fierce and sharp. However, with the extent of training you have had with your fingers, it is still impossible for you to train in the Spirit King Finger. Therefore, your fingers must accept this training. I will let some wooden logs fall down from time to time from the waterfall. And what you have to do is to use your fingers to pierce through these wooden logs that would flash by instantly.” Teacher Mo slowly spoke.

Mu Chen felt his head becoming numb again. The wooden logs would fall down rapidly through the water current. Just how powerful would it be? Moreover, based on their speed, he would miss it if he was slightly distracted. If he wanted to pierce through it, he must take action the moment when the wooden logs passed by. This not only requires a perfect control of your attacking speed, it is also a extremely brutal training towards his fingers.

“What is it? Are you afraid?” Teacher Mo said faintly.

“Although it is a bit troublesome, it’s not enough to make me feel afraid.” Mu Chen took a deep breath. His handsome face gradually became calm and eagerness emerged within his black eyes.

“Ok.”

Seeing this, Teacher Mo also nodded his head in satisfaction: “Then, let’s begin.”

Mu Chen also nodded. He did not plan on being indecisive and immediately moved. He directly passed by the surface of the water and charged directly into the fierce waterfall currents like a swallow. Then, he landed on top of a narrow wooden log.

Boooom!

The powerful water current charged down fiercely. Mu Chen toes hurriedly touched the wooden log and charged to the next wooden log in front of him.

Bang!

But just when he was about to charge out, a powerful water current rushed down and instantly threw him into the lake below. He seemed to have underestimated the speed of the water current.

Mu Chen spat out the lake's water in his mouth and his hands slapped the water. Then, his body jumped onto a wooden log again. His face had already become completely serious and Spiritual Energy gushed out of his body in order to defend against the water current's impact.

In the beginning, it was apparent that he had to use all his Spiritual Energy to protect his body. Then, he would gradually get accustomed to it.

Mu Chen focused all his senses before rushing out again and passed straight through a water current. Then, he landed on another wooden log. However, just when he was about to leap forward again, he heard a strange sound coming from the water current and his eyes stared up. He noticed a black shadow fiercely charging down from the water current.

It was a wooden log mixed up in the water current.

Two fingers from Mu Chen's hand were straightened out and in the next instant, it fiercely thrust out.

The two fingers were like spears as they stirred the layers of water vapor. Then, it directly stabbed ruthlessly as the black

shadow passed by.

Bang!

A muffled sound rang out. The wooden logs only shuddered and showed no signs of being thrusted through. Then, it flowed down the water current into the lake below.

Seeing that his strike was completely useless, Mu Chen grinned. An intense pain came from his fingertips. In addition to the speed of it flowing down, the wooden log was soaked with the lake's water. It was harder than fine iron. Moreover, he could not use Spiritual Energy. This sort of collision made it feel that the bones of his fingertips had shattered.

Boom!

Due to this slight distraction, the waterfall poured down rapidly and directly blew Mu Chen into the lake.

"Damn it!"

Mu Chen stuck his head out from within the lake and cursed fiercely. He endured the pain from his fingertips and stood on once again. He pushed his speed to the extreme and charged straight out.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Underneath the waterfall, a figure was constantly blown out and was mercilessly pushed into the lake. This powerful force was enough to make Mu Chen dizzy. However, he stubbornly endured the pain throughout his entire body and gritted his teeth. His speed was increasing endlessly.

Although he would sometimes be able to dodge the water current's impact once, the wooden log flowing down the water current still tormented his fingers.

Near the waterfall, Tang Qian'Er and the others, who were sitting cross-legged, heard the commotion and quietly opened their

eyes. Upon looking at the commotion, they immediately shivered. Although they have not personally experienced it, they could tell that Mu Chen was facing something more vicious than them just by looking at it.

Beside the lake, Teacher Mo was standing with his hands held behind his back. He looked calmly at the awkward figure beneath waterfall. If he wants to succeed, he must first pay a price.

Throughout the entire afternoon, the figure would tirelessly shuffle back and forth the waterfall. During this period, even Tang Qian'Er and the others took two breaks. However, Mu Chen did not have the slightest plans of stopping this demonic training.

When the sunset emerged in the sky, Tang Qian'Er and the others would drag their exhausted bodies onto the shore. Every single one of them were tired and had a pale expression. They did not care and slumped down onto the ground while panting heavily.

Seeing this, Teacher Mo said: "Let's end today's training."

Tang Qian'Er and the others had just become relieved, yet they immediately turned gloomy the moment the next phrase came out.

"We'll continue it tomorrow."

Tang Qian'Er and the others slumped down on the ground powerlessly and rested for a while. However, they could still hear a plopping sound coming from nearby. Then, they lifted their heads and noticed a slim figure moving like a machine. It seems that he did not hear Teacher Mo's words and continued to climb up and get washed away.

Although they could feel that the figure was already somewhat sluggish due to the exhaustion, a determined will supported his thin body so that he did not fall down.

"Teacher Mo...He's reaching his limit soon!" Tang Qian'Er bit her lips and could not help but look away towards Teacher Mo.

Mo Fei shook his head slowly and said gently: “This is his own decision. He is stronger than you not just because of his talent, Mu Feng…really has a good son.”

Chen Fan and the others had a complicated expression as they watched the tired figure beneath the waterfall. A rare sense of admiration emerged within their hearts. If Mu Chen’s talent was higher than theirs, they could say that it was because the heavens have given it to him. However, they must admit that Mu Chen’s willpower…

This person…is really insane.

Chapter 78 – Shape-Condensation

Time was like sand in an hourglass and in the blink of an eye, half a month passed.

During this half a month, Mu Chen had engaged in a high-intensity training underneath the waterfall every day. He did not know how many times he was fiercely smashed down by the impact of the waterfall into the lake. The logs that fell down from the waterfall made Mu Chen's fingers become swollen many times. If it wasn't because his Spiritual Energy would endlessly circulate and nurture his body and bones within his finger, Mu Chen would not have been able to endure it.

In the first five days of this half a month, Mu Chen was almost always brought back by Teacher Mo in a half-unconscious state. The boy's gentleness would make others feel quite comfortable. However, once he decided to do something, the persistence that he showed even moved Teacher Mo.

Luckily, Mu Chen began to display his talents out after one week of adaptation period. Although he would still be injured, it was already much better compared to the half-unconscious state he was in during the first week.

Moreover, Mu Chen was adapting to it even more as the days passed. Sometimes, he would be able to follow the momentary gap of the waterfall's current.

After many injuries and coupled with them being nurtured by Spiritual Energy, his fingers had finally been trained to the point where its lethal power had increased. He would occasionally pierce through the wooden logs that passed by if he managed to grasp onto the opportunity.

The harsh training had finally begun to show its results.

Naturally, Mu Chen wasn't the only one who improved during

this period of time. Tang Qian'Er and the others had also improved after training under the pressure below the waterfall. Amongst them, the ones who improved the most were Chen Fan and Huo Yun.

After all, the two of them had long attempted to condense their Spiritual Wheel. Right now, they only need to cross through a small step in order to officially advance to the Spiritual Rotation Stage. Thus, they were surprised to discover that the Spiritual Energy within their aurasea had completely condensed into a Spiritual Wheel on the 13th day of the training. The Spiritual Energy that surged out had split apart the massive water current flowing down.

However, Teacher Mo made them continue their training underneath the waterfall after they had successfully advanced to the Spiritual Rotation Stage. It was to allow them to stabilize their level as soon as possible and to avoid their Spiritual Energy to show signs of being unsubstantial.

Furthermore, Tang Qian'Er and Mo Ling were also stimulated when they were aware that Chen Fan and Huo Yun had succeeded in their advancement to the Spiritual Rotation Stage. The amount of time they rested daily had been greatly reduced and they gritted their teeth to bear the impact of the water current. They circulated the Spiritual Energy within their bodies and hoped that they would soon reach the Spiritual Rotation Stage.

Under the scorching sun in the horizon, the five figures were facing waves of pressure underneath the freezing waterfall and allowed time to slowly pass by.

...

Bang.

The waterfall descended down from the mountain stream and landed in the lake below. Water vapour splashed and filled the sky.

At the edge of the lake, Teacher Mo held his hands behind his back as he looked at Tang Qian'Er and the others sitting cross-legged below the waterfall. He felt the increasingly dense Spiritual Energy fluctuation and nodded his head slightly. Then, he turned his head over to another direction.

It was evident that the waterfall over there was much more rapid. The massive water current would rumble as it flowed down. Sounds of rumbling reverberated itself among the mountain.

Underneath the waterfall were numerous wooden logs. Mu Chen's body was swiftly jumping across the wooden logs like a nimble monkey. His speed was extraordinary and sometimes, you could only see a shadow flashing by.

"It's not enough!"

However, Mu Chen was not satisfied with his own speed. Instead, he frowned. The cold water vapour splashed onto his face and allowed his state of mind to calm down.

The dark black Spiritual Energy surged out of Mu Chen's body and wrapped around his feet. In that instant, a booming sound resounded and he seemed to vanish into thin air.

The water current that covered the sky suddenly descended down.

Mu Chen's eyes narrowed when he saw this and his body instantly moved. He was like lightning and shuffled through the water current within the waterfall. At this moment, he had pushed his speed to the very limits.

Swoosh!

A vague shadow emerged on a wooden log and the impact from the water current directly passed through it. It was actually an afterimage caused by his high-speed.

"Huh?"

Teacher Mo's eyes suddenly focused as he watched this scene from the lake. His mouth issued out a light "huh" sound.

At this moment, Mu Chen seemed to have been separated from the outside world. He could feel that his body suddenly became a lot lighter while the water current which was originally impossible to catch with his eyes had suddenly slowed down. He could even see the tiny gap between the curtains of water.

As long as he passed through those gaps, the waterfall would not be able to touch him!

Swish!

Mu Chen's figure rushed out like a blur and dark black Spiritual Energy continued to be instigated around his legs. A blurry figure emerged and its body seemed to pass through the gap inside the waterfall like a black line.

Swoosh!

Moreover, a black shadow seemed to have flowed down the rushing water as Mu Chen's body passed through the gap in the water current.

However, Mu Chen's eyes remained calm. He paused for a moment while sticking up two fingers. Then, his arm extended straight out and his fingers seemed to be like a spear. It pierced through the flow of water and accurately struck the center of the wooden log while it flowed down from the waterfall.

Bang!

A deep sound resounded out. Mu Chen's fingers forcefully pierced through the wooden log and caused splinters of wood to fly out. Then, it was washed away by the water current.

Joy instantly surged out of Mu Chen's heart. It was the most relaxing attack he had done during these twenty or so days. There wasn't the slightest hesitation and his power flowed out perfectly.

“Haha!”

An indescribable delight rang out within Mu Chen’s heart. Then, he could not help but laugh out loud. His body moved and turned into a black line as he shuffled through the waterfall.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

While shuffling through the waterfall, his attacks did not stop. The winds emitted from his fingers were like lightning and grasped the timing to attack perfectly. Numerous wooden logs were pierced through as they passed near his body.

At this moment, these sounds seemed to have formed a wonderful rhythmic melody

Beneath another waterfall, Tang Qian’Er and the others were shocked by this rhythmic sound and turned their gazes over. Then, they were stunned when they noticed the shadow shuffling back and forth like a ghost beneath the waterfall.

“This…crazy guy.”

Chen Fan could not help but open his mouth wide. After he had advanced to the Spiritual Rotation Stage, he wasn’t willing to accept Mu Chen and attempted Mu Chen’s training. However, he was instantly washed away by a wooden log. Later on, he used his Spiritual Energy to wrap it around his body and attempted it once again. But in the end, he was still fiercely blown away by a wooden log flowing down the waterfall.

And right now, Mu Chen was actually treating those wooden logs within the waterfall like they were something ordinary. Moreover, he did not forget to pierce through all the wooden logs with his fingers as they passed by. Just what sort of terrifying speed and finger strength would it require to do this?

Within the entire Northern Spiritual Academy, the West Branch’s Liu Mubai might be the only one who could fight against this crazy individual.

As Tang Qian'Er and the others watched Mu Chen as if he was a monster, Mu Chen finally stopped and stood steadily on a wooden log after ten minutes.

He balanced himself, but did not plan on backing out yet. Instead, he sat down cross-legged as Tang Qian'Er and the others gazed at him, puzzled. Dark black Spiritual Energy surged out from within his body and blocked the impact from the waterfall.

Seeing Mu Chen's strange action, Tang Qian'Er and the others were slightly startled. Then, they could feel a special Spiritual Energy fluctuation emitting out from within Mu Chen's body.

"This is..."

Teacher Mo's eyebrows lifted up slightly: "He made a breakthrough in his Gong Fa Spiritual Art?"

Teacher Mo's prediction was correct. Previously, Mu Chen could feel an indescribable relaxing feeling within his body and pushed his speed to the very limits. However, when he did that, he discovered that the Spiritual Energy within his body suddenly circulated and the route it took was the circulation route for the Great Pagoda Art.

The dark black Spiritual Energy surged out and finally entered his aurasea. In that instant, Mu Chen's mind had followed and entered it as well. Then, he was surprised to see the dark black Spiritual Energy rising up on top of the Spiritual Wheel in his aurasea. It slowly condensed and formed a palm-sized illusionary light tower.

The light tower was extremely unreal and seemed like it would vanish if some wind blew. If you looked at it carefully, the tower seemed to have nine floors. However, aside from the foundation of the tower which seemed to look real, the rest of it was like an illusion.

But when this illusionary light tower was formed, Mu Chen could

feel the mysterious lights within his body lighting up once again. These lights were spread around the depths of his body. However, when he looked, he discovered that when he connected the lights together, they would form a massive light tower within Mu Chen's body.

The moment that this light tower appeared, the dark black Spiritual Energy on the surface of Mu Chen's body in the outside world seemed to have formed a vague black light tower.

This tower of light protected his entire body.

Rumble.

The boundless waterfall descended down and smashed onto the black light tower, yet the light tower was motionless.

However, the black light tower only lasted for an instant before swiftly fading away. Furthermore, Mu Chen's tightly closed eyes slowly opened when the light tower faded away. A hint of delight could not be concealed within the depths of his eyes.

At this moment, the Great Pagoda Art which he trained in had suddenly entered the Shape-Condensation Level!

Chapter 79 – Results

Within the flowing waterfall, Mu Chen opened his eyes. His face was completely filled with delight. He never expected that the Great Pagoda Art would actually make a breakthrough at this moment.

This had gone beyond his expectations.

The Great Pagoda Art had a total of 3 levels: Foundation, Shape-Condensation and Towerform.

The first level was relatively easy to reach. However, Mu Chen did not make much progress after that. Although he felt that he was becoming increasingly proficient in the Great Pagoda Art, the feeling of breakthrough did not appear until today.

Within his aurasea, the illusionary light tower above his Spiritual Energy light wheel had already vanished. However, Mu Chen could clearly feel that the Spiritual Energy flowing within his body had become increasingly pure as it condensed.

Moreover, he could vaguely feel the sealed Spiritual Pulse within his body after the Great Pagoda Art had reached the Shape-Condensation level. It was not like before when he could not perceive it at all.

It was evident that the Spiritual Pulse that his mother had sealed was gradually being perceived by him as he was deepening his understanding about the Great Pagoda Art.

Mu Chen lowered his head and looked at his hand. He gently clenched it and an inexplicit expression emerged on his face. It was the first time that he could clearly feel the hidden Spiritual Pulse within his body.

He could not predict what level the Spiritual Pulse was, but he could vaguely feel a peculiar feeling. It was as if it was awakening from hibernating and begun to reveal itself from within the clouds.

He was looking forward to the moment when his Great Pagoda Art reaches the Mastery Stage [1. Any martial arts (In the case of TGR, Spiritual Arts) usually can be split into different levels of mastery. In this case, the mastery stage usually means when it is either completely mastered or close to being completely mastered (Would depend on the story to determine which one)]. Just how powerful would the Spiritual Pulse be when that happens?

Mu Chen took a deep breath and spread out his hands, allowing the Spiritual Energy which was wrapped around his body to disappear. He allowed the freezing waterfall to bombard his body before himself pushing off with his toes. His body turned into a black shadow and rushed out. In the end, he landed beside the lake,

At this moment, Tang Qian'Er and the others had already stopped training and were resting on the shore. They had a strange expression when they noticed Mu Chen rushing over to their side. They had completely witnessed the commotion caused by Mu Chen earlier.

"You seem to have become even more powerful?" Chen Fan looked at Mu Chen. The latter's aura remained at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Movement. However, they felt that he was completely different from before. Even if he was considered to be at the same cultivation level, he felt some danger when he faced Mu Chen.

Mu Chen smiled. Currently, he had truly succeeded in his training for the Shadowspirit Step and Spirit King Finger. Although he still required actual combat to hone it, his combat ability had already improved greatly. Moreover, his Great Pagoda Art had made a breakthrough earlier and his Spiritual Energy was much more powerful compared to Chen Fan and the others. It was to the point where he was not inferior to a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase in terms of density and endurance of Spiritual Energy.

"It seems that this training style has already reached your desired

effects.” Teacher Mo slowly walked over and glanced at Mu Chen as he smiled.

Mu Chen nodded. Right now, he could truly follow the speed of the waterfall’s current. Furthermore, he could even pierce through the wooden logs which flowed down without missing a single one. Therefore, he had already succeeded in reaching the results he had initially desired.

“However, training is still just training. Right now, you need actual combat to hone the Spiritual Arts that you’ve trained.”

Teacher Mo smiled and turned to Chen Fan and Huo Yun: “The two of you should join forces and see if you can defeat him.”

“Join forces?”

Chen Fan and Huo Yun frowned. However, they stared eagerly at Mu Chen. During this period of time, Mu Chen had severely shocked them. If they were able to beat Mu Chen up then they would be able to balance their emotions.

They understood that they would not be Mu Chen’s opponent if they were fighting individually. However, if they joined forces, they still had some confidence about winning. After all, they were both at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase like Mu Chen. It was possible to make up for the gap by relying on numbers.

“Mu Chen, will you let us feel happy?” Chen Fan grinned as he spoke.

“You’re actually still acting this happy when it’s two against one, can’t you be more promising?” Tang Qian’Er batted her eye at Chen Fan and sighed.

On the other hand, Mu Chen smiled. He glanced at Teacher Mo before nodding his head and said: “Since it’s like this, I’ll have to trouble the two of you to help me hone my skills for a while.”

Seeing Mu Chen accept, Chen Fan and Huo Yun suddenly laughed. They twisted their neck and said: “That’s great. However,

I will tell you in advance, you shouldn't treat us like students, who have never fought against humans before. We have once participated in an Adventurer's Team, so we fought against others in a bloody battle before."

"Thank you for the reminder."

Mu Chen slowly extended his hands and said: "Please guide me."

Chen Fan and Huo Yun's faces became slightly serious when they saw this. Although they were saying this, they were still quite afraid of Mu Chen. After all, Mu Chen had trained under their gazes during the past twenty days. They knew somewhat how powerful the latter was.

"Let's go!"

The two of them were quite familiar with each other. They exchanged gazes and rushed out towards Mu Chen at the same time without deliberately reminding the other one. Moreover, they split apart to the sides as they rushed over.

Dense Spiritual Energy surged out from Chen Fan and Huo Yun's body. Their speed instantly increased and their tightly clenched fists emerged on the left and right side of Mu Chen. A vicious wind came from their fists and headed towards Mu Chen's head ruthlessly.

When she saw the two of them being so merciless against Mu Chen, Tang Qian'Er could not help but call out softly.

However, Mu Chen remained quite calm against this synchronized attack. Before the winds from their fist could reach him, he had already taken half a step back.

The fierce winds brushed past his face and lifted up Mu Chen's hair. It revealed a pair of black eyes that were calm like a serene lake.

"Tempest Massacre Fist!"

Since Mu Chen had easily avoided their offense, Chen Fan and Huo Yun pressed onwards tightly. Their fists blasted out and a tempest seemed to have emerged. A fierce fist wind was enveloped by dense Spiritual Energy and directly charged over at Mu Chen.

As this storm-like attack rushed over, Spiritual Energy gushed out from Mu Chen's feet. His body moved and with a swishing sound, he seemed to have become a ghostly shadow and directly passed through the duo's continuous offensive.

The duo's fist winds did not manage to touch Mu Chen's body at all!

"What speed!"

Chen Fan and Huo Yun narrowed their eyes. They did not manage to capture how Mu Chen passed through their offensive.

"On the left!"

Light flashed through the corner of their eyes and they turned around to fire off a kick. The kick was like a spear and tore apart the air as it fiercely bombarded the figure over there.

However, when their kicks reached the figure, it went straight through. There wasn't the slightest feeling of them hitting Mu Chen.

"It's an afterimage!"

A touch of amazement finally flashed through Chen Fan and Huo Yun's eyes. How could Mu Chen's speed be this swift and bizarre?

"Over here!"

Laughter suddenly rang out from their right side. Chen Fan and Huo Yun were surprised and hurriedly turned their body. However, they witnessed Mu Chen with a total of four fingers standing up on both hands. A vague golden light was flashing on the fingertips while an extremely fierce fluctuation emitted out.

Swish!

Mu Chen's arm trembled. The finger seemed to pierce through the air like lightning as it charged straight towards Chen Fan and Huo Yun's throat.

Boom!

A dense Spiritual Energy rushed out unreservedly from Chen Fan and Huo Yun. It formed a thick Spiritual Energy light shield in front of them. It was apparent that they had noticed how powerful Mu Chen's attack was.

But in face of their defense, Mu Chen did not show any signs of stopping. At his fingertips, a golden light seemed to surge out from his bones. It was filled with an extremely fierce fluctuation.

Dong!

Mu Chen's fingers finally landed on Chen Fan and Huo Yun's Spiritual Energy light shield. They watched as the light shield became distorted. Then afterwards, the fingers pierce through the Spiritual Energy light shield under the duo's widened eyes.

Swish!

Mu Chen's glowing fingertips stopped half an inch in front of Chen Fan and Huo Yun's throat. Although it did not touch their bodies, a bloodstain still appeared on their throats. A slight pain exuded out.

Chen Fan and Huo Yun did not dare to move at all. They stared at the golden fingertips in front of them and took a deep gulp. If they were in a fight for life and death, Mu Chen's fingers would have ripped through their throats.

"Thanks for the fight."

Mu Chen directed a smile at the duo. However, he felt some joy within his heart. The Shadowspirit step and the Spirit King Finger's power had exceeded his expectations. If he had to fight against two Spiritual Rotation Stage opponents earlier, it would not be this easy even if he won.

“It seems that we should not even think about getting that seeded entry.” Chen Fan helplessly pouted. Although they held back a little, it was evident that Mu Chen did not use his full strength as well.

“You wanted to take advantage of Mu Chen, yet in the end you were the ones that were taught a lesson, right?” Tang Qian’Er suddenly smiled when she was aware of Mu Chen’s victory.

“Qian’Er. We’re at least considered your most faithful suitors. You shouldn’t give us such a heavy blow, right?” Chen Fan and Huo Yun said while being depressed.

“Thanks, but I would be happier if you two stopped pursuing after me.” Tang Qian’Er smiled sweetly and had a pure and beautiful smile. However, she still gave the duo a relentless hit.

“Not bad.” On the side, Teacher Mo also nodded as he smiled: “However, your Shadowspirit Step is still a bit rusty. You’re unable to use it naturally and at ease. It seems that you will have to practice it for a while before it will integrate completely into your fights.”

“Since it’s impossible for them to give you a decent spar, I’ll personally fight against you for the remainder of the time.” Teacher Mo smiled as he stared at Mu Chen, who was completely stunned. “Of course, I will suppress my strength to the level of Spiritual Rotation Stage. No matter what methods you use, you will have perfectly completed the one month training if you are able to defeat me. How’s that?”

Mu Chen grinned and nodded heavily. Not even the slightest hint of fear emerged in his eyes, instead, fighting spirit burned within his eyes. It was more than he could wish for to have a Spirit Stage powerhouse help him with his training!

…

And while Mu Chen began to fight against Teacher Mo, suddenly

a powerful Spiritual Energy exploded out in the forbidden lands behind the mountains within Liu Territory's Liu Estate. The Spiritual Energy formed a fierce wind and caused the forest to shake.

After a while, the forest gradually stopped shaking. A slender figure slowly walked out from a cave in the forbidden lands. That appearance, it was Liu Mubai.

At this moment, he grasped his hands tightly and gently felt the powerful strength within his body. The smile on his face gradually became more savage.

Mu Chen, I'm afraid that your lucky days are about to end.

Chapter 80 – Spirit Stage as a Sparring Partner

After Mu Chen had defeated Chen Fan and Huo Yun, his opponent had suddenly become Teacher Mo. This change of events finally made Mu Chen suffer.

Although Teacher Mo suppressed his strength to the Spiritual Rotation Stage, it was not the Initial Phase and rather the Spiritual Rotation Stage Middle Phase. Based on what Teacher Mo had said, you require great pressure if you want to temper yourself. If they were equally matched, the effects weren't as great. Initially, Mu Chen had no objections to these words. However, he felt that he was tricked by Teacher Mo after they began to fight. Although Teacher Mo suppressed his strength to the Spiritual Rotation Stage Middle Phase, his keen vision, experience, the dexterity of his forged body and his variety of offensive and defensive techniques were all at the Spirit Stage level. He could suppress his Spiritual Energy, but he could not suppress these things...

Therefore, Mu Chen was basically fighting against an opponent, who possesses Spiritual Rotation Stage Middle Phase strength and has the experience of a Spirit Stage.

The result of the battle was obvious. Mu Chen was completely slaughtered.

During the first day of combat, Mu Chen had fought against Teacher Mo 13 times. He basically did not manage to do any significant damage to the latter and lost terribly every single time. On the side, Tang Qian'Er and the others felt that it was an extremely painful sight to watch and turned their gazes away.

The situation on the second day was slightly better. However, Mu Chen still remained in a disadvantaged position. If he was slightly careless, Teacher Mo would instantly take advantage of the flaw and defeat him in one move.

Although Mu Chen's situation was quite miserable, he wasn't considered to be the same as any ordinary boy. In the Spiritual Road, he had experienced many bloody fights and had a certain excellent talent. He was able to quickly absorb the reason of his failure and improve by making changes bit by bit...

Therefore, after being completely slaughtered by Teacher Mo for two days, he was finally able to gradually catch up to the pace. Although he was still in a disadvantaged position, he was, at the very least, able to counterattack. The counterattacks weren't that effective, but it was still considered to be an extremely decent change.

Within the mountains, under the waterfall.

Dense Spiritual Energy erupted out and caused the gravel on the ground nearby to shatter to powder. A thin boy's figure flew out like the wind and like a blurry shadow, he instantly appeared in front of a slender figure. His hand was clenched tightly as Spiritual Energy surged out. It brought out vicious winds as it ruthlessly headed at the back of the slender figure's head.

Bang!

But before the fist managed to smash on its target, the slender figure seemed to have eyes behind his back and did not show signs of turning his body. A fist passed by his ears and bombarded behind him. It directly collided with the fist.

A fierce breeze emitted out and the slender figure's body trembled slightly. His fist instantly turned into a palm as a dense Spiritual Energy surged out from the center of it.

Dong!

The thin figure was suddenly hit by a heavy blow and his body flew backwards. Then, the figure made a spin in mid-air before staggering as he landed on the ground.

"He lost again."

Not too far away, Chen Fan and the others watched this scene and instantly grinned. During this past week, they have seen this scene numerous times. However, Mu Chen was currently doing a lot better than the previous week. At that time, Mu Chen would have been defeated miserably when Teacher Mo attacked. But as of now, he had already managed to initiate an attack, though those attacks were easily blocked by Teacher Mo.

“Mu Chen is already quite amazing like this. If it was us, we probably wouldn’t even have the courage to fight against Teacher Mo.” Tang Qian’Er frowned and said when she noticed Chen Fan and the others snickering.

“It’s true that we wouldn’t dare to fight against Teacher Mo. But that’s because we aren’t that stupid.” Chen Fan laughed. Unless he was stupid, why would he fight against a Spirit Stage? Even if the Spirit Stage powerhouse was to suppress his Spiritual Energy to the level of Spiritual Rotation Stage, isn’t it still the same thing?

Tang Qian’Er batted an eye at him sourly.

“Today is the final day of training. We will be fighting for the entries tomorrow...” Mo Ling was a little regretful as he said: “It seems that Brother Mu won’t be able to reach his target.”

“That’s good. That guy is quite proud and arrogant. Even I would have to admire his performance during this period of time. However, how is it possible for him to defeat Teacher Mo?” Huo Yun patted Mo Ling’s shoulders and spoke.

Mo Ling scratched his head. It was true. Teacher Mo was pretty much an unattainable existence in their eyes. With their current strength, it was basically impossible for them to defeat Teacher Mo. It was impossible even if he had suppressed his strength!

“That guy still refused to give up.”

Chen Fan suddenly said. He watched as Mu Chen, who was blown away by Teacher Mo, straightened himself. Within Mu Chen’s

eyes, there will still a fiery fighting spirit that refused to be extinguished.

“That guy…” Chen Fan smacked his lips and immediately gave a wry smile as he scratched his head: “He is quite crazy. However, he is definitely much stronger than us. At the very least, I would not be able to persist when I clearly knew I was going to be slaughtered.”

Tang Qian’Er held her hands tightly. Although her eyes were filled with worry, she knew Mu Chen’s personality quite well. The latter would never give up this easily.

“Let’s do this one final time. You have to fight for the entries tomorrow, so you should have a good rest tonight.” Seeing Mu Chen look over here once again, Teacher Mo nodded his head and spoke faintly.

Mu Chen did not say anything. He only took a deep breath and his eyes instantly became sharp. Dark black Spiritual Energy surged out from his feet and his body turned into a black line as he headed directly at Teacher Mo.

Teacher Mo did not move his body at all and only stomped with his feet. Some gravel on the ground flew up into the sky as he waved his sleeves. His Spiritual Energy surrounded the gravel and it covered the sky as it shot off towards Mu Chen like a volley of arrows.

Swoosh!

Mu Chen’s speed suddenly accelerated and an afterimage emerged behind him. His body actually passed through the sky filled with gravel.

Boom!

Teacher Mo’s body also rushed out at this moment. He instantly collided against Mu Chen. His Spiritual Energy surrounded his body, fist, fingers, elbow and legs. Every single part instantly

turned into a lethal and terrifying weapon as it shot off fiercely at the vital areas of Mu Chen.

Swish!

Mu Chen pushed the Shadowspirit Step to the limits and a blurry shadow went around Teacher Mo. He avoided every single attack that contained a powerful force.

“It’s still not fast enough!”

Mu Chen could feel Teacher Mo’s attacks barely hitting him. The powerful winds caused by the attacks made his skin sting. Moreover, it was obvious that the latter’s offensive was speeding up. Sooner or later, he would be showered by it.

He must let his speed become even faster!

Mu Chen gritted his teeth. At this moment, he gathered all his focus and pushed his Spiritual Energy to the extreme. The Spiritual Energy within his meridians roared and brought dense waves of energy.

It was still not fast enough!

His attacks weren’t strong enough!

An unyielding roar echoed within Mu Chen’s heart. His eyes seemed to have been cut apart from the world again. He did not make any strange sound and only watched Teacher Mo’s fierce offensive in front of him.

Bring out all my power!

Buzz!

As this roar echoed within Mu Chen’s heart, a buzzing sound suddenly rang out from within Mu Chen’s aurasea. He could see that his Spiritual Energy had actually gathered together and formed a vague light tower above the Spiritual Wheel in his aurasea.

Buzzzz!

The moment that the vague light tower emerged, lights seemed to have been summoned and lit up within the depths of Mu Chen's body.

Boom!

The Spiritual Energy within Mu Chen's body suddenly rose sharply and flooded out. An indescribable feeling rumbled through his limbs and bones!

Swish!

At this very moment, Mu Chen's speed suddenly increased. It even turned into numerous afterimages and enshrouded Teacher Mo. Afterwards, the latter was somewhat surprised to discover that all his attacks were dodged by Mu Chen.

"How could his speed suddenly increase this much?!" A hint of suspicious arose within Teacher Mo's heart.

"Mu Chen's speed became faster! How is that possible?!"

Chen Fan and the others, who were watching this scene, also exclaimed out loud. They were unable to tell which afterimage was Mu Chen's true body.

Teacher Mo stopped his attacks. He stared at the afterimages that surrounded his body as the winds surged out and enveloped him. He frowned for a moment. Mu Chen, who had been firmly locked on by him, had sudden escaped his sights.

"It's my turn to attack!"

A cry suddenly resounded through the sky. Teacher Mo narrowed his eyes and suddenly turned around. He noticed that Mu Chen had two fingers that were straighten out and a dazzling golden light was flashing at the fingertips. This light actually emitted out from the bones and it made it seem that the fingers were made of gold.

Swish!

The golden fingers were like a divine golden spear as it tore through the sky. An extremely fierce power, along with an abnormally dense Spiritual Energy, stabbed at Teacher Mo's chest at lightning speed.

There was no hesitation within that stab. It was sharp and vicious!

"So fast!"

Teacher Mo was also surprised. The dazzling golden light had almost obscured his vision. Before he could respond, the golden fingers had already been thrusted over.

Boom!

A dense and matchless Spiritual Energy instantly rushed out from Teacher Mo's body. At the same time, cracks appeared on the ground and a huge boulder nearby even instantly shattered.

Mu Chen's finger also landed on Teacher Mo's body at this moment. However, before it could penetrate through, it was bounced back by the powerful Spiritual Energy. His body left a dozen or so meters trail on the ground before it finally stopped.

Tang Qian'Er and the others were flabbergasted as they witnessed this scene. Then, Tang Qian'Er could not help but suddenly shout out: "Teacher Mo, you cheated!"

In the moment earlier, the Spiritual Energy that erupted out from Teacher Mo's body had far surpassed the limits of a Spiritual Rotation Stage.

Hearing Tang Qian'Er's shout, Teacher Mo could not help but feel slightly embarrassed. It was true that he had brought out his Spirit Stage's Spiritual Energy. However, it was not intentional. Rather, it was a reflex due to his body sensing danger.

Mu Chen climbed up awkwardly from the ground and stared at his body covered with mud. However, he did not reveal any signs of being dispirited. Instead, the eyes that looked over at Teacher

Mo were filled with excitement.

“This boy…”

Teacher Mo could not help but shake his head when he stared at Mu Chen’s excited expression. He immediately chuckled and raised his thumb towards Mu Chen: “Amazing.”

“I won!” Mu Chen sat down on the ground and felt exhausted, yet he could not endure laughing out loud.

“Holy sh*t… No way, right?”

Chen Fan, Huo Yun and Mo Ling were all staring dumbfounded at Mu Chen, who was laughing maniacally. Is this crazy bastard still human?

Chapter 81 – Entry Competition

Within this vast region of the Northern Spiritual Realm, it was hard for the variety of large and small commonplace events to attract the interest of others. However, there was one event that was considered to be a rare and grand event within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

That was the Northern Spiritual Academy's Entry Competition. During this competition, they would decide the home for the entry into the "Five Great Academies".

Within the eyes of all the forces in the Northern Spiritual Realm, the Five Great Academies were basically an incomprehensible and massive existence. They could not imagine what sort of background and terrifying power it possesses. The only thing that they did know was that they couldn't even be considered as ants in the eyes of the Five Great Academies.

This is why almost everybody would attempt to let their child enter this massive existence. They were clear that their achievements would far surpass any ordinary person if they managed to enter the Five Great Academies.

Although the Northern Spiritual Realm was considered a vast region, it was still a relatively remote place within the endless Great Thousand World. If they truly want to experience the brilliance of the Great Thousand World, they must first past through the path of the Five Great Academies.

Thus, the Northern Spiritual City would become the most dazzling and bustling location whenever the Northern Spiritual Academy's "Entry Competition" was hosted. Even the Nine Territory's Territory Lords would personally come over. This was because it was an extremely important matter to them.

As long as their children are able to stand out and obtain an entry within the competition, their reputation would improve.

Moreover, they would enjoy the envious gazes of other people.

This comfortable feeling was not something that could be achieved through the daily expansion of their territory.

…

Today, the Northern Spiritual City was undoubtedly in a state of being inflated. The massive city was crowded and many noisy sounds gathered. The sounds soared through the clouds and could be heard within a radius of a hundred miles.

The venue for the Entry Competition was set in the Northern Spiritual City's northwest area's Northern Spiritual Square. It was considered to be the most spacious location within the Northern Spiritual City and could accommodate a hundred thousand people.

However, the spacious venue has already long been occupied by the crowd. Looking at it, the sea of humans filled the venue to the limits. Even the tall buildings near the square were filled with figures.

Inside the square, all the students in the Northern Spiritual Academy were gathered there and were all excited. Wasn't the reason why they came to train in the Northern Spiritual Academy the wish of being qualified for this sort of competition one day? Although they weren't good enough to be in the competition right now, they could still take the opportunity to observe it. Moreover, they would be able to assess how powerful the students that were participating in it were.

In front of the Northern Spiritual Square, there were also a few rather prominent and special seats. Currently, the seats were all filled with people. Every single one of them had an extraordinarily imposing manner as well as dense Spiritual Energy. As they glanced around, their might was revealed. It was the Nine Territory Lords of the Northern Spiritual Realm.

"Haha, Brother Mu. You came really early. It's said that that

little guy, Mu Chen, is also participating in it this time, right? I haven't seen that little guy in a while, but I've heard from Qian'Er that he is very amazing?"

In front of the seats, sounds of laughter rang out. A few individuals glanced over and noticed a middle-aged man smiling. Everybody immediately recognized him. It was the Tang Territory's Territory Lord, Tang Shan.

Mu Feng smiled as he cupped his head towards Tang Shan and said: "How could that boy be powerful? He just likes showing off in front of girls."

Mu Feng had a pretty good relationship with Tang Shan. Although the two territories weren't allies, they would often cooperate with each other.

"That girl, Qian'Er, has only broken through to the Spiritual Rotation Stage a few days ago. I wonder if she will be able to pass this time." Tang Shan was a bit worried. Although Tang Qian'Er was quite gifted, the ones participating in this Entry Competition were all outstanding individuals among their peers. It was not easy to win.

"Ohoho, I've heard that there is a Seeded Entry this time. It's the first time that the Northern Spiritual Academy obtains it. It's impossible for Qian'Er to get it, but let's see if that little guy, Mu Chen, can obtain it." Tang Shan did not say much about this matter and his tone changed as he laughed.

Mu Feng smiled, but just when he was about to speak, a mocking voice rang out from nearby: "The Liu Territory have preordered this Seeded Entry. We did not plan to let the others obtain it."

Mu Feng turned around and glanced at the calm Liu Qingtian. He let out a faint laugh and said: "This isn't a queue for business. How could you talk about preordering it?"

"I've said it wrong. Your Mu Territory shouldn't even dream of

obtaining this Seeded Entry." Liu Qingtian took a fleeting glance at Mu Feng and said.

"You shouldn't say too much. Otherwise, wouldn't it be disgraceful for you when you can't retract back those words?" Mu Feng smiled and said.

"Then let's see who will be the one that would be disgraced." Liu Qingtian sneered. A cold chill emerged within his eyes. Just act all you want now. I'll see if you can laugh when Mubai beats your son half to death.

The other Territory Lords nearby did not participate when they noticed the confrontation between Mu Feng and Liu Qingtian. They knew that the Mu Territory and the Liu Territory were incompatible with each other. Although there were few of them who were accustomed to Liu Territory being so overbearing, the Liu Territory was still the strongest force within the Northern Spiritual Realm. Unless there is a need to do so, they did not want to offend them.

Mu Feng retracted his gaze away from Liu Qingtian's body. It was useless to say anything right now. Although he knew that Liu Mubai was quite amazing, how could his son be an ordinary individual within his generation?

Dong!

After the bustling sounds lasted for half an hour within the Northern Spiritual Square, a deep bell sound suddenly rang out and echoed throughout the entire city.

As the bell sounded, countless gazes fixated itself in the direction of the Northern Spiritual Square. At that location, four figures slowly appeared. The person in front was the Northern Spiritual Academy's Principal Xiao. Behind him, Teacher Mo and Teacher Xi were closely following him. Moreover, there was a rather unfamiliar old man amongst them. He seemed to have a lazy appearance and did not pay the slightest attention as he glanced at

the Nine Territory Lords.

“Ohoho, I would like to thank everybody for coming today. We are considered to be acquaintances, so I will not say any superfluous words to annoy you.” Principal Xiao cupped his fists in the direction of the Nine Territory Lords and smiled.

Seeing this, Mu Feng and the others hurriedly cupped their hands to return a salute. Although Principal Xiao kept a low profile within the Northern Spiritual Realm, no force would dare to underestimate him. Not to mention the peerless identity of the neutral Northern Spiritual Academy, there weren’t more than three individuals who could surpass his strength amongst the Nine Territory Lords.

“Of course, I’ll introduce the referee of the Northern Spiritual Academy’s Entry Competition this time. He has the final say over all the rules.” Principal Xiao cupped his hands towards the seemingly lazy old man nearby. He immediately smiled and said: “Everybody, this is Mister Hao from the Five Great Academies. He will be supervising the Entry Competition this time.”

“From the Five Great Academies?”

Mu Feng and the others were shocked when they heard this remark. They quickly stood up and cupped their hands towards this old man. Every single individual that came out from the Five Great Academies was an all-powerful individual. They were not to be underestimated.

The old man known as Mister Hao only directed a nod towards Mu Feng. This attitude was not considered to be polite, yet the Nine Territory Lords could only chuckle dryly. His background of the Five Great Academies was enough to overwhelm them.

“Let’s begin.” Mister Hao nodded at Principal Xiao and said.

Hearing this, Principal Xiao also smiled and glanced at the entire venue. Under his dense Spiritual Energy, his voice resounded in

everybody's ears.

"For the Entry Competition this time, there are a total of 12 individuals participating: 5 from the East Branch and 7 from the West Branch. There will be 5 ordinary entries and 1 seeded entry. The 12 individuals will split up into six matches and fight with each other. The winner will be able to obtain the qualifications of the ordinary entry. Of course, if anyone would like to obtain the seeded entry, they can challenge once again. The final winner will be able to obtain this seeded entry." Principal Xiao's gaze looked towards the students from the East and West Branches and he said: "Is there any problems?"

"No!"

"That's good. The students that are participating in the competition should come up onto the venue!"

Just as Principal Xiao's voice faded away, a commotion rang out from the East and West Branch. Under numerous envious gazes, a group of figures surged out and landed on the venue.

"Brother Mu, good luck. Go seize that seeded entry!" From the East Branch, Su Ling, Tan Qingshan and the others shouted out while being excited.

Mu Chen directed a smile at them as he waved.

"Seeded Entry? I'm afraid you don't have the right to get it." At the opposite side, Liu Mubai tilted his head slightly and stared coldly at Mu Chen as he gently spoke.

"Won't we know if I have the right to obtain it later on?" Mu Chen smiled and replied.

"You think you have the right to fight against Brother Liu?" Beside Liu Mubai, a boy sneered and spoke. He was the one who had a conflict with Mu Chen during the Northern Spiritual Field, Chen Tong. However, the current him seemed to have broken through to the Spiritual Rotation Stage after Teacher Xi's training.

This made his confidence soar and he did not have the fear that he initially had when facing Mu Chen.

Mu Chen only glanced at Chen Tong and ignored him. A person, who had just advanced to the Spiritual Rotation Stage, wasn't someone worthy of his attention.

And when Chen Tong noticed that Mu Chen had directly ignored him, he gritted his teeth in hatred. He thought that he must punish him if he meets him later on.

"For this Entry Competition, we will follow the old rules. We will decide the opponents through lots."

Principal Xiao waved his hand and the person holding the bamboo lots ran up. Mu Chen and the others extended their hands and each of them picked a bamboo lot from him.

When they noticed that they were drawing lots, the numerous gazes fixated over at that location. The fierce Entry Competition was about to begin.

Chapter 82 – Complete Victory

Mu Chen stared at the lot within his hands. A number [1] was written on the lot. Then, he lifted up the bamboo lot. The others, seeing this, also raised the bamboo lot that they just drew.

“How interesting…I was only thinking about it earlier.” Chen Tong smiled hypocritically as he stared at Mu Chen. Then, he arrogantly lifted up the bamboo lot within his hand. It was the same number as Mu Chen. Apparently, he was Mu Chen’s opponent.

Mu Chen stared at Chen Tong, who was arrogantly smiling, and shook his head helplessly.

“That idiot…” Chen Fan and the others grinned. They felt pitiful as they directed a smile towards Mu Chen. The two of them weren’t even opponents for Mu Chen right now. Moreover, Chen Tong was probably even weaker than them by a bit. They really didn’t know how foolish this person was. How could he still reveal this sort of smile at this moment?

“It’s over.”

Besides them, Mo Ling’s face turned pale and he smiled bitterly. He raised the bamboo lot within his hand and said, “My opponent is Liu Mubai.”

“Ah?”

Chen Fan, Tang Qian’Er and the others all looked sympathetically at Mo Ling. Amongst the 12 participants of the Entry Competition, there was no doubt that Mu Chen and Liu Mubai were the hardest to defeat. Since Mo Ling had to fight against Liu Mubai immediately, he was indeed quite unlucky.

“It’s fine. For this Entry Competition, the outcome is related to the entry. However, it doesn’t mean that you’re completely out of luck if you lose.” Mu Chen patted Mo Ling’s shoulders, yet his eyes

glanced at the platform towards Mister Hao, who was from the Five Great Academies. He said: “Your current strength has already reached the requirements for the Five Great Academies. Therefore, even if you lose, it’s possible for you to get an extra chance if you are able to prove how different you are from the others.”

“Really?” Mo Ling hesitated for a moment before quickly asking.

Mu Chen nodded his head and said: “Of course, but as for how you will impress him will depend on yourself.”

Mo Ling nodded his head gratefully. The entry was equally important to him. If he failed this time, he would no longer be allowed to enter the “Five Great Academies”. It was his final chance.

Dong!

A bell sound rang once again within the Northern Spiritual Square. Chen Fan, Tang Qian’Er and the others looked at the bamboo lots they drew and slowly backed off. Right now, this first match should be Mu Chen against Chen Tong.

As they moved away, numerous gazes instantly gathered at the two figures within the stage.

“Ohoho, I never imagined that Mu Chen would be in the first match.” Tang Shan looked at the two individuals on the stage and said as he smiled.

Mu Feng also smiled and nodded his head. Naturally, he could tell that Mu Chen was at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase. Although his opponent was the same level as him, Mu Chen should still be able to defeat such an opponent. Moreover, if Mu Chen were to win this match, he would at least obtain the entry to the Five Great Academies.

“So he’s that Mu Chen?” On the main platform, Mister Hao, who seemed to be lazy, suddenly straightened up his body. He looked peculiarly at the handsome boy at the stage.

Beside him, Principal Xiao smiled and nodded his head.

“He looks like a gentle and peaceful boy…I never thought that he would actually do all those things. You really can’t judge a person through his appearance.” Mister Hao stared in interest at Mu Chen and muttered these words.

“I hope that this little guy will not disappoint me. Otherwise, I came here for no reason.”

At the side, Principal Xiao was quite curious when he heard these words. However, he did not ask about it. He could only try to figure out within his heart just what sort of shocking thing Mu Chen had done in the Spiritual Road that made the Five Great Academies concerned about him.

…

“I’ve said that sometimes people would be unlucky. It really is unreasonable.”

On the much anticipated stage, Chen Tong smiled as he looked at Mu Chen. He was still thinking about punishing this guy earlier. Who would have imagined that the opportunity to do so would appear in the next instant?

Mu Chen stared helplessly at the arrogant Chen Tong. He could not help but shake his head. This guy…is quite foolish.

“Can you stop talking?” Mu Chen sighed and said.

Seeing Mu Chen’s disregarding attitude, Chen Tong gnashed his teeth. This guy always had an appearance that angers others.

“Mu Chen. This time, I won’t let you act this arrogant!”

Chen Tong shouted out. Dense Spiritual Energy surged out from within his body. The extent of this power made many Northern Spiritual Academy’s students secretly click their tongues. As expected, this person had advanced to the Spiritual Rotation Stage.

“Swish!”

His toes touched the ground and his body moved swiftly. Spiritual Energy erupted out from both palms and a faint burning fluctuation emitted out.

“Fiery Heartbreak Palm!”

Chen Tong emerged directly in front of Mu Chen. A fiery energy gathered at the center of his palm. It was like a mass of extremely hot flames. Then, it carried violent winds as it shot off in anger towards Mu Chen’s chest.

Mu Chen glanced at him casually and raised his hand.

“Smack!”

A crisp sound suddenly resounded out from the stage. The palm that Chen Tong had fired off suddenly froze in midair. He was stunned as he stared at the boy, who directly a helpless smile, in front of him. He immediately felt a burning sensation coming from his face.

He was suddenly slapped mysteriously?

“This…”

Surprised voices also broke out from outside the stage. Many people did not even see what had exactly happened. They could only see a handprint emerging on Chen Tong’s face and hear the crisp sound of a slap.

“What a fast speed!”

Only the ones with extraordinary eyesight muttered to themselves with a serious expression. They could vaguely see the lightning speed attack during that instant.

“I’ll kill you!”

Although he did not understand what had happened, the pain from his face made Chen Tong’s eyes turn red. He looked ferociously at Mu Chen and the Spiritual Energy within his body was released unreservedly. The palm winds were like fire sweeping

through the place as it bombarded towards Mu Chen.

However, Mu Chen only moved slowly against this fierce offensive. It was like a stroll and he allowed Chen Tong to attack him crazily, yet it did not even touch his clothes.

The scene on the stage looked quite funny. One of them was crazily attacking while the other was walking around relaxed. It was like a boat following and rising with the waves within a storm.

At this moment, even the ordinary individuals could see the difference between the two of them. It seems that the two individuals were not at the same level.

“What a mysterious movement ability, that Mu Chen isn’t simple at all.”

A few powerful individuals nodded in surprise. He could actually act so relaxed during a Spiritual Rotation Stage’s berserk attacks. This wasn’t something that anybody could do.

Liu Mubai watched this scene coldly. He was quite surprised about Mu Chen’s speed. However, he immediately grinned. It would only be interesting if it’s like this, otherwise, wouldn’t he feel bored about it?

“Do you only know how to dodge?!” Seeing that his attacks were to no avail after a long period of time, Chen Tong immediately flew into a rage out of humiliation. It was too hard to bear when every attack of his missed.

Mu Chen finally stopped moving. His black eyes stared undisturbedly at Chen Tong.

“Pyroblast Spirit Fist!”

Seeing that Mu Chen had stopped moving, Chen Tong’s eyes were filled with delight. He immediately took a step forward and his Spiritual Energy rushed out endlessly from within his body. Layers of flame accumulated on his fist as it fiercely blasted off towards Mu Chen.

Since there was an opportunity, he must use all his strength in this attack to defeat this person!

This thought flashed through Chen Tong's mind. Then, he noticed Mu Chen also clenching his fists in front of him. Then, his arm fired off directly like a spear.

Boom!

Wrapped by a dark black Spiritual Energy, Mu Chen's fist collided with Chen Tong's all-out attack without the slightest signs of dodging. A deep sound suddenly resounded through the sky.

With the two individuals as the center, a violent blast of air spread out.

Mu Chen's body remained motionless, but Chen Tong's face turned red. In the next instant, his body trembled and flew backwards under many astonished gazes. He brushed against the ground for a dozen meters before finally stopping.

"How is that possible?!"

Chen Tong lifted his head. His face was filled with an incredulous expression. Both Mu Chen and he were at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase, why is it that he couldn't even block one attack from Mu Chen?

"I won't believe it!" Chen Tong's eyes turned red. With a low cry, he fiercely attacked again.

Swish!

Just when he was about to charge out, a ghost-like black figure appeared in front of him. Before he could even react, a cold hand was pressed onto his throat.

Feeling the cold hand on his throat, Chen Tong was suddenly shocked and froze. He stared at the boy's face that was close to him. The originally gentle face had become cold and heartless. Those indifferent eyes made his heart jumped and he could feel

that he was being stared by a cheetah.

“I…I surrender.”

Chen Tong swallowed his saliva and said while quivering. He finally understood the difference between the two of them. Although he had advanced into the Spiritual Rotation Stage, he wasn’t Mu Chen’s opponent at all.

Mu Chen glanced and him. He did not seem to care about him and slowly released his hand.

“Brother Mu is amazing!”

As Mu Chen released his hand, a commotion instantly burst out from outside the stage. The East Branch students, especially Su Ling, Tan Qingshan and the others could not help but excitedly shout out. They weren’t able to see the battle clearly, yet they could tell that the arrogant Chen Tong was completely overwhelmed by Mu Chen.

Hearing their cheers, Mu Chen directed a smile towards them. Then, he suddenly felt something and turned his head around. His line of sight landed at the direction of Liu Mubai. At this moment, Liu Mubai had crossed his arms and was staring at Mu Chen like he was something interesting. That appearance was just like a wolf that had found a prey.

Liu Mubai noticed Mu Chen looking over and smiled. Then, his lips moved slightly.

Mu Chen’s eyes narrowed. He could tell what Liu Mubai wanted to say to him.

“You will end up as pitiful as him.”

Mu Chen replied back with a smile as his eyes turned cold.

“I’ll be waiting for it.”

Chapter 83 – Battle for the Entries

The Entry Competition's first match ended with Mu Chen utterly crushing Chen Tong. This fight surprised many of the audience. Although the battle did not last long, the people that were capable of discerning it could tell how powerful the boy named Mu Chen is. They were both at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase, yet the strength they exhibited on the stage were at a completely different level.

"That Mu Chen is the son of the Mu Territory Lord, Mu Feng, right? He is indeed quite capable."

"It was said that he was the only one, who obtained the qualifications to the Spiritual Road, within the Northern Spiritual Realm. However, something happened and he was kicked out from it."

"Judging from his appearance, the boy is quite extraordinary. With such abilities, he shouldn't be too bad within the Spiritual Road, right?"

"Who knows why he was kicked out? But with his abilities, it shouldn't be difficult for him to enter the Five Great Academies."

Outside of the Northern Spiritual Square, many whispers spread out. It was evident that other people are starting to notice the boy from the earlier battle, who had once caused a commotion within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

Mu Chen did not care much about the various gazes that were sent over and returned to the East Branch's seats. At the same time, Liu Mubai stood up from the West Branch's seats with a calm expression and walked towards the stage.

From the East Branch, numerous gazes were directed at Mo Ling, who had become pale. Mu Chen gently patted his shoulder. Only then did Mo Ling grit his teeth and walked up.

Liu Mubai glanced at Mu Chen calmly before turning his gaze towards Mo Ling, who was walking onto the stage. He lowered his head and fixed his sleeves as he said, “You should just concede.”

Mo Ling was suppressed by the pressure coming from Liu Mubai, but immediately gritted his teeth and said, “Please instruct me.”

Liu Mubai’s eyes were calm and indifferent as he shook his head and said, “You really don’t appreciate my kindness.”

Facing Liu Mubai’s attitude, Mo Ling’s face were changing alternately to blue and red. However, the other person was definitely strong. He simply had no other method; he was going to lose in this battle for sure. The only thing he could do was to not to lost too badly.

Mo Ling took a deep breath and clenched his hands tightly. Spiritual Energy flowed out from his body and he felt his body filled with energy. Afterwards, Mo Ling finally had a little bit of confidence and took a step forward. He initiated the attack and headed straight towards Liu Mubai.

Mo Ling’s strength was actually considered to be quite decent. Even amongst the Northern Spiritual Academy’s Heaven Class, he was ranked rather up front. However, he knew that Liu Mubai, who was in front of him, had always dominated the title of the strongest Northern Spiritual Academy student all these years and nobody was able to shake that title.

Against such an opponent, there wasn’t the slightest chance of winning if he didn’t go all out from the beginning.

Liu Mubai looked calmly at Mo Ling charging over. His body tilted slightly forward and an explosion rang out from beneath his feet. His figure instantly turned into a red light as he rushed over.

His speed was extremely fast even Mo Ling was only able to see the red light flash as it emerged. Then, he was horrified to see Liu Mubai appearing in front of him. A slim palm gently smashed over

and landed on Mo Ling's chest. He did not even have the time to defend against it as the volcanic Spiritual Energy erupted.

Bang!

A muffled sound emitted out. Mo Ling, who was in a position of charging forward earlier, instantly flew back. Fresh blood sprayed out as he awkwardly brushed on the ground.

Waa!

This scene directly caused numerous uproars from the onlookers. Mo Ling, who had reached the Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase, didn't even have a chance to attack in front of Liu Mubai!

"What a terrifying strength." Su Ling and the others gulped. The title of the strongest Northern Spiritual Academy student wasn't just for show.

Mu Chen also stared at the stage. When Liu Mubai had attacked previously, his eyes focused slightly. Liu Mubai's speed was not inferior to his. He was indeed quite powerful.

"Eh, they aren't at the same level." Beside him, Chen Fan and the others sighed. It was just like earlier when Mu Chen had fought against Chen Tong. The current Mo Ling and Liu Mubai were at a completely different level.

On the stage, Liu Mubai stared indifferently at the awkward Mo Ling. A hint of disdain emerged on his mouth and he turned away to leave. In a battle where he completely oppressed the other, it didn't feel great at all.

"Wait."

A hoarse voice came out from behind. Liu Mubai frowned and turned around. He could see Mo Ling wiping the blood from his mouth and stood up while wobbling. He gritted his teeth and said, "I haven't lost yet."

Liu Mubai's eyes slowly darkened.

Under Liu Mubai's dark eyes, Mo Ling circulated his Spiritual Energy within his body and charged over to Liu Mubai.

Boom!

A muffled sound rang out once again. Liu Mubai moved like a lightning and emerged at the right side of Mo Ling. With a kick that was like a spear, he fiercely kicked Mo Ling's waist.

Puchi.

Mo Ling flew backwards again. Fresh blood sprayed out and it was obvious that he was quite helpless.

However, just when everybody sighed in regret, they were surprised to see Mo Ling gritting his teeth as he stood up once again while trembling.

"Ohoho, good. You're quite stubborn."

Seeing Mo Ling clinging at him obstinately, Liu Mubai laughed due to his rage. This time, he did not give Mo Ling an opportunity to initiate an attack. His feet stomped onto the ground as he charged out.

Bang!

Mo Ling's body was directly sent flying by Liu Mubai's palm.

Bang!

Before Mo Ling could even stand up, Liu Mubai's figure had rushed out again. His eyes were dark and he kicked Mo Ling in the waist and sent him flying a dozen meters as if he was garbage.

Countless people watched as Liu Mubai continued to attack the helpless Mo Ling. But even so, that boy continued to grit his teeth and endured. Although his face had turned pale, he still refused to surrender.

"What a tenacious boy."

A few people secretly sighed. Although Mo Ling's strength was

incomparable against Liu Mubai, the courage to fight against him when he knew he was in a completely different level was still quite surprising.

At the East Branch's side, all the students watched Mo Ling, who refused to admit defeat, as he was kicked around. They were all silent. A few students even tilted their heads away and could not bear to watch anymore.

It was too cruel.

"Motherf*cker!" Chen Fan gritted his teeth. It would be fine if Liu Mubai had knocked out Mo Ling and threw him off the stage. However, this way of insulting others was going overboard.

Tang Qian'Er also gently gritted her teeth. She moved her gaze away from the stage and whispered, "Should we just let him surrender?"

"If he surrenders now, Mo Ling wouldn't have the slightest chance of obtaining an entry." Mu Chen said gently. His eyes swept past the main platform. At that location, Mister Hao was frowning as he watched the stage. It was impossible to tell whether he was delighted or furious based on his expression.

"But..." Tang Qian'Er still wanted to say more.

"This is the method he chose. Perhaps his strength could not compare with Liu Mubai, but his courage would help him obtain dignity and pride. There is something called guts. If a man doesn't have this deep down inside, he would be a weakling no matter how powerful his Spiritual Energy is. He would be looked down by others." Mu Chen said in a calm voice.

There was nothing Tang Qian'Er could say. Although she did not understand why men would have to struggle even if they had to die, those men were indeed quite attractive to the girls.

This one-sided battle lasted for nearly ten minutes. At that moment, Mo Ling was completely covered with blood. His

consciousness was also quite blurry. However, he used his willpower and endured it.

Liu Mubai's face had already turned completely dark. This sort of battle brought no benefits to him. He knew that when he heard sounds of whispers appearing from time to time.

Liu Mubai stared at Mo Ling and a hint of killing intent emerged within his eyes. Since you can't be sensible, I'll destroy you!

But just when Liu Mubai was about to deliver the killing blow, Mister Hao gently waved his hand on the main platform. Principal Xiao immediately shouted out, "The battle is over, Liu Mubai wins."

Hearing this, Liu Mubai glared fiercely at Mo Ling, who was almost unconscious. He could only leave while waving his sleeves in anger. As he left the stage, he glanced coldly at Mu Chen. Apparently, he thought that this was Mu Chen's idea to deliberately trouble him.

Seeing that the match was over, a few students from the East Branch carried the unconscious Mo Ling down from the stage.

"It's my turn next."

Chen Fan gritted his teeth and angrily stepped onto the stage. His opponent was a rather well-known student from the West Branch. They were both at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase. However, this student lacked combat experience compared to Chen Fan, who had joined an Adventurer's team. It couldn't be seen at the start of the battle. However, as the battle gradually intensified, it was slowly revealed. In the end, Chen Fan finally discovered a flaw and seized the opportunity to defeat his opponent in one attack.

Following Chen Fan was Huo Yun. He, too, obtained victory just as anticipated from the start. And the final match was Tang Qian'Er's fight. The match made many eyes lit up. This was

because her opponent was the West Branch's Hong Ling. The two Northern Spiritual Academy's flowers would actually clash with each other.

It was evident that two beautiful girls fighting were more likely to attract attention. This attention surpassed even the matches of Mu Chen and Liu Mubai. It could be seen that a beauty's attractiveness would always be the strongest.

This battle was not brutal nor bloody. However, everybody still watched intently. The girls' gentle methods were like butterflies flying around. Even the attacks that would take one's life would still become graceful in their hands.

Tang Qian'Er and Hong Ling's strength were equally matched. Although they had their own means of attacking, they failed to determine the winner. In the end, Mister Hao opened his mouth and the match between the two of them actually ended up in a draw.

As it was a draw, everybody was shocked. There were only this many entries. How would they allocate it if it was a draw? But since this was said by Mister Hao, they could only keep this question deep down in their hearts.

With the end of this battle, the Northern Spiritual Square's atmosphere quietly rose. Even the powerful powerhouses casted their gaze over with great interest.

This is because, next up, it was the fight for the seeded entry.

After all these battles, they could tell that there were only two students among the group, who could compete for the seeded entry: Mu Chen and Liu Mubai.

And coincidentally, these two individuals were the Mu Territory's Little Lord and Liu Territory's Little Master. The relationship between these two territories was quite terrible. In another perspective, this seeded entry competition would be a

battle between the two territories.

However, they just didn’t know who exactly would have the final laugh?

Chapter 84 – Fierce Struggle Between a Tiger and a Dragon

In the massive Northern Spiritual Square, the atmosphere was becoming heated up. Numerous gazes looked eagerly at the stage, waiting for the true fierce struggle between a tiger and a dragon.

Under the audience's eyes, Liu Mubai's body moved and was first to land on the stage. His cold eyes stared at Mu Chen, who was at the East Branch. The corner of his mouth twitched as he could not wait it to start. He wanted to see just how wonderful the expressions of the people, who believed in Mu Chen, would be when Mu Chen was defeated.

Mu Chen also looked at Liu Mubai's cold smile and calmly headed up to the stage. He stood at a place near Liu Mubai.

"Brother Mu, good luck!"

Su Ling and the others' faces turned red as they shouted. Although they knew how powerful Liu Mubai was, they still had quite the confidence in Mu Chen.

"This day has finally come…"

Liu Mubai gently twisted his neck and stared at Mu Chen. A smile actually emerged on his face. However, underneath that smile was a hint of coldness. It seems that he has endured for a long time for the scene today.

"You're not afraid of it becoming twisted?" Mu Chen said with a soft laugh.

"I'll waste you." Liu Mubai shrugged and said with a smile.

"If I get the chance, I'll do the same to you." Mu Chen nodded his head and replied seriously.

Liu Mubai smiled as he looked at Mu Chen. The latter also seriously stared at him. The atmosphere may seem quite gentle,

yet the cold chill flowing through the depths of their eyes made others freeze.

“It seems that Mu Chen is the only one who could compete with Liu Mubai for the seeded entry.” Tang Territory’s Territory Lord looked at the two individuals facing off. He could help but speak. These two individuals were already considered to be the most outstanding individuals among the younger generation within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

“But based on what I know, Liu Mubai is probably at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Middle Phase. Moreover, with those powerful Spiritual Arts from Liu Territory he read through, his combat ability is quite extraordinary…Mu Chen is only at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase, so he’s at a disadvantage.” Tang Shan looked towards Mu Feng. After all, they had a pretty good relationship with each other. At this moment, he was naturally bias towards Mu Chen.

Hearing these words, Mu Feng said with a faint smile: “The boy from the Liu family is quite capable. However, Mu Chen isn’t a weakling that could be defeated by just anybody.”

Although Mu Feng recognized Liu Mubai’s ability, he also had confidence that his son wouldn’t be any weaker than him.

“Haha, since that’s the case, I hope to see a decent match.” Tang Shan said with a chuckle.

On the other side of the seats, Liu Qingtian seemed to have heard Mu Feng’s words. He instantly made a mocking smile and waited for the show to begin: “What a foolish dream.”

At the main platform, Mister Hao from the “Five Great Academies” stared at the two individual in the stage. He finally straightened up his body and did not act this lazily anymore. His pair of muddy eyes finally showed a tiny bit of interest: “So that main event is finally about to begin.”

Principal Xiao also nodded his head. Then, he stood up while his eyes remained fixated at the stage. His eyes paused for a moment as he stared at Mu Chen and Liu Mubai's body before he gently waved his hand.

"The competition for the seeded entry officially begins!"

Boom!

The instant Principal Xiao's voice emerged; two powerful Spiritual Energies seemed to have erupted out from the stage at the same time. It brought forth bursts of winds spiraling.

Two pair of cold eyes would flash as it seemed to bypass the dense Spiritual Energy surrounding the bodies and intertwined with each other.

Swish!

The two figures also rushed out at this moment. A black figure and red figure ripped through the obstruction of the air and directly charged forward. They did not show any signs of dodging and collided with each other at the center of the stage in a couple of seconds.

Dong!

A violent Spiritual Energy shock wave erupted out during the instant they collided. The solid ground shattered and tiny cracks emerged.

The intensity of their Spiritual Energy was absolutely not something an ordinary Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase could compare with.

"Interesting." Liu Mubai licked his lips gently. The eyes that he used to stare at Mu Chen were as if he had met a prey that caught his interest. In the next instant, his eyes turned cold and fiery red Spiritual Energy wrapped around his legs like flames. With the sound of an explosion coming out from beneath his feet, he charged out like a fiery red figure.

This speed was just like a lightning bolt and caused countless cries to appear from the surroundings.

“That’s…the Liu Territory’s Blaze Step. It’s a Spiritual Tier Low Rank Movement Spiritual Art. I never expected that Liu Mubai would actually be able to learn it.” Tang Shan stared at the flames from underneath Liu Mubai’s feet and exclaimed slightly.

Under many gazes, the fiery red figure seemed to have instantly appeared behind Mu Chen. Afterwards, a palm was fired off. At the center of the palm, fiery red Spiritual Energy surged out and it was extremely violent.

Swoosh!

However, Mu Chen’s body trembled slightly when Liu Mubai was about to successfully land his attack on Mu Chen’s back. Following this, Liu Mubai’s attack passed directly through his body.

“An afterimage?”

Liu Mubai’s eyes immediately focused when he noticed that his attack missed. He did not hesitate and took advantage of his miss in order to kick behind him like a spear. An enormous gale blew out.

Boom!

A deep voice sounded out from behind. Without anybody noticing, Mu Chen had appeared behind Liu Mubai and his fist wrapped with black Spiritual Energy collided with Liu Mubai’s kick.

“Pretty good movements you have there!”

Liu Mubai sneered. He leapt up to the sky as Fiery red Spiritual Energy flashed at the soles of his feet. Turning around, he fired off numerous fists towards Mu Chen. Each of these fists contained violent Spiritual Energy and brought forth numerous winds as it enshrouded Mu Chen.

Against Liu Mubai's fierce offensive, Mu Chen's body moved and dodged like a ghost. Afterimages would vaguely appear and it was impossible for others to capture his dodging trajectories.

"Huh, what a mysterious movement ability." Seeing Mu Chen's movement abilities, Tang Shan's eyes lit up. With his keen eyesight, he could naturally tell that Mu Chen was displaying a rather mysterious movement Spiritual Art.

Mu Feng was also surprised when he saw Mu Chen's movements. He was quite unfamiliar with this movement ability and it was definitely not taught by him. It seems that it must have come from the Northern Spiritual Academy.

Bang Bang Bang!

Liu Mubai's offensive was extremely fierce. He was in hot pursuit, yet Mu Chen relied on the mysterious movement in order to avoid endlessly. He completely evaded all the attacks brought out by Liu Mubai.

The two of them on the stage had pushed their strength to the very limits. It was still fine for the powerful individuals. However, students like Su Ling and the others could only see blurry red and black shadows flashing around the stage. Their faces were completely filled with shock.

After chasing Mu Chen for so long with no avail, Liu Mubai's eyes turned completely dark. He pondered for a moment and Spiritual Energy surged out from his body. His speed instantly increased and he caught up with Mu Chen's ghost-like figure.

Swish!

But during the moment he had just caught up, Mu Chen's body suddenly stopped. Two fingers remained straight up and had instantly turned into a gold color. It flashed dazzlingly and emitted an extremely sharp fluctuation.

Mu Chen's fingers tore through the air and ruthlessly headed

towards Liu Mubai's throat.

Mu Chen's sudden change from defense to offense surprised Liu Mubai. However, he did not panic and straightened two of his fingers. A fiery red Spiritual wrapped around it like flames and it seemed extraordinary brutal.

The gold fingers and fiery red fingers were thrusted out. In the next instant, they collided heavily together.

Clang!

The collision of the fingers was like metal colliding with each other. A crisp sound actually broke out and sparks flew out both fingers. It was visible that their fingers had changed forms.

Mu Chen's eyes were cold as he formed finger seals with both hands. His fingers sparkled like gold and he activated the Spirit King Finger. Two golden spears accompanied with finger seals charged fiercely at Liu Mubai.

Swish!

And while facing Mu Chen's fierce offensive, Liu Mubai sneered and fiery red Spiritual Energy emitted out. Four of his fingers remained straighten as he stabbed at Mu Chen.

The golden light and fiery light seemed to have enshrouded their bodies.

Everybody could seal that each of the finger seals formed had a lethal power.

Countless individuals held their breaths as they watched the two figures colliding against each other with their fingers. This sort of collision wasn't something that even a Spiritual Rotation Stage Middle Phase could do.

Clang!

Another collision between their fingers appeared. Mu Chen and Liu Mubai both had to took a step backwards. From their

fingertips, blood actually dripped down. It was evident that the collision had caused them a bit of injuries.

Mu Chen's cold eyes remained fixated at Liu Mubai's body. The latter was indeed quite powerful. He couldn't achieve any results even with such an offensive.

Apparently, it wasn't enough to obtain victory like this.

Mu Chen took a deep breath and his body suddenly retreated backwards. His hands also retreated back into his sleeves. And most surprisingly, he even actually closed his eyes slowly.

Mu Chen's strange action instantly aroused a commotion from the audience. It was evident that they did not understand what he was doing.

"This..." Tang Shan looked suspiciously at Mu Feng. Wouldn't it give an opportunity to his opponent if he closed his eyes right now?

Mu Feng also frowned. He was unclear what Mu Chen was planning to do.

"Trying to act all mysterious, go to hell!"

Liu Mubai's eyes narrowed. He immediately sneered and rushed out towards Mu Chen. But against his offensive, Mu Chen did not show any signs of dodging. Although he closed his eyes, he still pushed the Shadowspirit Step to the extreme. A few confusing afterimages were brought out and he evaded Liu Mubai's attacks.

Liu Mubai did not hold back because of the strange state that Mu Chen was in. His attacks became fiercer and gradually blocked Mu Chen off.

But just when he was prepared to shut down Mu Chen's escape path, he did not notice that dozens of Spiritual Seals had emerged from Mu Chen's hands that were hidden by his sleeves. It silently integrated into the air.

At the stage, Mu Chen, who had always been evading, suddenly stopped. He stared at Liu Mubai as he rushed over and had a faint smile on his handsome face. He gently placed his hands together and formed a strange seal.

At the main platform, Mister Hao stared at the seal formed by Mu Chen’s hands and his eyes focused completely.

“This is…a Spiritual Array’s seal?!”

Chapter 85 – Hidden Cards Revealed

Under everybody's astonished gazes, Mu Chen's hand suddenly formed a strange seal. Afterwards, his eyes suddenly focused. A dazzling red light suddenly erupted from the sky behind hand and formed a fiery red Spiritual Array that was the size of a dozen or so Zhang tall!

"A Spiritual Array?!"

Numerous individuals stood up at the Northern Spiritual Square. They watched the Spiritual Array behind Mu Chen's back with incredulous eyes. The people with keen vision could even tell that the powerful fluctuations within the Spiritual Array had definitely reached the level of a Rank 1 Spiritual Array!

"God, Mu Chen actually arranged a Spiritual Array? He's actually a Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master?!"

"How is that possible? Even for a Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master, they would require some time to quietly arrange an array. However, he's in a battle right now. Moreover, he even closed his eyes earlier!"

"But this is definitely a Rank 1 Spiritual Array!"

"How is this possible?!"

Shocked cries rang out from the Northern Spiritual Square. Everybody's eyes were filled with shock and confusion. It was apparent that they did not know how Mu Chen was able to do this.

"This..."

Not only were they shocked, even the Territory Lords in the seats at front were completely surprised. Liu Qingtian even straightened up his body and had an extremely ugly expression. He never thought that the boy from the Mu Territory, aside from having a decent strength, would actually have such a surprising hidden card up his sleeves.

“So Mu Chen is actually a Spiritual Array Master. No wonder you were so confident.” Tang Shan gradually recovered from the shock and praised him loudly. Then, he was somewhat puzzled and asked: “However, how could he arrange an array this quickly even if he is a Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master?”

Mu Feng had a surprised expression as well. However, he quickly understood the reason behind it. He could not help but smile. Others might not be able to understand why Mu Chen could form a Spiritual Array this quickly, but he could guess vaguely why that happened.

“Is it the Heart Array State? It seems that Mu Chen is grasping and understanding the Heart Array State more and more...” Mu Feng muttered to himself.

“That Mu Chen really hid his strength well...”

At the main platform, Principal Xiao also had a surprised expression. He could not help but smile: “I never imagined that he was a Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master...”

Beside him, Teacher Mo also nodded his head. He had trained Mu Chen this long, yet he had not discovered it at all. This guy really knew how to conceal his hidden cards.

“Moreover, he isn’t an ordinary Spiritual Array Master...”

Mister Hao’s eyes flashed as he stared at the handsome boy on the stage. He could not conceal the shock within his voice: “He seems to be able to enter the “Heart Array” state. Otherwise, it’s absolutely impossible for him to close his eyes and arrange a Spiritual Array this quickly.”

“Heart Array State?” Principal Xiao and the others trembled. Naturally, they have heard about this state before. They heard that even Rank 3 Spiritual Array Masters might not be able to enter that mysterious state. Yet Mu Chen was actually able to enter that state with his strength of a Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master?

Ordinarily speaking, a peculiar fluctuation would emerge while arranging a Spiritual Array. However, they never expected that Mu Chen would arrange a Spiritual Array. Therefore, their attention was completely focused on the exchange between the two of them. But who would have thought...

“Interesting.”

Mister Hao smiled slightly. His eyes remained tightly fixed at the stage.

“A Spiritual Array?”

On the stage, Liu Mubai’s figure had completely stopped. He had an extremely pale expression as he stared at the circulating fiery red Spiritual Array behind Mu Chen. The violent Spiritual Energy emitted out from that location had caused the air to constantly tremble.

Mu Chen looked at the pale Liu Mubai and gently smiled as he exhaled slowly. He actually carried a mentality of hoping to be lucky as he arranged a Spiritual Array in combat. After all, this was extremely difficult to do. Although he had constantly attempted to understand the mysterious Heart Array State during this one month, he would still have to pay a big price if he made a mistake.

But fortunately, he won this bet. The experience from the Spiritual Road had allowed him to gather his thoughts and focus completely. During the critical moments, he would not be distracted and remain calm like the water as he entered the mysterious Heart Array State. By borrowing its power, he had successfully arranged a Spiritual Array.

“Try out this feast that I’ve prepared for you.”

Mu Chen directed a smile towards Liu Mubai and his eyes immediately turned sharp. His hand seals changed as he shouted out: “Devouring Tigerblaze Spiritual Array!”

Roar!

Following Mu Chen's shout, a deep tiger's roar actually emitted out from the fiery red Spiritual Array behind him as it shone.

This Devouring Tigerblaze Spiritual Art was a Diagram Array that Mu Chen had obtained from Wen Ling the night before he returned to the Northern Spiritual Academy a month ago. The power of this Spiritual Array was quite extraordinary. It required a total of 17 Spiritual Seals in order to arrange it. A month ago, Mu Chen did not have the ability to condense 17 Spiritual Seals. However, after a month of harsh training, he had finally succeeded.

The power of this Spiritual Array was ranked in the top 3 amongst all the Spiritual Arrays that Wen Ling knew. Once it was released, even a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase would have to avoid its brilliance and power.

Liu Mubai stared at the Spiritual Array filled with a violent Spiritual Energy. His hands slowly clenched together and coldness surged through his eyes.

"Roar!"

The fiery red Spiritual Array had become increasingly violent. In the next instant, a fiery red light swept out like lava and directly formed into a mighty flame tiger.

Swish!

The instant that this flame tiger had appeared, it shouted to the sky. With a burning flame and violent Spiritual Energy, it crossed through the skies and lunged towards Liu Mubai under many gazes.

This attack was something that a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase individual would be afraid of.

The flame tiger roared and heated winds blew. It seemed that the air was completely oppressed and fled away as it enshrouded Liu Mubai. Liu Mubai lifted his head and stared at the rapidly

approaching flame figure. His face suddenly became extremely cold.

“You think you can win with such a technique?”

He muttered to himself. However, he did not move too much. The fiery red Spiritual Energy gushed out like fire as the flame tiger charged towards him.

“Ah.”

Within the Northern Spiritual Square, everybody watched as Liu Mubai clashed together with the flame tiger. They exclaimed out loud. Did this guy abandon himself to despair?

In the seats at front, Liu Qingtian smiled sarcastically when he saw this.

Mu Chen also watched tightly at the location where the flames were raging. However, he frowned. In the next instant, he seemed to have felt something and quickly retreated backwards.

Boom!

A powerful Spiritual Energy fluctuation erupted out from within the center of the flames. The powerful Spiritual Energy actually forcibly scattered the raging flames away.

“What a powerful Spiritual Energy!”

This sudden turn of events stunned everybody. They hurriedly looked over and saw a figure wrapped with dense Spiritual Energy slowly walking out from within the flames.

“Liu Mubai’s Spiritual Energy is actually even more powerful than an ordinary Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase!” A few individuals sensed the dense Spiritual Energy surging out from the figure’s body and could not help but shout out loudly.

“So this Liu Mubai also had a hidden card up his sleeves!”

Su Ling, Tang Qian’Er and the others turned slightly pale as they watched this scene. Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase? This Liu

Mubai was truly a person, who concealed himself completely.

“Mu Chen. You’re not the only one that holds a hidden card.”

Dense Spiritual Energy enshrouded Liu Mubai. He felt the powerful Spiritual Energy within his body as his viper-like eyes locked itself onto Mu Chen and he laughed.

Mu Chen also stared at Liu Mubai. This guy really made a breakthrough during this one month and reached the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase.

“However, did you believe that a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase was the limits of my power?” Liu Mubai smiled gently and had a cold smile. The eyes he used to look at Mu Chen became extremely mocking. I’ll show you what is called an insurmountable gap!

“Although I haven’t used it for a long time, did you all forget that I possess a Spiritual Pulse as well?”

Liu Mubai slowly spread out his hands. Afterwards, everybody was able to see lights slowly emerging on his body. These lights were like a soaring dragon as it flashed.

With the emergence of these lights, Liu Mubai’s Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase’s Spiritual Energy fluctuation actually began to expand once again. Finally, under many astonished gazes, he had reached the pinnacle of a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase.

At this moment, he had reached the limits of a Spiritual Rotation Stage!

Just who, among the Spiritual Rotation Stage, could compete with him?

The entire venue was completely silent. The only thing happening was Liu Mubai’s dense Spiritual Energy spreading out in waves. The pressure from this Spiritual Energy even made the people near the stage feel a sense of pressure.

“Not only did Liu Mubai advance to the Spiritual Rotation Stage, he even possesses a Human-Level Spiritual Pulse. It will be troubling now.” Tang Shan sighed. There are probably only a few people who could compete with Liu Mubai within the Spiritual Rotation Stage.

Mu Feng’s face sank. The boy from the Liu Family wasn’t that simple. He never expected that the Rank 1 Spiritual Array that Mu Chen had arranged would be completely useless in front of him.

“I won’t give you a chance to struggle.”

On the stage, Liu Mubai stared coldly at Mu Chen. His hands slowly clenched together and forceful waves of Spiritual Energy quickly gathered at the center of his palm. In the end, a dazzling sun seemed to emerge at the center of Liu Mubai’s palm.

Sensing the powerful Spiritual Energy at the center of Liu Mubai’s palm, many people’s hearts jumped. Is he planning to defeat Mu Chen ruthlessly?

“Solar Inferno Palm.”

Liu Mubai’s body rushed into the air and his Spiritual Energy poured out endlessly. His entire body seemed to have turned into a fiery light while a fiery sun was tightly clutched at the center of his palm. It carried an extraordinary fluctuation as he charged furiously at Mu Chen, who was below him.

The ground on the stage collapsed slightly due to the violent impact. Everybody watched flabbergasted at Liu Mubai’s amazing offensive.

Within the Spiritual Rotation Stage, is there really someone who could block it?

The outcome will be decided like this?

Phew.

Under numerous gazes, Mu Chen also took a deep breath. Then,

he actually slowly closed his eyes once again. His heart was calm like the water and his Great Pagoda Art began to furiously circulate.

Within his aura sea, the Spiritual Energy Wheel began to emit numerous lights. These lights gathered above it and a vague black light tower with nine levels slowly emerged.

When this black light tower appeared, mysterious black lights began to slowly lit up within the depths of his body. At the same time, a vague black light tower appeared on the surface of Mu Chen’s body.

He suddenly opened his eyes and watched with razor-sharp eyes at the sun descending down from the sky.

You have a Spiritual Pulse. I also have one. Furthermore, mine is much more powerful than yours!

Chapter 86 – Victory or Defeat

A fiery Spiritual Energy swept down violently from the sky. A dazzling sun emitted a powerful Spiritual Energy as it bombarded down like a meteorite towards the boy at the center of the stage.

At this moment, dark black Spiritual Energy surged out from Mu Chen's body. Black lights emerged on the surface of his body and formed a blurry black light tower.

Black lights spilled out from the light tower as it guarded Mu Chen's body. A rather mysterious fluctuation emitted out from it.

When a black light tower suddenly emerged on the surface of Mu Chen's body, it also attracted a lot of attention. At that moment, many individuals had surprised expressions. As Mu Chen had brought surprise to them earlier when he arranged a Spiritual Energy, they did not dare to underestimate this boy.

Mu Feng was startled slightly when he saw the black light tower. Then, he immediately recalled something and his eyes instantly narrowed. He clenched the chair's support with his hands while his heart was completely in a chaos.

Although the black light tower was quite blurry, he had a deep impression of it. This was because Mu Chen's mother had used a similar measure before. However, the black light tower formed by her was many times stronger compared to the one formed by Mu Chen.

"Did Mu Chen's Great Pagoda Art improve again?" Mu Feng's eyes twinkled. Surprise surged out from the depths of his eyes. That brat was truly unpredictable.

The Great Pagoda Art that had once troubled him was flowing smoothly within Mu Chen's hand.

"This is…"

On the main platform, Teacher Mo was shocked as he stared at

the black light tower on the surface of Mu Chen's body. The black light tower exuded a mysterious fluctuation. Although it appeared to be insignificant, nobody dared to underestimate it.

Teacher Mo looked at the boy's figure and could not help but click his tongue. This boy really hid many cards up his sleeves...

"Swish!"

Just when ideas were appearing within everybody's hearts, the atmosphere within the stage had completely heated up. In the air, Liu Mubai witnessed the commotion caused by Mu Chen. However, the sneer on his face became increasingly rich. Right now, he had advanced to the Spiritual Rotation Stage. Moreover, with the power of the Spiritual Pulse, there were few that could compete with him among the Spiritual Rotation Stage. No matter what the current Mu Chen would do, it was nothing but a last-ditch effort.

There would only be one outcome for him.

That is to be stepped by him on the stage!

"You're not qualified to snatch the seeded entry away from me!" A cold light flashed through Liu Mubai's eyes. The fiery sun within the center of his palm swelled once again. It was evident that he was planning to use all his strength in this one attack to end this fight!

Boom!

A powerful Spiritual Energy pressure enveloped down from the sky. Mu Chen slowly raised his head and stared at the burning sun that was quickly descending down with his black eyes. He immediately bent his knees slightly as his eyes twinkled coldly.

Boom!

Mu Chen's body charged out as a dark black Spiritual Energy erupted out from within his body. A mysterious light pattern seemed to emerge above the black light tower.

Outside of the stage, the countless individuals exclaimed loudly when they noticed Mu Chen actually taking the initiative to attack. They did not dare to blink as they watched the scene.

The black and red lights flashed as they charged out like light beams. In the next instant, it collided fiercely against each other under the numerous gazes.

Boom!

A shocking sound rang out from midair. The black and red lights bloomed in the sky like fireworks.

Crunch.

The fiery red Spiritual Energy that formed a sun had fiercely smashed against the black light tower and a crunching sound rang out. At the same time, Mu Chen's eyes peeked through the black light tower and stared tightly at the hideous looking Liu Mubai.

"Break!"

Liu Mubai issued out a deep roar from his throat. His veins on his arms trembled as he pushed the Spiritual Energy within his body to the limits. He instilled Spiritual Energy crazily into the center of his palm.

The collision between the two of them did not go as he expected. He thought that it the light tower would crumple instantly. However, the black light tower that enveloped Mu Chen's body had a powerful defensive power even when it seemed quite fragile. It actually withstood his fierce attack!

This was not the result he wanted!

"You're only a Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase, what gives you the right to fight against me?!"

Liu Mubai clenched his teeth tightly and retracted his arm. Then, he fiercely smashed forward. The burning sun continuously bombarded the thin black light tower. Deep sounds spread out

through the entire Northern Spiritual Square.

“Buzz.”

The black light tower began to ripple under the crazy bombardment by Liu Mubai. Even Mu Chen, who was protected inside, was subjected to the vibrations and blood flowed out from his mouth.

Mu Chen wiped the blood from the corner of his mouth and his eyes became cold. He furiously circulated the Spiritual Energy within his body. The Spiritual Energy Wheel within his aura sea became increasingly brighter as he released all his Spiritual Energy unreservedly.

At the same time, the mini-sized black light tower above the Spiritual Energy Wheel also let out subtle buzzing sounds. This sound seemed to reveal traces of human pride.

It was the feeling of being provoked by something mediocre!

Swoosh!

The mysterious black lights within the depths of Mu Chen’s body became increasingly dazzling. It has an arrogance that belongs to itself. A trashy Spiritual Pulse actually dares to challenge its command!

Above Mu Chen’s body, the black lights from the thin black light tower suddenly erupted out. A long humming sound rang out and the black lights that expanded out instantly covered the violent red sun.

As this occurred, a roar emitted out from Mu Chen’s mouth. He moved his feet and his body suddenly spun at a high speed. The black light tower that enshrouded his body had turned into a light spiral at this moment.

Swish!

As the black light tower rotated, the top part of the tower

smashed fiercely into the burning sun. Then, Liu Mubai was horrified to see cracks appearing on the burning sun that combined all his Spiritual Energy.

Moreover, he was astonished when he felt a strange fluctuation passing over from the light tower. Under this fluctuation, the Spiritual Pulse within his body was actually suppressed!

“How is that possible?!” The Spiritual Pulse that was shining within his body had suddenly dimmed a little bit. Liu Mubai’s face instantly changed.

“Break!”

However, when he was still astonished, a cold cry rang out from within the black light tower. The fiery sun instantly began to collapse and completely shattered apart.

Moreover, the black light tower also crumbled and became like an illusion while the fiery sun shattered.

Swish!

A black figure charged out swiftly from the illusory light tower and fist filled with black lights fired out. On the fist, two black light seals emerged.

When the fiery sun shattered, Liu Mubai turned pale. The Spiritual Energy within his body had quickly vanished. He hurriedly crossed his arms in order to protect his body against the black fist that fiercely smashed over.

Boom!

The fists wrapped with the two black light seals landed on Liu Mubai’s arm. A domineering and matchless energy exploded out like a flood.

Puchi!

Liu Mubai felt a stinging pain emerging from within his arms. He could not help but spit out a mouthful of blood and his body flew

back awkwardly. However, the instant he was sent flying away...

His leg also fiercely kicked Mu Chen's body.

Dong!

The two figures descended down from the air and landed severely on the ground. It created two holes on the stage as they spat out a mouthful of blood.

Waah!

A commotion rang out once again from outside the stage. They never expected both of them to fight to the point where they were both hurt.

Mu Chen wiped the blood from the corner of his mouth as he stood up unsteadily. He stared coldly at Liu Mubai, who was not far away. Although he felt immense pain, he ignored it completely and charged forward. He stuck up two fingers and a golden light flashed dimly at his fingertips. Since the two of them have fought to this extent, they had almost completely depleted the Spiritual Energy within their bodies.

Right now, it was a competition of whose willpower was stronger.

Mu Chen charged directly at Liu Mubai. His face was expressionless, yet it gave off a sharp killing intent. From this killing intent, nobody doubted that he was really going to kill Liu Mubai!

Seeing Mu Chen charged recklessly over to him, Liu Mubai's face became even paler. He stood up awkwardly and retreated two steps. The Spiritual Energy within his body was already completely depleted and there was no way of him attacking anymore.

From this scene, the outcome was already quite obvious. However, since Liu Mubai refused to admit defeat, the competition was not considered over.

Mu Chen's body charged towards Liu Mubai. But just when his fingers were about to stab into the latter's throat, Liu Qingtian's face finally turned dark and he shouted out: "Asshole, you dare!"

As he cried out loudly, he actually charged out and an immense Spiritual Energy fluctuation filled the entire venue.

"Liu Qingtian, you dare touch my son?!"

Mu Feng also shouted out furiously and his palm smashed against the armrest. His body also rushed over and appeared directly above Mu Chen. Then, he smacked Liu Qingtian in anger.

Bang!

As the two Spirit Stage Late Phase powerhouses fought fiercely in midair, the Spiritual Energy shock wave made Mu Chen and Liu Mubai fly backwards. Both of them immediately spat out a mouthful of blood.

"Liu Qingtian, Mu Feng, what are you two doing?!"

Seeing both of them fight, Principal Xiao also shouted out in anger. His body moved and appeared between the two of them while stopping both of them.

As they noticed Principal intervening in this, Liu Qingtian and Mu Feng stopped as well. They glared fiercely at each other.

"That Mu Chen is too ruthless. It was evident that he was going to take Liu Mubai's life. Acting this ruthless in a duel, we must cancel his qualifications!" Liu Qingtian gnashed his teeth and said.

"Stop with your bullsh*t! You lost the battle, yet you don't want to lose the war? Just how shameless is your Liu Territory?" Mu Feng said mockingly.

"Both of you, if you both disturb the competition again, then don't blame the Northern Spiritual Academy for not giving face to you two!" Principal Xiao shouted in anger.

Liu Qingtian gritted his teeth and lowered his voice and asked:

“Then, who is the final victor of this match? Seeing that both of them are completely exhausted, why don’t we consider this as a draw?”

“Hush.”

When these words were said, hushing sounds instantly rang out from outside the stage. If it wasn’t for Liu Qingtian earlier, Mu Chen would have probably obtained the victory.

Principal Xiao also frowned and said: “That will be determined by Mister Hao.”

After he said this, he turned towards Mister Hao, who was on the main platform, and cupped his hands as he asked: “Mister Hao, in your opinion, what’s the outcome of this match?”

Hearing this, Mister Hao said with a faint smile: “Mu Chen wins.”

“Why?!” Liu Qingtian shouted out furiously.

“Can’t you see?” Mister Hao pointed at the stage and said: “Mu Chen is still on the stage while Liu Mubai was sent out. Therefore, he lost.”

When Liu Qingtian heard this, he hurriedly looked down and his face turned dark. The shock wave caused by Mu Feng and him when they fought had actually sent Liu Mubai out of the stage...

Although Mu Chen was lying down faraway, he was still at the edge of the stage and did not drop out.

Sounds of suppressed laughter rang out from outside the stage. Liu Qingtian really shot himself in the foot. Originally, he could still argue about the situation. However, in the end, he sent his son directly off the stage. This way, there was no hope on arguing about it.

Mister Hao slowly stood up and looked at the audience. His faint voice resounded through the sky.

“Right now, I declare that the Northern Spiritual Academy’s seeded entry belongs to the East Branch’s Mu Chen!”

At the Northern Spiritual Academy’s East Branch, Su Ling, Tang Qian’Er and the others were stunned. Then, thunderous cheers resounded out instantly.

At the same time, countless individuals stood up outside of the stage and a loud applause rang out. The earlier battle was magnificent. The strongest student within the Northern Spiritual Academy was well deserved.

Amongst the thunderous cheers, Mu Chen struggled to sit up. He had a pale expression and lifted his head to look at Mu Feng. Then, he noticed the latter giving a thumbs up to him and immediately smiled.

What belongs to me will ultimately belong to me. Nobody can take it away!

Chapter 87 – Selecting the Spiritual Academies

The much-anticipated Entry Competition closed the curtains with Mu Chen obtaining the most valuable seeded entry. However, everybody within the Northern Spiritual Square was still immersed in the fierce battle earlier. Many people were amazed by that fight.

With his Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase strength and the power of his Spiritual Pulse, Liu Mubai was almost regarded as having no opponents beneath the Spirit Stage. However, who would have expected that he would ultimately be defeated by Mu Chen, who was only a Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase.

This result made everybody secretly sighed. No wonder Mu Chen was able to become the only one qualified for the Spiritual Road within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

Although Liu Qingtian was extremely dissatisfied with the final judgement made by Mister Hao, he was not stupid. The latter's background was extremely powerful and he would not care about his identity of the Liu Territory's Territory Lord. Since that he lost the seeded entry, he could only think of another approach.

After resting for a while, Mu Chen and Liu Mubai gradually recovered a bit of strength. However, Liu Mubai had an extremely cold and ugly expression.

Under numerous gazes, Mister Hao looked across the stage and waved his hand. Then, the twelve people that participated for the Entry Competition hurried onto the stage as they were stared enviously.

"The final results have come out for the Entry Competition today."

Mister Hao's eyes fixed themselves at Mu Chen and the others as

he faintly said: “Originally, there should be only 6 entries including the seeded entry. However, there is a slight change right now.”

Afterwards, Mister Hao turned his gaze towards Mo Ling, who was sweating nervously, and said: “You have lost the competition originally. Based on the rules, you should be disqualified.”

Mo Ling’s eyes turned dark and revealed a bitter expression.

“However, your perseverance and courage is commendable. Your talent is also acceptance. Thus, I will make an exception and give you an entry this time.” Mister Hao said.

Mo Ling was stunned. His face immediately turned red with excitement and hurriedly bowed down as he said: “Thank you Mister!”

Mister Hao nodded. Then, he turned around to look at Tang Qian’Er and Hong Ling: “The two of you drew. Normally speaking, this should not have happened. However, I can look aside and hand both of you an entry.”

Tang Qian’Er and Hong Ling were instantly filled with joy when they heard this.

“However, there is a condition.” Mister Hao said.

“What’s the condition?” Tang Qian’Er and Hong Ling quickly asked.

“You can only choose to enter the “Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy 1”.” Mister Hao said with a faint smile.

“The Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy?” Tang Qian’Er and Hong Ling were stunned.

The Five Great Academies. Accurately speaking, it is the title for five Spiritual Academies. These five Spiritual Academies are known respectively as: Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, Azure Sky Spiritual Academy, Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy,

Martial Spiritual Academy and the Saint Spiritual Academy. Amongst them, the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy was rather unique as they only recruit female students.

Naturally, you should not underestimate the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy due to this. To be able to become one of the Five Great Academies with just females, the strength of the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy was absolutely terrifying to the point where it was utterly indescribable.

Moreover, the name of the Five Great Academies actually had some sort of origin. It was said that each of the Five Great Academies had an Ancient Divine Beast living there that had once shocked the world. In fact, the name of the Five Great Academies are actually derived from the name of the five Ancient Divine Beasts.

“So what’s your decision?” Mister Hao looked at Tang Qian’Er and Hong Ling. To be honest, there were indeed much less female students compared to male students during the recruitment process. As the recruiter for the “Five Great Academies”, he would fail his job if he didn’t find enough people for the Million Phoenix Academy. Although the people within the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy were all females, it was precisely because of this that it was extremely tough and troublesome.

Hong Ling did not hesitate at all and directly nodded her head. To be able to enter the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy was just as she had wished. Although the other four Spiritual Academies were not terrible compared to the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy, the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy was still the one that suited her the most.

Tang Qian’Er hesitated for a moment. She peeked and glanced at Mu Chen. If that’s the case, wouldn’t she be in a different Spiritual Academy than Mu Chen? However, if she did not accept, would she have another choice?

As if he was aware of Tang Qian'Er's gaze, Mu Chen nodded at her. The Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy was actually quite suitable for Tang Qian'Er. It would be irrational if she failed to enter it.

Seeing Mu Chen nod his head, Tang Qian'Er bit her red lips and bitterness filled her eyes. Then, she tilted her head and said to Mister Hao: "I'll select the Million Phoenix Spiritual Academy as well."

When that happened, Mister Hao smiled. Afterwards, he turned to look at Liu Mubai and the others and asked: "Your decisions are?"

"I'll choose the Azure Sky Spiritual Academy." Chen Fan and Huo Yun exchanged glances and actually selected the same Spiritual Academy.

"I'll choose the Saint Spiritual Academy." Liu Mubai pondered for a moment and said without any hesitation. He had considered about it a long time ago. Although the strength of the Five Great Academies was absolutely terrifying, he still discovered that the Saint Spiritual Academy was considered the leader amongst the Five Great Academies if you really had to rank them. It was said that the Saint Spiritual Academy was always the strongest in the competitions shared between the Five Great Academies during the past few years.

Mister Hao glanced at Liu Mubai and nodded without saying anything. Then, he turned his attention towards Mu Chen and said: "What about you?"

Everybody nearby immediately set their sights towards Mu Chen. As the one who obtained the seeded entry, no matter which Spiritual Academy he entered, he should be able to obtain far more resources and status compared to an ordinary student.

Liu Mubai stared hatefully at Mu Chen and his eyes revealed that he was extremely unwilling. That was what he was supposed to

enjoy!

Mu Chen pouted his lips for a moment. A transparent, glass-like pair of beautiful eyes and silver long hair flashed through his mind. As he thought about this, he slowly clenched his hands.

“Mister Hao, may I ask you for some information?” Mu Chen took a deep breath and respectfully asked Mister Hao.

Mister Hao smiled and nodded his head. He felt quite satisfied with Mu Chen.

“I want to ask about two people.” Mu Chen said in a soft voice: “Mister Hao, you should have heard of the name, Ji Xuan, right?”

When Mu Chen said this name out, Mister Hao’s eyes narrowed. His face also became serious and he stared deeply at Mu Chen as he spoke: “Ji Xuan. In the Spiritual Road’s trial, he was a person that was assessed as a “King” class. He was one of the most dazzling individuals within the Spiritual Road and obtained a core entry for the Five Great Academies.”

Everybody’s expression changed when they heard these words. Although they were unfamiliar with that name, they could feel an intense pressure. A core entry. It was something that could only be obtained by a person, who was like a monster.

“King Class huh?” Mu Chen’s eyes drooped slightly. This was the highest class of assessment within the Spiritual Road. However, it was within his expectations that Ji Xuan would obtain this assessment with his abilities.

“Which Spiritual Academy did he enter?” Mu Chen’s voice remained calm. Nobody could tell what sort of emotions were within his voice.

Mister Hao stared at Mu Chen. Shortly after, he said: “Ji Xuan entered the Saint Spiritual Academy and was even specially named out by the higher ups of the Saint Spiritual Academy.”

“The Saint Spiritual Academy?” Mu Chen glanced at Liu Mubai.

Then, he nodded his head slightly before he hesitated for a moment. His originally sharp and cold gaze suddenly turned gentle.

“The second person I would like to ask is called Luo Li.” Mu Chen scratched his head and asked.

“Luo Li?” Mister Hao frowned and said faintly: “Luo Li. She was also assessed as a “King” Class within the Spiritual Road’s trial. She also obtained a core entry for the Five Great Academies.”

Everybody at the scene secretly clucked their tongues. What sort of insane individuals are within the Spiritual Road?

“She’s also a King Class…”

Mu Chen smiled. If it’s her, she definitely had the ability. It seems that she became a lot more powerful after he had left the Spiritual Road.

“Then which Spiritual Academy did she enter?” Mu Chen looked at Mister Hao nervously. He had made a promise with her. If it deviated from it, she would probably put on a terrible face when they met again with her personality. Though she would always have an indifferent expression.

“Luo Li entered the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy.”

Mister Hao stared at Mu Chen with a smile that didn’t seem like a smile. Then he said: “Originally, the Martial Spiritual Academy’s Lord Principal had personally spoken with her and wanted to let her enter the Martial Spiritual Academy. But in the end, she rejected and instead chose the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy.”

At the side, Chen Fan and the others were completely flabbergasted. Isn’t that simply too arrogant?

Hearing this, Mu Chen was also stunned. He had an exceptionally complex expression on his face.

The Spiritual Road.

As the cold night enveloped the lands, a warm bonfire rose up within the depths of a forest. Beside the bonfire, a boy was fiddling with the fire and caused the warm flames to float towards the right.

At that location, a girl with black clothes was sitting there quietly. Her delicate face was buried within her knees and she only revealed a pair of glass-like eyes. She stared at the handsome face of the black-haired boy in front of her as she was warmed by the flames. Her eyes curved gently like a crescent moon. However, the curvature was minimal and was impossible to detect.

“You…”

She suddenly extended her slender white hands over and pulled out a wood unconsciously. She casually asked: “After the Spiritual Road is over, which Spiritual Academy would you enter?”

“Me?” The boy thought for a moment. He smiled and said: “I’ll probably go to the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. I was born in the Northern Spiritual Realm, so I have a good feeling with the word North.”

The girl glanced at him. Her voice was flat, like the sounds of the valley, and she said: “The Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy? I don’t want to go there. It seems that we’ll have to separate after the Spiritual Road is over.”

The boy was stunned. He helplessly asked: “Then which Spiritual Academy are you planning to go to? Tell me, when the time comes, I’ll go to that one as well.”

The girl tilted her head and asked: “Why should I tell you?”

“Didn’t you say that you’ll help block all the arrows behind my back? You can’t say something when you didn’t mean it. You didn’t have this attitude when you first formed a team with me.” The boy said furiously.

“No. If I’m with you, it will bother my training. You should just go to your Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. I won’t choose that place.”

The girl gently let out an hmph sound. She did not wait for the boy to become angry and directly extinguished the fire with a wave of her hand. Then, she jumped onto a tree and said: “I’m going to sleep. It’s your turn to guard during the night today.”

“Luo Li, you didn’t keep your promise! Don’t act that you’re amazing because you’re pretty! Tell me clearly!”

Beneath the tree, an angry voice rang out endlessly from the boy. Above the tree, the girl gently leaned on the tree branch and gently lifted the corner of her mouths under the faint moonlight. At that instant, her charm even made the moonlight dimmer.

“Idiot.”

She gently smiled within her heart. Then, she slowly closed her eyes and feel asleep peacefully.

Mu Chen exhaled heavily. Then, he looked towards Mister Hao in front of him and said with a slight smile: “Mister Hao, I’ll select the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy.”

Chapter 88 – Conclusion

“Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy?”

Mister Hao smiled at Mu Chen and his eyes showed a meaning as if he understood. He soon nodded his head and said: “That’s fine. It’s up to you.”

It seems that Mu Chen decided to go to the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy because he shared a relationship with Luo Li. However, this was not within the scope of his consideration. With Luo Li’s strength and talent, she would definitely be dazzling even if she entered the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. As for Mu Chen, he was quite excellent as well. However, he lacked the final part of the Spiritual Road and temporarily had a bit of a gap compared to the monsters that had successfully completed the Spiritual Road’s trial.

However, Mister Hao knew that this gap would soon be covered by the boy in front of him. He knew that if it wasn’t for that sudden turn of events, Mu Chen’s final assessment within the Spiritual Road would perhaps reach the “King” Class as well. This was enough to prove his talent.

“How about the two of you?” Mister Hao looked at Mo Ling and a West Branch student, who haven’t decided on their Spiritual Academy yet.

“I’ll go to the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy as well.” Mo Ling scratched his head and said in an embarrassed way. In his eyes, the Five Great Academies were a mysterious and massive existence. Due to the trust he had in Mu Chen, he felt that it may be better if he was beside Mu Chen.

“I’ll go to the Martial Spiritual Academy.” The West Branch student also quickly replied.

Mister Hao nodded. This way, the entries from the Northern

Spiritual Academy were completely clear now. There would be 2 individuals going to the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy, 2 for the Azure Sky Spiritual Academy, 2 for the Myriad Phoenix Academy, 1 for the Martial Spiritual Academy and 1 for the Saint Spiritual Academy.

"You still have two months of preparation time. After two months, you will come to the Northern Spiritual Academy once again and I'll send you to the place prior to the Five Great Academies. Over there, you will meet the new students from all over the world. Moreover, there will be a trial waiting for you at that location. If you perform poorly during the trial, there is a danger of being deprived of your entry. Thus, you should train well during these two months." Mister Hao said faintly.

Chen Fan and the others suddenly cried out loud when they heard this. The Five Great Academies weren't really that easy to enter. Isn't it too harsh with all these tests?

When he heard this, Mu Chen's heart shook. If that's the case, wouldn't he be able to meet Luo Li at that place?

"Okay. The Entry Competition today is over now. For the remaining time, you can manage it by yourself. It is fine even if you take a temporary leave from the Northern Spiritual Academy. However, you must remember to come back after two months." Mister Hao waved his hand and leisurely left.

With Mister Hao's departure, Chen Fan and the others were relieved. Liu Mubai glanced coldly at Mu Chen before heading out directly. Even Chen Fan and the others could feel the rage within Liu Mubai clearly.

"Tch, he can't even admit that he lost." Chen Fan pouted his lips and said towards the back of Liu Mubai.

"Mu Chen. It seems that we'll be separated in the future. Haha. However, I will train hard within the Azure Sky Spiritual Academy. Moreover, I remember that the competitions within the

Five Great Academies are quite fierce. You must be careful; otherwise, I might have surpassed you by the time we meet again." Chen Fan laughed.

Mu Chen also smiled. The Five Great Academies weren't a tiny place like the Northern Spiritual Academy. It is a place that gathers all sort of talented individuals from all over the world. If they wanted to shine at that location, it wasn't an easy thing to do.

Because they managed to obtain an entry, Chen Fan and the others were extremely excited. After they spoke a few words with Mu Chen, they headed off towards their friend. Afterwards, only two beautiful girls remained beside Mu Chen as they stared at him.

"Congratulations." Hong Ling stared complicatedly at Mu Chen. It was evident that Mu Chen was the one in the limelight today. Nobody could have imagined that someone as strong as Liu Mubai would actually be defeated by him.

The ordinary boy in her memories back then had become someone bright and dazzling.

"I'll also have to congratulate Senior Hong Ling." Mu Chen gave a smile to Hong Ling. Then, he saw the resentful face of Tang Qian'Er beside him. He could not help but chuckle: "Sister Qian'Er. This is a happy event, why do you have such an expression?"

"Are you really that glad that you'll separate from me?" Tang Qian'Er pouted and said.

Mu Chen could only helplessly smile. It seems that it was wise to shut up.

"Are you close with that Luo Li?" Tang Qian'Er said in a bitter tone. Naturally, she saw the different expression Mu Chen had when he said that name.

"She's a friend that I met within the Spiritual Road. She's beautiful like Sister Qian'Er." Mu Chen smiled and said.

Tang Qian'Er's face turned red and she said: "Enough with your

sweet-talk, hmph, I'll go and work hard within the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy. In case we meet again, I'll represent the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy to defeat a person like you from the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy."

"When that happens, I must ask Sister Qian'Er to hold back for old times' sake." Mu Chen nodded and seriously said as he smiled.

"Puchi."

When Tang Qian'Er saw Mu Chen acting this way, she could not help but chuckle. The girl's bell-like laughter sound made Mu Chen's tired boy to slowly relax.

After the gloomy Liu Mubai reunited with Liu Qingtian, they did not remain long at this location and instead stormed away with a dark expression. However, they glanced coldly at Mu Feng and Mu Chen as they left.

"Dad, what should we do now?" Upon exiting the Northern Spiritual Square, Liu Mubai finally could not resist and asked. He could not accept this. After all, he had prepared himself so well for the seeded entry, yet he failed in the end!

With a cold expression, Liu Qingtian said: "Since that Mu Chen obtained the seeded entry, he will definitely be valued highly after he enters the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. Moreover, with his talent, his achievements would not be low in the future. Therefore, it is considered a great potential threat for us."

"Then..." Liu Mubai had to admit it. Mu Chen was indeed quite dangerous.

"What are you afraid of? Even though he has a seeded entry, what use is it if he could not enter the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy?"

Savageness passed through Liu Qingtian's expression: "As long as we decimate the Mu Territory, Mu Feng and Mu Chen would definitely die."

“Although Mu Chen had already obtained the entry, a battle between the Liu Territory and the Mu Territory is a dispute between forces within the Northern Spiritual Realm. Even the Five Great Academies cannot say anything regarding this matter. Moreover, if we accidentally kill a rascal during this battle, who could say anything about it?”

Liu Mubai’s eyes jumped. His eyes were filled with ominous color: “Then, when should we attack?”

“There’s no need to be that impatient. Isn’t there still two months?” Liu Qingtian’s eyes narrowed as he sneered: “Your grandpa is about to finish his training. As long as he is able to advance into the Three Heavens Stage, the Mu Territory will become a weakling that we could easily crush. Right now, we have to find something for the Mu Territory to do. This way, we could avoid letting them know this information. If they were to arrange it so that Mu Chen could escape when it happens, it would be a great disaster for us.”

Liu Mubai nodded heavily.

“For things like this, you either should not do it or otherwise, once you’ve done it, you must eradicate the problem completely! You must not leave the slightest chance of an impending future disaster!” Liu Qingtian said coldly and turned around to look back at the massive Northern Spiritual Square. Then, he waved his sleeves and walked away.

“Mu Feng. You and your son should just wait for your death!”

After the Entry Competition ended, Mu Chen remained at the Northern Spiritual Academy for a day before he returned back to the Mu Territory with Mu Feng. When they returned, the entire Mu City was decorated with lights. The atmosphere was filled with joy. As the Little Lord of the Mu Territory, Mu Chen had obtained the seeded entry for the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy. This was considered an extremely great news for the Mu Territory.

“Haha, Little Mu is amazing. This time, the Mu Territory really obtained a great deal of fame. It’s the first seeded entry within the Northern Spiritual Realm!” Zhou Ye led the crowd and headed forward. The stern expression that he always had was currently filled with delight.

After hearing Zhou Ye’s praise, Mu Chen also scratched his head.

“Enough. I’ve heard enough of these words during the past two days.” Mu Feng smiled and waved his hand. His face suddenly turned slightly serious as he said: “During this period of time, increase the alertness a bit. Since the Liu Territory lost the seeded entry this time, with his personality, Liu Qingtian would probably not let it go so easily.”

When Zhou Ye heard this, he also nodded and quickly sent down a command.

After returning to the Mu Estate, Mu Chen participated in the celebratory feast for a moment before heading back to his room. He sat cross-legged on his bed and stretched his waist. It had been quite tiring for him during the past few weeks.

“I should be able to see her after two months, right? I wonder if she changed since I haven’t met her for so long…”

Mu Chen muttered to himself. At this moment, his handsome face seemed extremely gentle. With Luo Li’s talent and her rating within the Spiritual Road, she would be valued highly no matter which Spiritual Academy she entered. However, nobody knew the reason why she chose the Northern Heaven Spiritual Academy aside from him.

“She completed the Spiritual Road’s trial. Right now, she’s probably far stronger than me…”

Mu Chen sat up fiercely. This was not allowed. If he had fallen behind her too much, it would be too disgraceful. Moreover, she was so beautiful. There must be a variety of excellent individuals

who coveted her. Regarding about this matter, he had seen enough of it during the Spiritual Road.

In the Spiritual Road, he was able to protect her. However, the situation was different right now. Thus, he could not feel satisfied just on this tiny bit of achievement!

Mu Chen took a deep breath and began to focus as he suppressed the stress within his body. He entered a cultivation state and began absorbing the Spiritual Aura within the world as he circulated the Great Pagoda Art.

Mu Chen's consciousness entered his body. After a while, he seemed to have suddenly recalled something and allowed his consciousness to enter his aurasea in order to look at a certain location within it.

At that location, a mysterious page of black paper was quietly floating. Above the black paper, a mysterious dark purple mandala flower extended out and formed a beautiful cage. In the center of the cage, there was a Nine Netherbird, who had restraint the flames on its black wings.

Mu Chen's consciousness stared at the Nine Netherbird. He hesitated for a moment before sending extremely gentle thoughts into the cage.

Boom!

Just when Mu Chen's gentle thoughts entered, the Nine Netherbird suddenly opened her eyes fiercely. Fierceness instantly filled its eyes and it viciously stared at Mu Chen.

Boom!

It crashed onto the light barrier formed by the cage and caused a chain reaction of ripples. Her vicious eyes seemed that it wanted to swallow Mu Chen up completely.

Mu Chen was shocked by the vicious aura coming from the Nine Netherbird. However, he could not trap it here forever. It was an

unstable bomb. Moreover, it was a bomb that was hidden within his body. If it exploded one day, Mu Chen would probably be blown to the extent where not even his bones would remain. Therefore, he must find a solution to this problem.

Regarding the solution, Mu Chen had thought with much deliberation and felt that he should use the method of negotiations. However, only god would know whether or not it would be effective.

But no matter what, he must attempt it.

Chapter 89 – Failed Negotiations

Mu Chen's consciousness stared at the Nine Netherbird, which was trapped within a cage. The latter also stared at him fiercely with a vicious gaze. From the vicious aura, Mu Chen had no doubt that the Nine Netherbird would rip him into pieces if it had the chance.

It was too difficult to tame a Spiritual Beast at its level.

"Cough…"

As he was stared at fiercely by the Nine Netherbird, Mu Chen let out a dry cough. He attempted to convey friendly thoughts over: "About that…Hello."

However, the Nine Netherbird was completely indifferent when facing his method of conveying friendliness. The vicious aura within its eyes did not show the slightest signs of weakening.

"I know that you can understand my words…" Mu Chen said helplessly: "For you to be in such a situation is actually your own fault. I did not provoke you, yet you dove into my body and attempted to erase my consciousness."

The Nine Netherbird looked at Mu Chen coldly and slowly retracted its body. Its elegant wings which were filled with black fire instantly laid down lazily on top of the mandala flower.

"If we continue to be in a stalemate, it would not be beneficial to either of us. Why don't we discuss it a bit and find a method that would benefit the both of us?" Mu Chen led the discussion and said.

However, against his induction, the Nine Netherbird's eyes seemed to show a hint of ridicule and it simply ignored him.

"Oi, can't you give me a bit of face? At the very least, this is my place. Do you believe that I'll use this thing to deal with you?" Seeing the Nine Netherbird ignore him, Mu Chen could not help

but feel a bit angry.

When the Nine Netherbird heard this, the ridicule within its eyes increased and a special thought was conveyed out as Mu Chen became angry: “Despicable human, if you could control it, would you have to talk with me?”

“So you really knew how to communicate with humans!” When he was aware of these thoughts, Mu Chen’s heart jumped. No matter what, the Nine Netherbird had finally communicated with him! However, during the communication, it had always looked down upon him and mocked him.

“You treacherous humans really know how to sweet-talk. You just took a fancy to my Soul Essence and wanted to attempt to ingest me. What a low quality method.” The Nine Netherbird sent out cold thoughts over.

“Hmph, you seemed to have said it that way so that you’re quite honorable and just. Don’t you want to erase my consciousness? Moreover, it was entirely your fault. If you did not have bad thoughts, why would you be trapped inside my body?” Mu Chen sneered.

“You think you can trap me forever? My Nine Netherbird’s clan possesses the blood of the Undying Bird. With your strength, it is impossible for you to kill me. My strength will gradually recover and when that happens, the first thing I’ll do is to kill you!” Viciousness was filled within the thoughts conveyed by the Nine Netherbird.

“Then, why don’t you try it? We’ll see who will last until the end!”

Mu Chen grunted. He knew that it was impossible to negotiate with the Nine Netherbird. This damn beast was too arrogant. It was simply impossible to discuss how they would mutually benefit.

Mu Chen’s consciousness gradually faded away and he opened his

tightly closed eyes. Then, he pouted. This damn Nine Netherbird...

“I must think of a way to get rid of this trouble, otherwise, it will become a calamity in the future.”

Mu Chen secretly thought to himself. He did not understand much about the Nine Netherbird. If what it said was true, perhaps Mu Chen would be the one in trouble. Therefore, he must find a method to deal with this trouble.

However, Mu Chen knew that it wasn’t easy to think of a solution. The only thing right now that could restrain the Nine Netherbird was the mysterious black paper within his body. However, Mu Chen did not obtain the slightest harvest when he re-examined it later. Therefore, there was no choice aside from giving up. Perhaps his strength was not enough, so he was not able to understand the mysteries of this mysterious black paper.

Thus, he could only slowly deal with the matter regarding the Nine Netherbird.

In the next few days, Mu Chen did not give up hope and would occasionally head over to communicate with the Nine Netherbird when he was resting. However, the latter completely ignored his words and laid down on top of the mandala flower. Its eyes were cold and were filled with ridicule. It was as if it was watching Mu Chen speaking a monologue.

After attempting several times, Mu Chen finally gave up on this naïve action of his. It seems that it was not feasible to reason with the Nine Netherbird. He could only hurry and increase his strength. Once he advanced to the Spirit Stage, he would have the ability to ingest a Spiritual Beast’s Soul Essence. At that time, he would be able to cause a threat to this Nine Netherbird.

When that happens, that damned feathery beast would look him directly in the eye.

After he temporarily gave up on the matter regarding the Nine

Netherbird, Mu Chen spent two days with Mister Wen Ling. Based on Mu Feng's information, it seems that Mister Wen Ling was about to advance to a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master soon. If he succeeds, it would definitely be excellent news to the Mu Territory.

After all, there weren't more than 5 individuals that had reached the Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master within the entire Northern Spiritual Realm. The past Mu Territory never had a Spiritual Array Master at this level. Therefore, once Mister Wen Ling succeeds, it would be of great help to the reputation of the Mu Territory.

As for Mister Wen Ling, who would always have a solemn and dull expression, he had become considerable gentle towards Mu Chen. Apparently, he had heard that Mu Chen had used a Spiritual Array to deal with Liu Mubai during the Entry Competition. This act had made Wen Ling feel quite honored.

Within the quiet courtyard, sounds of footsteps suddenly emerged. Mister Wen Ling, who was training with his eyes closed, opened his eyes and let out a faint smile. Everybody within the Mu Estate knew that he did not like being disturbed. Therefore, nobody would come over to his place at this time aside from Mu Chen.

"Hehe, Mister Wen. I've come over to see when you'll make a breakthrough." As expected, Mu Chen's figure appeared in the doorway of the courtyard. The boy directed a smile towards him and greeted him.

Wen Ling stared at the boy amused. He helplessly shook his head and said: "Boy, you don't have to play any tricks. Just say it directly if you want the Diagram Arrays. You've bothered me for a couple of days now. Even if you don't feel annoyed about it, I will."

Noticing that Wen Ling had seen through his thoughts, Mu Chen could only scratch his head awkwardly. Diagram Arrays were considered to be the thing which was valued the most by a Spiritual Array Master. He had felt guilty about asking to look

through Wen Ling's collection of Diagram Arrays.

Wen Ling stared at the awkward Mu Chen and let out a laugh. Then, he beckoned Mu Chen over and said: "From tomorrow onwards, I'll seclude myself and attempt to breakthrough to a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master. When I advance to a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master, the previous Diagram Arrays are not suitable for me anymore. It's fine if I teach it to you."

When Mu Chen heard this, his face was suddenly filled with delight.

"How many Spiritual Seals can you condense right now?" Wen Ling stared at Mu Chen and asked.

"18 Seals." Mu Chen pondered for a moment before speaking. Because of his cultivation, the Spiritual Energy within his body had gradually become stronger. Therefore, the amount of Spiritual Energy required to condense seals had increased.

Although Wen Ling was mentally prepared for it, he could not help but smack his lips when he heard Mu Chen saying this. The latter's talent in Spiritual Arrays was considerably shocking. With 18 Spiritual Seals, it is considerable to be quite excellent amongst the Rank 1 Spiritual Array Masters.

"The "Devouring Tigerblaze Spiritual Array" that I taught you previously was one of top 3 most powerful Spiritual Arrays that I know."

Wen Ling smiled. He clenched his hand and a scroll containing a flashing Diagram Array emerged: "This Diagram Array is called "Nine Heavenly Lightning Spiritual Array", it is considered to be my strongest Spiritual Array."

When Mu Chen heard this, his eyes suddenly lit up. This was Mister Wen Ling's strongest Spiritual Array?

"This Spiritual Array requires a total of 20 Spiritual Seals. Among the Rank 1 Spiritual Arrays, it is considered to be at the

pinnacle. Of course, the arrangement of this Spiritual Array is considered to be quite complicated and is comparable to a few Rank 2 Spiritual Arrays. I originally thought that you would not be able to touch upon it yet, but since you are able to enter the “Heart Array” state, it will greatly reduce the difficulty level.” As he mentioned the Heart Array State, Wen Ling’s face was filled with envy. To a Spiritual Array Master, that state was something that they desire dearly.

“Once this “Nine Heavenly Lightning Spiritual Array” is successfully arranged, nobody within the Spiritual Rotation Stage could block it. Even Spirit Stage Initial Phase powerhouses would not underestimate it.”

Mu Chen could hear his heart pounding. So this “Nine Heavenly Lightning Spiritual Array” was actually this powerful.

“I’ll hand this Diagram Array over to you. However, you must remember not to act recklessly if you do not feel certain that you can arrange it, so that you will be able to avoid being hit by the backlash of the Spiritual Array.” Wen Ling handed the Diagram Array over to Mu Chen and warned him seriously.

“Yes!”

Mu Chen hurriedly responded. He carefully took the Diagram Array and spread it open slowly. A flash of lightning entered his eyes. To any ordinary person, a complicated mess emerged. However, to a Spiritual Array Master, a Diagram Array filled with mysterious trajectories had emerged within their eyes.

Mu Chen stood at that spot and stared at the Diagram Array within his hand. His expression was mesmerizing as if he was immersed within the Diagram Array. When Wen Ling noticed this, he smiled faintly and quietly left the courtyard.

When Mu Chen woke up from his mesmerizing state, the color of the sky had slowly become dark and he hurriedly returned back to his room. During the next couple of days, he spent all his

concentration on the “Nine Heavenly Lightning Spiritual Array”. However, he knew that it was impossible for him to arrange this Spiritual Array right now even with the help of the Heart Array State. Therefore, he did not act recklessly and instead studied it over and over again. This allowed him to firmly memorize these complex Spiritual Energy light beam trajectories.

For a full five days, Mu Chen was immersed in his study about the Spiritual Array. Until one day, he suddenly heard a noisy sound coming from outside the courtyard, only now did he walk out while frowning. Then, he noticed a few guards rushing over to the foreyard. Based on the atmosphere, it seemed that something was wrong.

“What happened?” Mu Chen stopped a guard and asked in a deep voice.

“Little Lord.”

When the guard saw Mu Chen, he hurriedly bowed down. Then, he hesitated for a moment before saying: “A big problem occurred. One of our Mu Territory’s cities suffered an attack and the City Lord, Chen Xiong, was killed.”

When Mu Chen heard this, the color of his face suddenly changed.

Chapter 90 – Mang Yin Mountain

“Uncle Xiong was killed?!”

When he heard the guard’s words, Mu Chen’s breathing stopped for a moment and his hands clenched tightly together. The Mu Territory’s five City Lords, Duan Wei, Chen Xiong and the others, were all loyal individuals, who had helped Mu Feng conquer the lands. In the end, they had finally managed to create the Mu Territory within the Northern Spiritual Realm. When Mu Chen was small, he had received a lot of care from them and shared feelings with them. Thus, the sudden news of Chen Xiong’s death made his face completely pale and filled him with anger.

“Hu.”

Mu Chen took a deep breath and suppressed his anger and killing intent within his heart. His face darkened as he charged towards the Meeting Room. No matter who did it, Mu Chen would never forgive him!

When Mu Chen arrived at the Meeting Room, he noticed that a lot of people were surrounding it. All of their faces were filled with rage. Chen Xiong was quite bold and generous. Moreover, he had great popularity within the Mu Territory. Coupled with the fact that he was a veteran general for the Mu Territory, he was respected by everyone. Since he was suddenly killed, everybody had become furious.

“The Little Lord has arrived!”

Everybody hurried to bow when they saw Mu Chen rushing over. Then, they got out of the way and watched Mu Chen with admiring eyes. When Mu Chen defeated Liu Mubai during the Entry Competition and demonstrated a frightening degree of strength they noticed that his combat abilities had surpassed even the other City Lords like Duan Wei.

Mu Chen nodded his head and entered the Meeting Room. At that moment, rage filled the entire meeting room. Mu Feng sat at the head of the table and had ferocious eyes as if he wanted to devour people. Below him, Zhou Ye's face was also extremely terrifying.

"Duan Wei, what on earth happened?" Mu Feng glanced at Mu Chen, who had entered and didn't say anything. His dark eyes turned towards Duan Wei and asked.

Duan Wei gritted his teeth and said: "According to the information we have obtained, it was done by Mang Yin Mountain."

"Mang Yin Mountain?"

Mu Chen frowned. In the Northern Spiritual Realm, there were many other forces aside from the Nine Territories. And this Mang Yin Mountain was considered as one of the strongest among the other forces. Their strength was not too far apart from the Nine Territories and were known as the strongest underworld forces within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

"We never interfere with the Mang Ying Mountain and would mind our own businesses. Why would they suddenly attack us?" Killing intent flashed through Zhou Ye's eyes while he asked this.

"The Mang Yin Mountain has secretly been in contact with the Liu Territory...This matter must be related to the Liu Territory." Mu Feng narrowed his eyes slightly and said in a cold voice.

"The Liu Territory? It's those trashes again! Did they really think that our Mu Territory is afraid of them?!" Zhou Ye smacked the back of his hand and shouted out in anger.

Mu Chen's eyes were also completely cold. If it was the Liu Territory, it might be related to the fact that he seized the seeded entry. With Liu Qingtian's personality, he would definitely do something...

"What should we do right now? Mang Yin Mountain has already

attacked our Mu Territory and killed one of our City Lords. If we do not act, I'm afraid that it would cause great damage to our reputation." Zhou Ye said in a deep voice.

Mu Feng slowly placed his palm on top of his teacup on the table. Then, he suddenly pressed his palm down and turned the teacup into powder. His tone was as cold as a blade and he said: "How can we ignore it? My Mu Territory will definitely decimate this Mang Yin Mountain!"

"The boss of the Mang Yin Mountain, Yang Gui, is someone at the Spirit Stage Initial Phase. Under his command, there are two individuals that have reached the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase. If we're going to attack, then let me personally lead the team." Zhou Ye said.

When Mu Feng heard this, he hesitated slightly before nodding his head. He would have liked to personally lead the troops. However, since the Liu Territory had thoughts about his Mu Territory, he must take charge on guarding Mu City and watch over the Liu Territory. This way, they would be able to avoid having their elite troops being eliminated by the Liu Territory when they were sent out.

Zhou Ye's strength was also at the Spirit Stage Initial Phase. By bringing over elite troops, there was no need to fear the Mang Yin Mountain...

"Dad, I'll go together with Uncle Zhou." Beside him, Mu Chen, who had been listening to the conversation, suddenly spoke up.

Mu Feng frowned and said: "It's too dangerous."

"Dad, with my strength, unless a Spirit Stage personally attacks me, nobody can pose a threat to me." Mu Chen said with a faint smile.

With this, Mu Feng hesitated. He only now remembered that Mu Chen was considered to be an expert. Among the Mu Territory's

experts, nobody could really have an advantage in a fight against him aside from himself and Zhou Ye.

“Since Little Mu has the heart to do this, then let him come with me. He is considered to be quite excellent with his strength right now. Moreover, he is proficient in Spiritual Arrays and will be a big help.” Zhou Ye smiled and said.

Mu Feng thought for a moment before he nodded. Indeed, Mu Chen’s combat abilities were in no way inferior to Duan Wei and the others. If he went as well, it would be a big help.

“Then, you should follow and head out. However, you have to remember to listen to Uncle Zhou’s arrangements. If you disobey the commands and recklessly charge out, I will not forgive you!” Mu Feng warned him seriously. The Mang Yin Mountain was quite greedy and selfish. Moreover, they would be extremely vicious when they fight. If they harbored any underestimation towards them, they would probably be overturned.

“Okay.”

Mu Chen nodded. A cold light flashed through his eyes. Mang Yin Mountain. Since you’ve dared to attack our Mu Territory, then you should be prepared for a bloodbath!

When Zhou Ye acts, he would do everything at lightning speed. Once he made his decision, he would immediately execute it. He spent less than 2 hours to summon hundreds of elite troops. Then, he brought the two City Lords, Duan Wei, Tie Lang and Mu Chen as they charged straight out of the Mu Territory and headed towards the western direction of the Mu Territory.

Mang Yin Mountain was located at the Mang Yin Mountain Range. It was connected to the Mu Territory’s west borders. The Xiong City that Chen Xiong was guarding was located at that location. It protected the borders of the Mu Territory. However, it was also because of this that the Xiong City was the first target of Mang Yin Mountain. Chen Xiong was even personally killed by the

boss of Mang Yin Mountain, Yang Gui...

When Mu Chen and the others arrived at Xiong City, the day was approaching sunset. The city which originally bustled with popularity had its city gates destroyed. The guards at the gate were all looking frightened and constantly scanned the area vigilantly.

Zhou Ye directly brought the troops into the center of the city. The awful killing intent in the atmosphere attracted a lot of surprised gazes. However, when they noticed that the leader was Zhou Ye, their hearts jumped. It seemed that the Mu Territory was quite furious. They would even send out a Spirit Stage powerhouse.

Zhou Ye and the others directly rushed to the City Lord's Estate. At that location, a middle-aged man was waiting for them a long time ago. When he saw them, he hurriedly rushed forward.

"Master Zhou, Little Lord."

This person was the Vice-City Lord of Xiong City. His surname was Cheng while his name was Yong. Since Chen Xiong was killed, he temporarily managed Xiong City. However, his appearance was covered with bandages and showed that he had suffered severe injuries when they were under attacked by the Mang Yin Mountain.

Zhou Ye waved his hand and sat down in the living room of the city lord estate. His eyes darkened and he said: "Are there any movements from the Mang Yin Mountain?"

"We have been monitoring them during this period of time. However, they retreated back into the Mang Yin Mountain Range ever since they killed the City Lord and did not cause any other commotions." Cheng Yong quickly replied.

"It seems that bastard, Yang Gui, knows that the Mu Territory will not forgive him that easily. He's only acting like a coward right now?" Zhou Ye said with a cold expression.

“Master Zhou, Mang Yin Mountain Range is extremely steep and they have tightly guarded some paths that we must pass. If we were to forcibly attack, there will be a lot of casualties.” Chen Yong said.

Mang Yin Mountain Range was quite high in altitude. Even for a Spirit Stage powerhouse like Zhou Ye, it was impossible for him to fly up there. Unless it was a powerhouse, who had ingested a Spiritual Beast’s Soul Essence which possessed a flying ability like Mu Feng, it would be impossible for them to get there. Moreover, this was only limited to its user. It was not realisticly possible to bring that many men up there.

“Moreover, the most troublesome thing isn’t this. The locations near the Mang Yin Mountain Range were infested by the underworld forces within the Northern Spiritual Realm. Aside from the Mang Yin Mountain, there are other underworld forces there. They have a bit of fear towards the Nine Territories. However, if we were to charge in, we would be prompting them to join forces against a common enemy. This way, it would be quite troubling for us.” Cheng Yong sighed and said.

When Mu Chen heard these words, he frowned. It seemed that this matter wasn’t as simple as he thought.

“Aside from Mang Yin Mountain, which underworld forces are the most powerful?” Zhou Ye asked in a solemn voice.

“It’s Nine Dragon City. Their strength is only second to Mang Yin Mountain. Moreover, they have quite a lot of power to rally supporters among the underworld forces. If they were willing to help, we would be able to directly cross through the Mang Yin Mountain Range and charge straight into the Mang Yin Mountain’s lair.” Chen Yong thought for a moment and said.

“Who’s the leader of Nine Dragon City?”

“Lei Shan, he is also someone with the strength of a Spirit Stage Initial Phase.”

“Lei Shan, huh...” Zhou Ye nodded his head slightly. He had a vague impression of this name as he was a well-known powerhouse within the Northern Spiritual Realm. Back in the days, they had met before. However, they were only acquaintances and Zhou Ye did not have a close relationship with him.

“I’ll bring some men to Nine Dragon City tomorrow.” Zhou Ye pondered as he spoke. The matter right now was quite troubling. If they were able to get acquainted with Nine Dragon City, it would be much easier to deal with the situation. Otherwise, it would be quite troubling.

Early in the morning of the second day, Zhou Ye brought Mu Chen, Duan Wei and the others towards Nine Dragon City. They did not bring too many troops over. After all, the underworld forces were quite cautious. If they brought too many men over, it may cause Nine Dragon City to be alert of them.

Nine Dragon City was located on the north side of the Mang Yin Mountain Range and it guarded several roads. Merchant teams would have to take the initiative to pay a toll to pass through. And towards these merchants, who knew how to behave, Nine Dragon City would not cause any trouble. Although they were underworld forces, they still wished for peace and wealth. Nobody enjoyed fighting bloody battles.

Zhou Ye and the others headed directly to Nine Dragon City. After two hours, they reached Nine Dragon City. However, what welcomed them was a tightly shut city gate and a few wary gazes from the shadows.

Zhou Ye stared at the tightly closed city gates and frowned. It seemed that Nine Dragon City had expected that the Mu Territory would head over here. Based on its action, were they planning on not helping?

“Friend from Nine Dragon City, could you notify Leader Lei that Mu Territory’s Zhou Ye wishes to meet him?” Zhou Ye sat on his

horse and cupped his hands on his mouth as he shouted out. The shout was wrapped by dense Spiritual Energy and emitted out from midair.

“My dad has secluded himself for training. He is unable to meet with guests, so please leave.”

After Zhou Ye shouted, a cold voice sounded out from the top of the city gates. Everybody’s gazes turned towards that location and noticed a vigorous figure emerging. It was a young girl dressed in green clothes. She had a slim figure and her tightly fit clothes highlighted her slender body. Her appearance was originally quite beautiful. However, her short hair made her seem quite valiant. At that moment, she had crossed her arms and stared down from above at Mu Chen and the others with slightly pouted lips.

When Zhou Ye heard this, he let out a faint smile and said: “My apologies. If we cannot meet with Leader Lei today, we would not be able to leave that easily. I hope that this miss would open the city gates.

“You want to charge in forcibly? Then, you’ll have to ask whether I will agree to it!”

The girl lifted her eye brow and let out a grunt. She gripped her slender hand and a Spiritual Seal emerged on her fingertips.

When Mu Chen saw the Spiritual Seal, his eyes were filled with surprise. The girl in front of him was actually a Spiritual Array Master?

Chapter 91 – Persuasion

"A Spiritual Array Master?"

When Mu Chen noticed the Spiritual Seals on the girl's slender hands, Zhou Ye also became aware of them. A hint of surprise immediately appeared on his face. He never imagined that there would be a Spiritual Array Master within Nine Dragon City.

But based on her appearance, it seems that this girl was merely an ordinary Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master.

"The people from the Mu Territory should hurry and leave. Otherwise, you shouldn't blame me for being rude." The Spiritual Seals circulated around the girl's slender fingers as she glanced at Zhou Ye and the others.

"Is this how you treat your guests?" Zhou Ye frowned and asked.

"Nine Dragon City is unfamiliar with the Mu Territory. Therefore, you are not considered as guests." The girl lifted the corner of her lips and the Spiritual Seals located at her hand quickly integrated into the air. From that location, a Spiritual Energy fluctuation emitted out and soon, an icy-blue Spiritual Array was formed in mid-air. It emitted a faint chill to the surroundings.

"Since you're refusing to leave, don't blame me for this!" The girl said softly and waved her hand. The chill from within the Spiritual Array suddenly swept out and condensed into many ice spears. Afterwards, they shot off towards Zhou Ye and the others. It brought sounds of wind breaking as well as a freezing chill.

When Zhou Ye noticed this, his eyes sank. However, just when he was about to move, Mu Chen took a step forward. He did not perform any actions, yet the air in front of him suddenly fluctuated. A fiery red Spiritual Array was quickly formed and spewed out flame light pillars. They directly evaporated the

numerous spears that were shot over.

“Huh?”

Seeing this, the young girl turned to look at Mu Chen and said with a surprised voice, “You’re also a Spiritual Array Master?”

“This young lady, we, the Mu Territory, came over here in order to give an opportunity to the Nine Dragon City. With Leader Lei’s positive outlook, I believe that he would not give up on this rare opportunity. Of course, there is a chance that I have overestimated Leader Lei. But if that’s the case, then Nine Dragon City will never be able to have any great achievements.” Mu Chen said in a faint voice as he stared at the beautiful girl.

“You dare say such words about my father?!”

When the girl heard Mu Chen’s words, she lifted her eyebrows. But just when she was about to attack once again in anger, a sudden cry rang out: “Yin’Er, stop!”

When Mu Chen heard this voice, he was stunned. That voice sounded quite familiar.

Just when Mu Chen frowned, a figure appeared next to the young girl. He turned his gaze over and was startled, “Brother Lei Cheng?”

Beside the young girl was a muscular man with bare arms. The appearance of that man was the same person that he met within the Northern Spiritual Field Training, the Leader of the Thunderstorm Team, Lei Cheng.

“Haha, Little Brother Mu Chen, long time no see.” Lei Chen cupped his hands towards Mu Chen and said with a smile.

“Mu Chen?” The girl beside him was stunned when she heard this name. Her beautiful eyes immediately stared at Mu Chen. Within her eyes, there was a hint of curiosity as well as a provocative feeling: “As in the Mu Chen, who obtained the only seeded entry within the Northern Spiritual Academy?”

Lei Cheng smiled and nodded, “Open the city gates.”

“Second Uncle, but…” The young girl quickly spoke.

Lei Cheng shrugged and said, “It’s your father’s decision.”

The young girl mumbled to herself before waving her hand. Moments later, a few individuals slowly opened the heavy city gates. Mu Chen and Zhou Ye exchanged gazes with each other before riding in with their horses.

“Brother Lei Cheng, why are you in Nine Dragon City?” After they entered the city, Mu Chen asked Lei Cheng in confusion.

“Haha, that’s because my brother is Nine Dragon City’s Leader. Naturally, I will be here as well. However, I often bring others to hunt Spiritual Beasts, that’s why I formed an Adventurer’s Team.” Lei Cheng said as he laughed.

“Oi, you’re Mu Chen? I heard that you’re a Spiritual Array Master as well? Since when does the Northern Spiritual Academy teach students about Spiritual Arrays?” The young girl asked with a pout as she stared up and down at Mu Chen.

Within her tone, it seemed that she felt quite a bit of anger towards the Northern Spiritual Academy. This made Mu Chen a bit suspicious.

“Ohoho, this is my brother’s daughter, Lei Yin. This girl is extremely fond of Spiritual Arrays and possesses quite the talent in them. However, Nine Dragon City has no way to invite experienced Spiritual Array Masters over to teach her. She has studied it over the years by herself and has a bit of an achievement. She could barely be considered as a Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master.” Lei Cheng said as he introduced the young girl.

When he heard this, Mu Chen stared in surprise at the young girl. She actually relied on herself and became a Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master. It seemed that she’s quite talented in that aspect.

“Although she’s talented in Spiritual Array Cultivation, her

Spiritual Aura Cultivation isn't as good. She originally wanted to go to the Northern Spiritual Academy, but she did not reach the requirements."

"Uh..." Mu Chen stared at the girl whose eyes were filled with resentment. He finally knew why the girl had so much hatred towards the Northern Spiritual Academy.

"Did you guys come because of the matter regarding Mang Yin Mountain?" Lei Chen looked at Mu Chen and Zhou Ye as he spoke.

Zhou Ye nodded and said: "I hope that you can take the trouble and allow us to meet with Leader Lei."

"About this matter, big brother said that we should not intervene. However, since you've already come and based on the fact that Mu Chen had once helped me, I'll bring you over. As for whether or not you can convince my brother, that will depend on you." Lei Cheng said helplessly.

"Thank you, Brother Lei Cheng." Mu Chen smiled and said.

Lei Cheng smiled and led the way. The girl called Lei Yin stared at Mu Chen a few times before pouting her lips and following them.

Mu Chen and Zhou Ye both followed Lei Cheng and entered Nine Dragon City. Along the way, they met many men, who were sweating madly as they trained. The aura coming from them was not weak. Moreover, their bodies had the faint smell of blood. It was evident that they weren't people that could be easily dealt with. Nine Dragon City was definitely quite powerful.

The two of them followed Mu Chen and headed straight towards the main stronghold. At that location, a burly middle-aged man, who looked quite similar to Lei Cheng, was sitting on the seat in front. His sharp eyes stared at Mu Chen and Zhou Ye as they entered.

It was obvious that this person was the Leader of Nine Dragon

City, Lei Shan. He is also a powerful figure only second to Yang Gui among the Northern Spiritual Realm's underworld forces.

"Friend from the Mu Territory, I already know the reason why you've came." Lei Shan stared at Zhou Ye and Mu Chen as he said in a faint voice: "However, this is a grudge between your Mu Territory and Mang Yin Mountain. We, Nine Dragon City, will not participate in it."

When Zhou Ye heard this, his heart sank. As expected, Nine Dragon City did not want to help. But just when he was about to speak, a faint voice came from beside him, "Uncle Zhou, leave this to me."

Zhou Ye was stunned as he glanced at Mu Chen. He saw the serious expression on the boy's face and hesitated for a moment before nodding his head.

"Leader Lei, I have heard a long time ago the story how your created this Nine Dragon City. Within the Northern Spiritual Realm's underworld forces, you are considered to be a well-known figure. However, from what I've seen today, you have disappointed me." Seeing Zhou Ye nod his head, Mu Chen took a step forward and said this with a faint smile.

Lei Shan's sharp eyes stared directly at Mu Chen. However, he waved his hand in order to prevent his men from attacking due to frustration. He said in a faint voice: "If you want to provoke me to act, then you're still too inexperienced."

"I wonder if Leader Lei has the ambition to make it so that Nine Dragon City becomes the leader of the underworld forces within the Northern Spiritual Realm?" Mu Chen said slowly.

Lei Shan's eyes narrowed. However, he still did not speak.

"Among the underworld forces right now, Mang Yin Mountain's strength has been growing. They have gradually started to expand and conquered a few underworld forces. Currently, they are

considered to be the strongest force within the underworld. About this point, I believe that Leader Lei should agree to it?”

Lei Shan nodded indifferently.

“Since Mang Yin Mountain has expanded their forces this rapidly, it should be easy to see their ambition. And from now on, with the Liu Territory helping them secretly, I believe that their ambitions will not stop here. Perhaps in the nearby future, Mang Yin Mountain will integrate all the underworld forces within the Northern Spiritual Realm into their group. When that happens, Nine Dragon City will only have two paths to choose. One is to be conquered by them and become a part of Mang Yin Mountain. The second is to resist. However, it is evident that Nine Dragon City is currently not Mang Yin Mountain’s opponent.”

Lei Shan’s calm face gradually revealed a few changes. Shortly after, he said, “These are just your speculations.”

“Yes, they are indeed just speculations. But what if it’s true? Is Leader Lei willing to use the futures of all the lives within Nine Dragon City and gamble that Mang Yin Mountain will not do it? To be honest, you should understand them better than me.” Mu Chen smiled. Before he came over here, he had carefully analysed the situation among the underworld forces within the Northern Spiritual Realm as well as how Mang Yin Mountain acts.

Within the main stronghold, Nine Dragon City’s executives looked at each other. Their eyes had become a little serious. It was evident that Mu Chen’s words had made them secretly feel uneasy. After all, they truly understood Mang Yin Mountain. If they were to obtain support from the Liu Territory, they might really have this ambition.

Moreover, in the Northern Spiritual Realm’s underworld forces, the only one that could oppose Mang Yin Mountain was their Nine Dragon City. Therefore, if Mang Yin Mountain wanted to integrate all the underworld forces within the Northern Spiritual Realm,

they must attack Nine Dragon City.

Zhou Ye could feel the changes occurring within the Nine Dragon City's executives. A hint of delight flashed through his eyes and he quietly gave a thumbs up to Mu Chen. He never expected that this little guy would be so clever with his words as well as having such keen insight. He specifically pointed out the weak point within Nine Dragon City.

"Then, what do you want to do?" Lei Shan frowned. He had finally loosened up his tone a little bit.

"We, the Mu Territory, originally did not plan on caring about the affairs of the Northern Spiritual Realm's underworld forces. However, since Mang Yin Mountain took the initiative to provoke us, the Mu Territory will never forgive them. Therefore, this is also a chance for Nine Dragon City. If we were to join forces, it is enough to completely eradicate Mang Yin Mountain. When that happens, Nine Dragon City will become the strongest underworld force in the Northern Spiritual Realm. Moreover, you will have space to expand once again." Mu Chen said without any hesitation.

"Then, won't my Nine Dragon City offend the Liu Territory? The Liu Territory is the strongest force within the Northern Spiritual Realm. It is not a wise idea to offend them because of the Mu Territory." Lei Shan said slowly.

"However, you do not have a choice. The Liu Territory dislikes you and they directly chose to support the Mang Yin Mountain. Right now, it is not about the issue of offending the Liu Territory. Instead, it is the Liu Territory wanting to help Mang Yin Mountain to get rid of you as a stepping stone." Mu Chen said sincerely as he loosened his hands. "They have already decided to eliminate you. Isn't it stupid for you to worry about offending them?"

Lei Shan's face had turned increasingly ugly. Mu Chen's words had hurt his pride.

"Right now, this is the only chance for you. If the Mu Territory

fails to get rid of Mang Yin Mountain, we can only leave. However, when that happens, the one that will be in trouble will be Nine Dragon City."

Mu Chen smiled. His eyes gradually turning cold: "Thus, if Leader Lei is far-sighted, he should not worry about those rules and directly join forces with us to eradicate Mang Ying Mountain!"

"Not only will this allow you to get rid of a potential crisis, it will give you a great opportunity!"

"Leader Lei, what do you think!?" Mu Chen's final words finally began to fade away.

Within the main stronghold, the atmosphere had become tense. All the Nine Dragon City's executives, Lei Cheng, Lei Yin and the others were all staring at Lei Shan, whose face was changing. His next decision would determine the future fate of the Nine Dragon City.

Time slowly passed by. Mu Chen had also gradually turned tense. Although he said everything that he should say, if it could not dispel Lei Shan's concerns, then it couldn't be helped. He could only think of another plan to deal with Mang Yin Mountain.

Among the tense silence, Lei Shan finally let out his breath. He then lifted his head, staring sharply at the nervous Mu Chen as he slowly nodded his head.

"Fine. We, the Nine Dragon City, will cooperate with you and eliminate Mang Yin Mountain!"

Chapter 92 – Teaming Up

The tense atmosphere inside the main stronghold was instantly broken due to Lei Shan's sentence. Not only did delight fill Zhou Ye's eyes, even Nine Dragon City's executives were secretly relieved. They, too, were actually tangled between the gains and losses. However, since Lei Shan had made a decision, they would have a pillar of support behind the decision.

"Haha, Leader Lei, may we have a pleasant cooperation." Zhou Ye cupped his hands as he smiled towards Lei Shan.

Lei Shan also stood up. His gaze looked at Mu Chen for a while and he said: "Back in the days, I've met Mu Feng a few times, even I would have to admit that I admire how he treats others. However, I never expected that his son would be even more amazing than him."

"Leader Lei, that's too much flattery. I only spoke the truth." Mu Chen secretly loosened up the tense feeling he had and smiled.

"What you said was certainly true. Mang Yin Mountain has become more and more arrogant and they caused many troubles to our Nine Dragon City. In the past, I did not want to cause anymore issues, so I endured it. But based on the situation now, it seems that I will only destroy many brothers' futures and lives if I continue to endure."

A hint of murderous intent flashed through Lei Shan's eyes. He said: "Since he, Yang Gui, isn't planning on letting my Nine Dragon City go, then I, Lei Shan, won't let him do as he pleases!"

Zhou Ye nodded and said: "We, the Mu Territory's men, will attack Mang Yin Mountain tomorrow. As for the other underworld forces within the Mang Yin Mountain Range, I must trouble Leader Lei to inform them. Our main goal is Mang Yin Mountain. We will not attack any other underworld forces."

“Relax. With the reputation of my Nine Dragon City, the brothers that we will meet on the path will certainly give way. I believe that they won't say anything about it.” Lei Shan waved his hand and said in a deep voice.

“Leader Lei. You should know that we would have to eliminate them from their roots. Since we have decided to attack Mang Yin Mountain, we must not give them any opportunities. Therefore, I hope that the Nine Dragon City will give us their full support, so that we can eradicate all future troubles.” Mu Chen said softly.

“Heh. You’re still so young, yet you’re more ruthless than us.” Lei Shan smirked for a moment. He stared strangely at Mu Chen. A hint of admiration filled his eyes. As someone from the underworld, it was quite pleasing to see such ruthlessness.

“Yang Gui killed one of my seniors. If I do not get revenge, I will be worse than a woman.” Mu Chen shook his head and said.

“Oi, so what if it’s a woman? Are you looking down on women?!” Just as Mu Chen’s voice faded away, a shout sounded out beside him. He noticed that Lei Yin was glaring angrily at him with her beautiful eyes.

Lei Shan laughed awkwardly.

“Haha. My family’s Yin’Er isn’t in any way inferior to males. Mu Chen, you should not offend her. She is the person who understands Mang Yin Mountain Range the most. Therefore, if she were to guide you around Mang Yin Mountain, you will be able to bypass their defensive fortresses and head straight to their lair.” Lei Shan smiled and said.

Mu Chen was surprised. He immediately cupped his hands towards Lei Yin and said with a smile: “I was wrong in what I said. I will have to bother Miss Lei Yin for this matter.”

“Although I hate the individuals from the Northern Spiritual Academy, this matter is extremely important to my Nine Dragon

City as well. Naturally, I will help." Lei Yin batted an eye towards Mu Chen and said: "Additionally, I've heard that you're a Spiritual Array Master? Then, let's see who is more amazing in that aspect tomorrow."

Mu Chen smiled. Although Lei Yin was a girl, her competitiveness was not weaker than that of any male. It's no wonder that she would bear a grudge towards the Northern Spiritual Academy.

"Then, we'll wait for Nine Dragon City's good news tomorrow. We'll head back and prepare our troops in order to attack Mang Yin Mountain tomorrow!" Zhou Ye directed a smile towards Lei Shan as he turned around and brought Mu Chen away.

Lei Shan stared at the two figures far away and smacked his lips.

"Leader, are we really going to cooperate with the Mu Territory in order to deal with Mang Yin Mountain? If this was known to the others, wouldn't the other underworld forces believe that we did not follow the rules?" A Nine Dragon City executive asked in a low voice.

"What Mu Chen said previously was correct. If we were to care about the rules now, our Nine Dragon City will probably have no path of survival..." Lei Shan sighed and said: "Mang Yin Mountain has cooperated with the Liu Territory secretly. We must prevent their sinister ambition."

"Send down an order. Let all of our brothers begin their preparations. We have endured it all these years. It seems that not many individuals still remember how we built the Nine Dragon City back then."

Lei Shan waved his hand and a hint of coldness passed through his eyes: "Since Yang Gui wants to eliminate us, we will do a pre-emptive attack and destroy them!"

The following day, inside Xiong City, Zhou Ye and the others had

already finished their preparations. With a cold cry, large amounts of troops surged out of the city like a torrent. They brought out a murderous aura as they charged towards Mang Yin Mountain Range.

Before entering Mang Yin Mountain Range, Mu Chen had met with Nine Dragon City's troops that came to assist them. Among them, Lei Yin was the leader while Lei Cheng and a few other experts from Nine Dragon City followed.

"We will head to Mang Yin Mountain from the east side. The other troops from Nine Dragon City will circle around and enter Mang Yin Mountain from the west side. When it is time, we will form an encirclement and cut off all escape routes for Mang Yin Mountain." Lei Yin looked at Zhou Ye and Mu Chen as she spoke.

"We'll have to trouble Miss Lei Yin then." Mu Chen cupped his hands and said.

"Let's go."

Lei Yin didn't bother to say anymore words and waved her petite hands. Then, she rode a horse and charged into the center of the Mang Yin Mountain Range. The hooves of their horses were wrapped in thick cloth. Thus, it would not cause much commotion even if they were a large force.

With Lei Yin, who was quite familiar with the terrain, leading the large forces towards the center of the mountain range, the journey was quite smooth. They were not blocked by any underworld forces as they headed over. It seemed that Nine Dragon City had already opened the path up.

In just an hour, their large force had already gotten close to Mang Yin Mountain. Mu Chen stared at the towering mountain peak and could feel a killing intent emitting from it. It was evident that Mang Yin Mountain's main camp was not a peaceful place.

"There are only a handful of paths that lead towards Mang Yin

Mountain. However, all of these paths are heavily guarded nowadays. If you want to breakthrough forcibly, there will be quite the amount of injuries. Therefore, I will bring you to another path so that you can perform a sudden attack and completely eradicate one of their strongholds. Afterwards, we will be able to surround their lair." Lei Yin pointed at the steep Mang Yin Mountain and said.

Mu Chen exchanged gazes with Zhou Ye and nodded their heads.

Lei Yin waved her hands. She gave up on her horse and rushed valiantly into Mang Yin Mountain. Behind her, numerous figures silently charged and followed her tightly.

This Mang Yin Mountain was extremely steep. Fortunately, the troops that came were all elites from the Mu Territory. Every one of them had excellent skills and could keep up with Lei Yin's pace. They passed through a trial at the edge of the cliff and secretly sneaked into Mang Yin Mountain.

At one of Mang Yin Mountain's strongholds, numerous figures were scanning the area vigilantly. A man, who seemed to be a captain, would constantly scold them in a low voice, causing them to keep their eyes open.

Swish!

But at this moment, numerous arrows were shot off fiercely from the forest. Every single arrow was accurate and pierced the throats.

"Enemy attack!"

This sudden attack instantly plunged the stronghold into chaos. But before they could sound the alarm, numerous figures had already charged out from the forest like death gods.

Faced with the sudden enemy, the stronghold's defenses were all ineffective. In a few minutes, the stronghold was thoroughly cleaned.

These figures swiftly opened the stronghold's gates. Then, they turned around and quickly vanished.

Similar incidents also occurred in many other strongholds at the same time. Within half an hour, Mang Yin Mountain's strongholds were all completely destroyed.

In a location near the peak, Mu Chen and the others had quietly reunited with Nine Dragon City's troops. Lei Shan stared at the mountain peak sharply. At that location, an enormous fortress was there. That place was Mang Yin Mountain's lair.

"Let's do it. Next up will be the true battle. In all of their strongholds we destroyed, there weren't many experts. It seems that all of them have gathered inside their lair. That Yang Gui is quite cunning." Lei Shan said in a deep voice.

Mu Chen and Zhou Ye also nodded. Within their eyes, a murderous intent arose...

Mang Yin Fortress. This fortress seemed extremely mighty. Its exterior was made of steel and it looked like a metal fortress. On the fortress, lots of people were patrolling back and forth vigilantly.

"Boom!"

All of a sudden, a matchless and vigorous Spiritual Energy soared into the sky and directly formed a palm. It smashed heavily on the steel gates and caused the entire fortress to tremble violently.

"Enemy attack!"

A sharp sound suddenly destroyed the silence at the mountain peak. It caused the stronghold to enter a state of chaos. Numerous figures flashed and appeared on the fortress. They immediately casted their sights out and could not help but suck in a cold breath.

At this moment, they noticed a torrent of troops charging over from outside of their fortress and completely surrounding the fortress. An amazing killing intent filled the sky.

“Damn it, why did we only discover the enemies now? What happened to our strongholds?!” A few people that noticed this formation screamed suddenly.

“Don’t panic. Hurry and inform the boss!”

“Everyone, remain alert!”

Zhou Ye looked at the chaos within Mang Yin Mountain and shouted out angrily. A thunderous sound resounded out: “Yang Gui, hurry and scram out here. You’ve killed our Mu Territory’s men. Right now, it’s time for you to pay your debt!”

Zhou Ye’s shout echoed throughout the peak. The faces of the troops in Mang Yin Mountain changed. So it was the Mu Territory. However, how could they come over here so fast?

“Haha, Zhou Ye. I’ve waited for you for a long time now. So what if you’re the Mu Territory? You think that I’m afraid of you?!”

Just as Zhou Ye’s shout faded away, a sneer filled with hostility rang out. Then, a light flashed out and appeared above the fortress.

The light scattered away and revealed a skinny man. His eyes were sunk in and he looked extremely wicked. His thin lips let out a provocative arc as he sneered at Zhou Ye.

Mu Chen stared coldly at the figure in midair. This person was the number one individual among the Northern Spiritual Realm’s underworld forces. The boss of Mang Yin Mountain and also the killer of Chen Xiong, Yang Gui?

Yang Gui’s eyes looked fiercely at the troops that surrounded his liar. However, he did not show the slightest fear and, instead, grinned. “Where’s Lei Shan? Stop hiding around when you are already here. How gutless.”

Seeing Yang Gui’s fearless expression, Mu Chen’s eyes narrowed. It seems that he had expected them to go to find Nine Dragon City for help.

“Haha, Yang Gui. It seems that your nose is still quite sensitive like a dog.” A big laugh sounded out from behind. At this moment, Lei Shan slowly walked out and stared at Yang Gui coldly.

“Lei Shan, you’re quite courageous. I haven’t even caused any trouble for you, yet you dare to come here? It seems that you’re planning to start a war against my Mang Yin Mountain?” Yang Gui directed a wicked smile towards Lei Shan and said.

“Stop acting in front of me. If I do not attack you today, you would have probably attacked me tomorrow.” Lei Shan curled his lips and said.

“Haha, it seems that you’re not stupid.” Yang Gui grinned. He actually did not have any traces of hiding it as he said: “However, that’s good. Since you’ve came here on your own accord today, it will save me the trouble.”

He tilted his head as he stared coldly at Zhou Ye and Lei Shan. “However, you fools, did you think that I’m afraid of your revenge when I dared to attack the Mu Territory?”

After his voice faded away, Yang Gui looked towards the inside of his fortress and smiled: “Friends from the Liu Territory, you should come out now.”

Swish!

As the last word was said, a powerful Spiritual Energy suddenly surged out from within the fortress. A light figure also emerged next to Yang Gui. Then, as the light dispersed, a familiar figure was revealed. That appearance, it was the Second Master of the Liu Territory, Liu Zong!

Liu Zong directed a smile towards Zhou Ye. His cold eyes also glanced at Mu Chen beside him as he cupped his hands gently. Then, a cold voice echoed throughout the mountain peak.

“Zhou Ye. My Liu Territory is here. We’ve been waiting a long time for you.”

Chapter 93 – Bloody Battle

“Liu Zong?!”

Zhou Ye and Lei Shan looked at the figure that appeared beside Yang Gui. Both their expressions immediately became serious. It seems that the affair today wouldn’t be settled that easily.

“So the one backing up Mang Yin Mountain really is you, the Liu Territory!” Zhou Ye’s face became dark as killing intent surged within his eyes: “Then, was it also the Liu Territory’s instruction which caused the sudden attack on our Mu Territory?”

“Ohoho, we noticed that the Mu Territory acted too proud recently and wanted to suppress it a bit. However, who would have thought that Brother Yang Gui would attack that severely and kill people.” Liu Zong smiled faintly as he spoke.

Zhou Ye’s eyes darkened and a crunching sound came out from his clenched fists.

“Since you’ve all come today, I think that there’s no need for you to leave here. Zhou Ye, you’re considered the right-hand man of Mu Feng. If you were to be killed at this location, the Mu Territory would suffer greatly from it.” Liu Zong pretended that he did not see Zhou Ye’s dark expression and waved his hands. Then, a sound of wind breaking could be heard from within the fortress. Afterwards, a group of men appeared on the fortress walls. The one leading them was the Third Master of the Liu Territory, Liu Ming.

It seemed that Liu Zong had brought many elite troops over to Mang Yin Mountain this time and had waited for the appearance of the Mu Territory.

“Leader Lei, prepare to attack!”

Zhou Ye said in a low tone. Although the situation was out of his expectations, it was clear that there was no way of retreating. They

could only fight to the bitter end against Mang Yin Mountain and the Liu Territory.

And regarding this point, Lei Shan also understood this. The Liu Territory had already made it clear that they were cooperating with Mang Yin Mountain. If they failed to get rid of Mang Yin Mountain today, then Nine Dragon City would be eliminated by them in the future.

“Attack!”

A chill flashed through Lei Shan’s eyes. He immediately waved his hand and cried out with killing intent.

“Leave Liu Zong to me.” A powerful Spiritual Energy erupted out from Zhou Ye’s body. His eyes remained fixed on Liu Zong. The latter was a Spirit Stage Middle Phase powerhouse and was extremely powerful. Even Zhou Ye could only barely stall for time against him.

Lei Shan nodded. Both sides had 2 Spirit Stage powerhouses. However, it seems that the opponent had a slight advantage over them. It seems that it would probably be a bloody battle today.

“Liu Zong, get the f*ck over here!”

Zhou Ye took a step forward and powerful Spiritual Energy began to gather behind him. It vaguely turned into a light brown rhino and a heavy feeling was emitting out. At the same time, the ground he was standing on collapsed.

“Zhou Ye. Do you really believe that you’re my opponent?!”

Liu Zong let out a sneer. A dense Spiritual Energy also gathered behind him and formed into a jaded green scorpion. The scorpion’s jaded green tail was flashing as a bloody smell emitted out from it.

“Dong!”

However, Zhou Ye did not care about it and his body rushed out like lightning. The giant rhino behind him also became lively and

caused the entire ground to tremble. This terrifying power was quite amazing.

Swish!

Liu Zong let out a cold hmph before his body rushed out. He waved his hand and the tail of the jaded green scorpion behind him fiercely stabbed towards Zhou Ye.

The two types of dense Spiritual Energy collided with each other. This shockwave immediately brought out a gale and caused the nearby forest to tremble.

“Kill!”

Seeing that Zhou Ye took action, Lei Shan also let out a shout. Spiritual Energy gathered behind his back and formed into a golden armored beast. The armored beast was like a giant mouse and its entire body was covered with golden scales. It seemed like a layer of armor, dazzling and strong.

When Mu Chen saw the golden armored beast, he immediately recognized it. Golden Armadillo. Ranked 168th on the Myriad Beast Record’s Earth Rankings. It was said that it possesses the strength to pierce through a mountain.

“Haha, Lei Shan. We haven’t fought in so many years, let me see how much you’ve improved!” Seeing this, Yang Gui let out a big laugh. Dense Spiritual Energy surged out and formed in a giant dog with a crescent moon imprint behind him.

Silvermoon Canine. Ranked 177th on the Myriad Beast Record’s Earth Rankings. It had an extremely powerful sense of smell and no movement could escape its sense of smell within a radius of a hundred miles.

Lei Shan and Yang Gui also dashed out. The two of them also collided against each other heavily. Their fight was actually extremely violent and emitted out waves of Spiritual Energy shockwaves as it shaved off layers from the ground.

“Kill!”

Since the leaders on both sides had already attacked, there was no need for the troops to have any inhibitions. The troops screamed out loud with red eyes and charged towards the fortress like a flood.

Boom Boom Boom!

A violent Spiritual Energy exploded out endlessly from above the peak. If you were to look above, it was extremely colorful and dazzling. However, beneath the dazzling sight raged a truly bloody battle.

Mu Chen also rushed into the crowd. His movements were like a ghost and a golden light would flash between his two fingers. They were like a sharp golden spear, which would cause blood to splash out every time it broke the winds. Sounds of screams accompanied it.

It was evident that Mu Chen, who had activated the Shadowspirit Step and Spirit King Finger, possessed an extreme killing ability.

“Bastard, you’re seeking death!”

However, just when nobody could stop Mu Chen’s rampage, a violent cry rang out beside his ears. Then, a powerful fist of wind swept over towards Mu Chen. The trembles even caused the earth to crack up.

“Liu Ming?”

Mu Chen looked up at the figure rushing over here and let out a sneer. During the Northern Spiritual Field Training, it was hard for him to resist against Liu Ming. However, that wasn’t the case right now.

Against Liu Ming’s fierce offensive, Mu Chen did not dodge and instead changed his fingers to a fist. Two Limitless Death Seals emerged on the surface of his fist as he punched out. An overbearing wind erupted out from his fist.

Boom!

The two fists collided with each other and caused waves of air to emit out. A dozen or so individuals nearby were directly blasted back forcibly and spat out blood.

When the blast erupted out, Mu Chen's body trembled and retreated a few steps backwards. As for Liu Ming, who had rushed over, tumbled in midair and landed on the ground. His face was extremely dark.

"Asshole, you've truly become powerful!" Liu Ming gnashed his teeth as he spoke. Originally, he never cared about Mu Chen. However, as they fought again today, he realized that Mu Chen was in no way inferior to him.

"It's just that you're too weak." Mu Chen said with a cold smile.

"I, the Third Master, will tear you to pieces today!" Liu Ming angrily laughed. He pushed the Spiritual Energy inside his body to the extreme. Then, he rushed over towards Mu Chen like a lightning. The winds coming from his clawing attacks were extremely fierce.

Seeing this, Mu Chen immediately used the Shadowspirit Step and retreated backwards like a ghost. He waved his sleeves and the air fluctuated. A tiny Spiritual Array emerged out and Spiritual Energy chains made of light wrapped around Liu Ming's body.

With his current ability, it was a simple act to arrange a tiny Spiritual Array.

Bang Bang.

However, this tiny Spiritual Array was not much of an obstacle to someone with Liu Ming's strength. The Spiritual Energy rushed out from his body and directly destroyed all the chains around him. He said in a mocking voice: "I had heard that you're a Spiritual Array Master. How come you only know to use these measly things?"

“Then, I’ll give you something big!”

Mu Chen’s eyes turned cold. A dozen Spiritual Seals quickly emerged on his palm.

“Hmph.”

Seeing this, Liu Ming’s heart jumped. He did not dare to be careless and charged out.

Although the Spiritual Arrays formed by a Spiritual Array Master were extremely powerful, they required a period of time to prepare. As long as they were able to get up close, a Spiritual Array Master could not resist against them.

“Swish Swish.”

However, Mu Chen saw through his thoughts. He immediately activated Shadowspirit Step to the limits and caused many illusionary shadows to appear. It actually made Liu Ming unable to know where his true body was located at.

“Boy, do you only know how to hide?!” Liu Ming shouted out in rage. Mu Chen’s movements were too elegant. It was evident that Mu Chen had trained in a rather extraordinary Movement Spiritual Art. Although he pushed his Spiritual Energy to the limits, he still failed to catch Mu Chen.

“Swish.”

Just when he shouted, Mu Chen’s body suddenly stopped moving. However, Liu Ming did not have the time to rejoice, instead, the color of his face changed when he noticed the violent fluctuations behind Mu Chen. A massive fiery red Spiritual Array emerged slowly and emitted out a violent Spiritual Energy.

“Damn it! How could he arrange a Spiritual Array this quickly?!”

Liu Ming’s face twitched. It wasn’t that he hadn’t fought against a Spiritual Array Master before. However, it was the first time that he saw a Spiritual Array Master, who could arrange a powerful

Spiritual Array at such a high speed.

“Devouring Tigerblaze Spiritual Array!”

Mu Chen did not allow Liu Ming to remain shocked for a long period of time. He stared coldly at the latter and the hand seals immediately changed. A tiger’s roar erupted out from within the fiery red Spiritual Array and then, a flame tiger containing a violent and burning Spiritual Energy directly rushed towards Liu Ming.

“Ghastly Netherworld Hands!”

Feeling the violent pressure coming from the flame tiger, Liu Ming did not hesitate and hurriedly pushed his Spiritual Energy to the extreme. With a loud shout, his hand smacked out and the Spiritual Energy formed into a light which gathered around his palm. Afterwards, the light covered palm collided fiercely against the flame tiger.

Bang!

The violent Spiritual Energy erupted out and shattered the gravel on the ground into powder.

Swish!

Swish!

But just when Liu Ming used all his strength to resist against the violent flame tiger, a vague shadow suddenly rushed in from the side. Two of its fingers were straightened out. The fingertips were flashing a dazzling golden light as it mercilessly headed straight towards his throat.

This offensive was quite clinical. As he was caught off guard, Liu Ming could only smack it away with the back of his hand.

Chi!

The golden lights were sharp like a spear. As it touched Liu Ming’s palm its sharpness erupted out. Then, it actually stabbed

right through the center of Liu Ming's palm and caused blood to sputter out.

Ah!

Liu Ming issued out a scream immediately. His body flew back awkwardly and he held onto his bloody palm with an astounded expression.

Mu Chen looked coldly at Liu Ming. However, he did not give him time to recover and rushed over once again.

"Stop him!" Seeing this, Liu Ming quickly shouted out.

The Liu Territory's men nearby immediately charged towards Mu Chen when they heard the cry. However, they were quickly stopped by the Mu Territory's men.

The current situation was quite chaotic. Mu Chen glanced at Liu Ming, who was retreating quickly. However, he did not show any signs of chasing after him. Instead, he retreated back to the center of the Mu Territory's and Nine Dragon City's men. He frowned as he stared at the two battles in midair.

Lei Shan and Yang Gui were both Spirit Stage Initial Phase powerhouses. It would be hard to determine the victory without a period of time. However, Liu Zong was at the Spirit Stage Middle Phase. He was stronger than Zhou Ye. Therefore, Zhou Ye would be the first one to topple down if they continued to draw out the battle.

Once Zhou Ye was defeated, it would immediately lead to a chain reaction. Moreover, once it affected Lei Shan, the Spirit Stage powerhouses on their side would be defeated. It would be useless no matter how much of an advantage they obtained down here.

Therefore, they must think of a way to defeat the other's Spirit Stage powerhouses.

Mu Chen's eyes flashed. He immediately tilted his head and looked at Lei Yin and the others beside him: "Can you protect me

for a while?”

“What are you planning to do?” Lei Yin’s beautiful face was quite unnatural. She had just seen how Mu Chen had dealt with Liu Ming using a Spiritual Array. This speed of arranging a Spiritual Array was not something she could compare with.

“I want to help your father kill Yang Gui.” Mu Chen said in a deep voice.

Lei Yin was surprised. She stared strangely at Mu Chen and said: “They are both Spirit Stage powerhouses. If you want to pose a threat to them, you must use a Rank 2 Spiritual Array. Aren’t you currently only a Rank 1 Spiritual Array?

“I’ll try it out.”

Mu Chen took a deep breath. His hand gripped tightly and a Jaded Essence Fruit emerged within his hands. This was the final one remaining. With his current Spiritual Energy, he would need a bit of external support in order to condense 20 Spiritual Seals.

He did not hesitate and shoved the Jaded Essence Fruit into his mouth. Then, under Lei Yin’s eyes of amazement, he closed his eyes tightly. Shortly after, she was stunned as she noticed Spiritual Seals emerging out from Mu Chen’s fingertips.

The amount was a total of 20 Spiritual Seals!

Chapter 94 – Nine Heavenly Lightning Spiritual Array

20 Spiritual Seals?

Lei Yin was slightly shocked as she watched the Spiritual Seals that were being condensed out of Mu Chen's fingertips. A hint of complexity filled her eyes. This amount of Spiritual Seals almost reached the pinnacle of a Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master. She had always believed that she had a high talent in Spiritual Array Cultivation, however, it seemed that she was quite far behind in talent when compared to Mu Chen.

Mu Chen did not care about Lei Yin's feelings. At this moment, he was fully preoccupied on condensing the Spiritual Seals. After he carefully condensed out 20 Spiritual Seals, he flicked his fingers and the 20 Spiritual Seals integrated into the air in front of him.

Chi Chi.

Numerous complex Spiritual Energy light beams erupted out when the Spiritual Seals were integrated into the air. They formed an extremely complicated Diagram Array. Moreover, Mu Chen had shut off all interference from the outside world and had entered the Heart Array State once again. He controlled the Spiritual Energy light beams and attempted to complete the complex connections.

At this moment, he was attempting to arrange the strongest Diagram Array that he had obtained from Wen Ling. It was the "Nine Heavenly Lightning Spiritual Array" whose power could rival quite a few Rank 2 Spiritual Arrays. At present, he would have to strain himself in order to arrange this sort of Spiritual Array even with the help of the Heart Array State. However, the situation right now will not permit him to think about that.

Whether or not the Spiritual Array would fail, he had to attempt

it.

Mu Chen concentrated and his slender hands constantly changed forms. His ten fingers shuttled back and forth like a butterfly. They drew countless trajectories as cold sweat emerged on his forehead.

Seeing Mu Chen's appearance like this, Lei Yin's eyes became serious. It seemed that Mu Chen was not absolutely certain on whether he could arrange this Spiritual Array. Right now, he must not be disturbed. Otherwise, he would suffer a severe injury if the Spiritual Array backfires.

At the mountain peak, the troops from both sides rushed against each other. Numerous Spiritual Energies erupted out and sounds of fighting rang out.

As time passed, the cold sweat on Mu Chen's forehead began to increase. His handsome face was extremely serious right now. However, it made Lei Yin let out a sigh of relief. The strange fluctuation in the air in front of Mu Chen did not show any signs of disorder. It seemed that everything was under Mu Chen's control.

"Buzz."

As Lei Yin relaxed, the air in front of Mu Chen suddenly let out a violent buzzing sound. At that location, the air seemed to fluctuate like boiling water. Then, dazzling silver lights began to emerge from the fluctuations.

These silver lights slowly began to gather and vaguely formed into a light array that was dozens of meters tall. From the light array, deep sounds of rumbling were emitted out while lightning flashed.

This array that appeared suddenly shocked everyone at the mountain peak. They quickly turned their gaze over and stared in astonishment at this complex silver Spiritual Array.

"What a powerful Spiritual Energy!"

The men from both sides stared at the dazzling lightning Spiritual Array. Then, they felt the surging Spiritual Energy from within it and their faces immediately changed. This level of Spiritual Energy was almost comparable to a Spirit Stage powerhouse!

“Stop him, he’s arranging a Spiritual Array!”

When Liu Ming, who was wounded by Mu Chen earlier, noticed this scene, his eyes instantly narrowed and he quickly shouted.

From the surging Spiritual Energy fluctuations, it was evident that Mu Chen was arranging an extremely powerful Spiritual Array. If he successfully arranges this array, even a Spirit Stage powerhouse would suffer from this great threat.

Hearing Liu Ming’s shout, the elite troops from the Liu Territory immediately rushed forward towards Mu Chen. However, there were many men from the Mu Territory and Nine Dragon City nearby protecting him. They were unable to charge forward quickly.

“Hmph!”

Seeing this, Liu Ming grunted and lunged forward. He pushed his Spiritual Energy to the limits and tore a crack through the defensive lines. Currently, all the experts were mutually restraining each other. Among the ones protecting Mu Chen all weren’t powerful experts so it wasn’t easy for them to stop Liu Ming.

“Stop right there!”

As she noticed Liu Ming charging over, Lei Yin immediately frowned. Spiritual Seals emerged from her fingers and were fired out swiftly. The air in front of her fluctuated and formed into a icy-blue Spiritual Array that exuded a freezing chill.

“Frozen Serpent Spiritual Array!”

Hiss!

A chill expanded out from within the icy-blue Spiritual Array. Then, several enormous ice serpents surged out and tangled around Liu Ming.

“It’s another Spiritual Array Master?!” Seeing this scene, Liu Ming’s face changed. However, he quickly noticed that the Spiritual Array formed by the girl in front of him wasn’t as powerful as Mu Chen’s.

When he became aware of the situation, a cold light flashed through Liu Ming’s eyes. He clenched his fists tightly and dense Spiritual Energy exploded out. His fists whistled through the air and crushed the ice serpents that tangled him into pieces.

Lei Yin’s face turned slightly white. However, she gritted her teeth and urged the Spiritual Energy within her body in order to arrange another Spiritual Array. She used all his strength to prevent Liu Ming from approaching closer.

Bang Bang Bang!

Due her attempts to stop him, Liu Ming was slowed. However, he still managed to rush over and appeared in a location near Lei Yin in a couple of minutes.

“Damn brat, go to hell!”

Liu Ming’s eyes were dark. His clawing attacks were like lightning and brought out fierce winds. He attempted to grab onto Lei Yin’s snowy white neck mercilessly as if he wanted to destroy a beautiful thing through ruthless means.

Seeing the grim Liu Ming rush over, Lei Yin’s face became a lot paler. However, she stubbornly fought back her fear and refused to retreat. She immediately circulated the Spiritual Energy within her body in order to struggle recklessly against Liu Ming.

“Die!”

Liu Ming immediately laughed wickedly when he noticed that Lei Yin wanted to fight against him head-on. If she were to arrange

Spiritual Arrays from a distance, it might cause him some trouble. However, in a close-up battle, he could take her life within 3 moves.

But just when Liu Ming was about to deliver the killing blow, a brilliant silver light erupted out from behind Lei Yin. Violent Spiritual Energy fluctuations mixed with rumblings sounds were formed into lightning and struck out against Liu Ming, who was approaching.

This incoming lightning instantly changed Liu Ming's expression. He quickly urged the Spiritual Energy within his body to form a Spiritual Energy light barrier on the surface of his body.

Boom!

The lightning did not hesitate as it severely bombarded his body. As the violent lightning erupted out, Liu Ming's body instantly flew backwards hundreds of meters, sliding on the ground before it buried itself in a boulder.

Puchi.

Fresh blood sprayed out from Liu Ming's mouth. His entire body was charred as he lifted his head in surprise. He noticed Mu Chen, who was behind Lei Yin, slowly opening his tightly shut eyes. A lightning Spiritual Array slowly circulated above his head. It carried an extremely violent Spiritual Energy and would flash from time to time.

"Damn it, how could this Spiritual Array be this powerful?!"

Horror filled Liu Ming's heart. He was bombarded by the lightning to the extent that he became seriously injured. The power was comparable to a Spirit Stage powerhouse's attack!

The men nearby were all scared because of this. Fear immediately filled their faces. Even Liu Ming, who was at the peak of a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase, could not block a single attack from the Spiritual Array. How could they dare to rush

forward?

Mu Chen's stared coldly at Liu Ming, who was severely injured. However, he ignored him and turned his gaze towards Lei Yin and asked: "Are you okay?"

Lei Yin shook her head and said: "Thank you."

If Mu Chen had not helped during the critical moment earlier, she probably would have been killed by Liu Ming.

"It's fine. I still have to thank you for protecting me." Mu Chen smiled gently. Then, his cold eyes looked towards the battle between Lei Shan and Yang Gui. His hand seals changed and the massive lightning Spiritual Array slowly circulated as numerous lightning flashed.

In the sky, Yang Gui was currently fighting fiercely against Lei Shan when he felt a chill. He hurriedly turned his gaze away and his eyes instantly narrowed. Then, he revealed a surprised expression. Even he felt a hint of danger coming from this lightning Spiritual Array.

"What a powerful Spiritual Array." Lei Shan also noticed the Spiritual Array and immediately exclaimed.

"Nine Heavenly Lightning Spiritual Array!" Mu Chen stared coldly at Yang Gui and shouted out while his hand seals changed.

Boom!

Following Mu Chen's cry, the lightning Spiritual Array had completely activated. Rumbling thunder sounds echoed throughout the sky. Then, the array trembled for a moment and a massive lightning rushed out like a lightning dragon. It tore through the sky at lightning speed and fiercely bombarded against Yang Gui.

"Damn it!"

Seeing the lightning quickly becoming larger within his eyes,

Yang Gui's face changed instantly. The violent Spiritual Energy within the lightning made his heart jump.

Boom!

A powerful Spiritual Energy immediately rushed out from Yang Gui's body. His fingers were spread apart and then he fired off from his palm: "Grand Wraith Palm Print!"

Billowing Spiritual Energy gushed out and formed a gigantic Spiritual Energy palm print. It carried a powerful energy as it collided fiercely against the lightning.

Bang!

An immensely violent Spiritual Energy shockwave erupted out in the sky. As a dazzling brilliance emerged, many people closed their eyes.

Hmph.

Yang Gui's body also trembled at that moment. A muffled hmph sound emitted out from his throat. Then, his body quickly staggered a dozen steps backwards as a trace of blood emerged from his mouth. The Spiritual Energy within his body had been shocked and it was apparent that he had suffered a severe injury from that collision.

"Yang Gui, die!"

Just when Yang Gui retreated back quickly due to his injuries, a shout filled with killing intent rang out from behind him. He quickly turned around and noticed Lei Shan rushing over. The latter's body was completely wrapped in golden light. Behind him, the Golden Armadillo seemed to have fused together with him. With a cry, an indescribable sharpness emerged from it and penetrated through his chest.

Yang Gui's body immediately stiffened as he struggled to lower his head. He noticed that a two-foot bloody hole appeared on his chest as fresh blood poured out from it.

At this instant, the entire mountain peak was silent. The troops from Mang Yin Mountain stared at this scene in horror. Their eyes showed a feeling of intense fear.

Upon seeing this, Mu Chen let out a sigh of relief. He sat down on his butt. Yang Gui was dead. Thus, Mang Yin Mountain and Liu Territory would definitely lose today's battle.

Chapter 95 – Black Scroll

On the top of the mountain, the originally chaotic battlefield had suddenly quieted down, especially the men from Mang Yin Mountain. They were all stunned as they looked at Yang Gui whose aura was fading away while he fell down from midair. Their boss was killed just like that?

But he was a Spirit Stage powerhouse, how did he get killed so easily?

“Men from Mang Yin Mountain. If you dare to resist, then don’t blame the Nine Dragon City for making a bloodbath out of you!”

Lei Shan landed on a huge tree as he glanced at the panicked troops from Mang Yin Mountain. From within his shout, a thick murderous intent surged out.

“Kill!”

The morale of the troops from Nine Dragon City rose. With a loud cry, they suddenly charged towards Mang Yin Mountain’s troops in order to kill them. The latter had been destroyed mentally and could not form an effective defense.

Mu Chen watched the defeated troops from Mang Yin Mountain and let out a sigh of relief. He circulated the Great Pagoda Art and absorbed Spiritual Aura in order to recover. Previously, Lei Shan’s attack was quite decisive. He did not hesitate and killed Yang Gui when he had become weak momentarily.

“Bang!”

In the sky, violent Spiritual Energy erupted out from the place where Zhou Ye and Liu Zong were fighting. Zhou Ye retreated a dozen steps while Liu Zong only retreated two steps. However, Liu Zong had an ugly expression on his face. That was because he had seen the cold corpse of Yang Gui.

“Useless trash!”

Liu Zong's heart was slightly shocked. He immediately gritted his teeth as he cursed. Yang Gui's death had basically ruined their advantageous situation.

"Haha, Liu Zong. It seems that it's impossible for things to go your way today!" Zhou Ye let out a cold laugh. The morale on their side had increased with Yang Gui's death. And more importantly, Lei Shan could now extend a helping hand. Zhou Ye could team up with him in order to defeat Liu Zong. Even for Liu Zong, who was at the Spirit Stage Middle Phase, it would be difficult to obtain the upper-hand when facing two Spirit Stage Initial Phase powerhouses.

Liu Zong's face darkened. He stared at Mang Yin Mountain's defeated troops and gnashed his teeth bitterly. Then, he glared coldly at Zhou Ye and appeared next to Liu Ming, who was heavily injured and burned to a char by Mu Chen. He grabbed onto Liu Ming and quickly fled away from the mountain peak.

"Retreat!"

Seeing Liu Zong retreat, the Liu Territory's men also shouted out and quickly escaped from the fray.

Without the support from the Liu Territory, Mang Yin Mountain's troops completely lost their morale and quickly surrendered when the fortress was broken into.

Mu Chen stood on top of the fortress walls and watched as the troops from Mang Yin Mountain scattered away. Mang Yin Mountain would now disappear forever from the Northern Spiritual Realm's underworld.

"Haha, Mu Chen. You're quite amazing. You're actually able to arrange such a powerful Spiritual Array at such a young age." Lei Shan laughed as he landed next to Mu Chen. He firmly patted Mu Chen's shoulder as Mu Chen gave a bitter laugh due to the force. He felt that his entire body was being shattered.

It was evident that Lei Shan was in an excellent mood. Yang Gui was a big rival for him and Lei Shan had been suppressed by him over the past few years. He had never thought that he would be able to get his revenge today. Of course, it was thanks to Mu Chen's Spiritual Array support. Otherwise, he wouldn't have been able to take Yang Gui's life that easily even if he had managed to defeat him.

Zhou Ye also descended down. He looked at Mu Chen with a pleased smile. It was a wise decision when he decided to bring Mu Chen along with him.

"Leader Lei. We'll let you deal with the remaining men from Mang Yin Mountain." Zhou Ye looked at the troops that had surrendered as he directed a smile towards Lei Shan.

"That's fine." Lei Shan nodded. For an underworld force, what they needed the most was manpower. The Mu Territory might despise these individuals, but Nine Dragon City required them.

"Mang Yin Mountain is the strongest underworld force within the Northern Spiritual Realm. They surely must have a lot of treasures. Since we've obtained their troops, we'll leave the treasure collection to you." Lei Shan smiled. This was within reason. Mang Yin Mountain had been eradicated and hence they had managed to resolve a big concern of theirs. Moreover, they could take this opportunity and form a friendly relationship with the Mu Territory. Thus, Lei Shan was willing to give up the Mang Yin Mountain's treasure to the Mu Territory.

Zhou Ye smiled. He did not refuse, but he also did not plan on accepting everything. He said: "Let's split it in half. Nine Dragon City has suffered quite a bit of losses today. Moreover, we still have an opportunity to cooperate."

"Then, I'll have to thank Brother Zhou." Lei Shan did not argue as he cupped his hands and smiled. Right now, they had offended the Liu Territory. In order to avoid their retaliation, they naturally

had to form a better relationship with the Mu Territory.

Since the two sides had come to an agreement, Lei Shan waved his hand and called his men to bring over a certain person. This person was exceptionally skinny, yet he had quite the cunning eyes. However, he looked miserable instead, due to the blood covering his body.

“This is the second leader of Mang Yin Mountain, Lin Hou. He is also a known figure.” Lei Shan smiled coldly at Lin Hou and said: “Bring us to the treasure room. If you are useful to us, you will naturally be able to keep your life. Otherwise, I do not mind getting rid of you right now.”

Lin Hou shuddered when he saw Lei Shan’s killing intent. He hurriedly smiled and said: “Leader Lei, relax. I know all about Mang Yin Mountain and am well aware of where the most precious collection is located.”

“Then, why don’t you hurry and lead the way!” Lei Shan shouted.

“Yes yes, please follow me.” Lin Hou quickly nodded and awkwardly led the way.

“This sort of person, who would betray anyone in his interest, isn’t suitable for staying in Nine Dragon City.” Zhou Ye stared at the silhouette of Lin Hou as he said that with a faint smile.

“Brother Zhou, there’s no need to worry. I naturally understand this.” Lei Shan smiled. He wasn’t a fool. How could he let a person, who could easily betray his former lord, stay by his side?

Hearing this, Zhou Ye did not bring it up anymore and followed quickly along with Mu Chen.

Mang Yin Mountain’s fortress was quite massive and had numerous houses. Currently, Lin Hou was turning left and right as he brought everyone to the largest building in the depths of the fortress.

Lin Hou stopped in the study room of the building. Then, the walls suddenly cracked open when Lin Hou touched the wall. Afterwards, he directed a smile towards Lei Shan and said: “Everyone, this place is Yang Gui’s treasure collection when he was still alive. I only found it due to a coincidence…”

“You can enter it first.” Lei Shan said faintly. It was clear that he did not trust this person.

Lin Hou laughed awkwardly and immediately entered. Seeing that he was completely fine, Lei Shan, Zhou Ye and Mu Chen followed him.

Behind the wall was a secret room. There was a sparkling light coming from it. The secret room wasn’t large, yet it was definitely filled with treasure. There were Spirit Coins piled up almost forming a small hill. From the looks of it, there were at least a million coins. On the other side, numerous jaded scripts were placed. It was obvious that this was Yang Gui’s Spiritual Arts collection.

Mu Chen became a little bit interested and wandered in. He looked at a few Spiritual Arts and immediately curled his lips. These Spiritual Arts were not considered that excellent. The highest level one was only at the Spiritual Tier.

Mu Chen casually looked at them and soon completely lost interest in these Spiritual Arts. He began to wander into the interior. At that location, there were a few exquisite jaded boxes. He picked one up and gently opened the cover. Then, a fist-sized blood ginseng appeared in his eyes. A rich and pure Spiritual Energy emitted out along with its fragrance.

“Nine Truths Blood Ginseng?”

Mu Chen looked at the blood ginseng and his eyes suddenly lit up. This was a worldly treasure that was even rarer than the Jaded Essence Fruit. It was extremely beneficial for cultivation. However, the Spiritual Energy within it was extremely violent. It

would harm the body if it was not completely ingested.

However, Mu Chen was not afraid of this at all. The Great Pagoda Art that he trained in was exceptionally domineering. It was clear that the violent Spiritual Energy from the blood ginseng was at a level beneath it.

Moreover, if he was able to completely ingest this fully-matured Nine Truths Blood Ginseng, he might be able to breakthrough to the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase in a short period of time.

“Uncle Zhou, this thing belongs to me.” Mu Chen waved the jaded box towards Zhou Ye and smiled.

“You’ve performed a great job this time. Pick as many treasures as you want.” Zhou Ye smiled.

Hearing this, Mu Chen placed it within his Mustard Seed Bracelet. However, he was not greedy. Although these worldly treasures were excellent, it would be harmful for him, in the long run, if he overrelied on them to increase his strength quickly.

Therefore, he was not envious when the other decent worldly treasures were taken away by Zhou Ye and Lei Shan. Instead, he wandered around the secret room and looked everywhere.

The secret room was not that spacious and Mu Chen quickly reached the end of it. However, he did not see anything special. Thus, he could only pout his lips. It seemed that Yang Gui’s collection wasn’t that amazing.

Mu Chen shook his head and was about to turn around.

Crack.

However, he seemed to have stepped on something when he turned around. Something rolled out from beneath his foot. He lowered his head and saw a black scroll rolling near his foot.

The scroll was covered in dust. It was evident that it wasn’t taken care of properly. Mu Chen frowned as was about to leave.

However, he did not know why he suddenly hesitated for a moment and sucked up the black scroll into his hands.

Mu Chen looked at it carefully, yet he did not discover anything special from it. Then, he casually opened the scroll.

When the scroll was opened, a faint black light emerged. Flashing black lines were scattered across the scroll without any rules.

Mu Chen frowned as he stared at the scattered lines. His eyes were filled with doubt. These lines seemed like a Diagram Array. However, it was disorganized and had no proper trajectories for the array.

“What is this thing?”

Mu Chen pouted his lips. The pattern within the scroll seemed like something drawn by an ignorant child and looked completely useless.

Mu Chen fixated his gaze on the black scroll. He could vaguely feel something wrong with it. Then, he pondered for a moment before suddenly closing his eyes. The sounds from the outside world were gradually being cut off. Under the silence, he actually entered the Heart Array State.

Although Mu Chen had closed his eyes when he entered the Heart Array State, he could still see the thick black light that erupted out from the black scroll. Then, he saw with his heart, a mysterious trajectory slowly connecting the originally chaotic light beams.

The black light surged through the outlines of the light beams. As Mu Chen looked at them attentively, he could see an extremely complex Diagram Array emerging from the scroll. He could vaguely perceive a mysterious black lotus and an indescribably vicious aura emitting out from the Diagram Array.

Hmm.

Mu Chen’s body trembled slightly and he suddenly opened his

eyes. A muffled sound rang out from his throat. Then, traces of blood began to emerge from the corner of his mouth. However, he did not care about it at all and only stared in shock at the black scroll within his hands.

This item was definitely a high rank Diagram Array!

Chapter 96 – Suppression and Breakthrough

A high rank Diagram Array?

Mu Chen stared unsteadily at the black scroll within his hand. Although he could not determine the rank of this Diagram Array, it should be at least more powerful than a Rank 2 Spiritual Array.

If word comes out about this level of a Diagram Array, it would probably create madness among the Spiritual Array Masters within the Northern Spiritual Realm. In the eyes of Spiritual Array Masters, even rare worldly treasures wouldn't be as attractive as this high rank Diagram Array.

Mu Chen wiped the blood off the corner of his mouth. Then, he walked towards Zhou Ye and Lei Shan as he waved the scroll: "Uncle Zhou, I want this as well."

Zhou Ye and the others took the black scroll and looked over it back and forth. However, they did not see any clues from it. Thus, they smiled and handed it over to Mu Chen.

Mu Chen snickered when he accepted it. He knew that Zhou Ye and Lei Shan wouldn't be able to see the mystery behind the black scroll. Otherwise, Yang Gui wouldn't have casually discarded it at this place. The value of a high rank Spiritual Array was probably much higher than everything else inside this secret room.

As for how Mu Chen could see through the mystery of this black scroll, it was all because he could enter the Heart Array State. Otherwise, Mu Chen believed that even a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master wouldn't be able to discover the hidden Diagram Array within the black scroll even if they were looking at it.

The Heart Array State is something that only a Rank 3 Spiritual Array Master could enter. However, it was not absolute and only had a small probability. Not every single Rank 3 Spiritual Array Master would be able to enter the Heart Array State. Thus, it was a

secret that couldn't be unlocked by just anyone.

Mu Chen quickly put away the black scroll. When he headed back, he could research it a little. However, it was impossible for him to attempt arranging it with his current strength. Previously, his body had trembled just from the vicious aura emitting from the Diagram Array. If he attempted to arrange it forcibly, he would definitely die due to the backlash.

After he obtained the high-grade Diagram Array, Mu Chen did not have any other thoughts about the items within the secret room and allowed Zhou Ye and Lei Shan to divide the spoils of war. Then, they called their respective troops to transfer it back to their own territory.

"Leader Lei. Regarding this matter, it is all thanks to Nine Dragon City. If there is anything you need help with, please feel free to send some men over to the Mu Territory. We will definitely help you with the best of our abilities." At the entrance of the Mang Yin Mountain Range, Zhou Ye cupped his hands towards Lei Shan and smiled as he led the Mu Territory's troops.

"Haha. Brother Zhou, you're being too polite. My Nine Dragon City will have to thank you. Once we settle the situation over here, we will definitely head over to the Mu Territory and pay a visit to Territory Lord Mu Feng!"

"Sure, farewell."

Zhou Ye smiled. He did not delay it and waved his hands as he brought the large number of troops away. They quickly disappeared from Nine Dragon City's line of sight...

News quickly spread out regarding the battle against Mang Yin Mountain. The destruction of Mang Yin Mountain shocked the Northern Spiritual Realm. After all, Mang Yin Mountain was the strongest underworld force within the Northern Spiritual Realm. Since it was now eradicated, it naturally attracted a lot of attention.

Especially when news about Yang Gui's death came out. Numerous individuals were completely stunned when they heard this. A Spirit Stage powerhouse would actually be killed like this...

They really can't provoke the Mu Territory.

Numerous large and small forces sighed. They naturally heard about Mang Yin Mountain attacking the Mu Territory and killing one of the Mu Territory's City Lords. Although they knew that the Mu Territory would not just endure it, they never expected that the Mu Territory's revenge would be enacted this quickly and this viciously...

Liu Territory, Within the Liu Estate.

Liu Qingtian sat at the seat of honor with an indifferent expression. Beside him was Liu Mubai while below him were Liu Zong and Liu Ming. However, both of them had an ugly expression at this moment.

"How did you fail?" Liu Qingtian glanced at the two of them and asked as he frowned.

"It's all because of that little as*hole, Mu Chen." Liu Ming gritted his teeth and said: "That brat could actually arrange a Spiritual Array whose power was comparable to a Rank 2 Spiritual Array. Together with Lei Shan, they killed Yang Gui."

"Oh?" Liu Qingtian's expression changed slightly. So Mu Chen could arrange such a powerful Spiritual Array? That brat really was a disaster. He actually improved so much in such a short period of time.

At the same time, Liu Mubai also gnashed his teeth secretly. A hint of jealousy and hatred flashed through the depths of his eyes. Unknowingly, the gap between Mu Chen and him had been pulled apart. How could his prideful self endure this?

"Big Brother, what should we do now? With the matter about Mang Yin Mountain, the Mu Territory's reputation will definitely

soar. Moreover, they also formed a close relationship with Nine Dragon City. This isn't good news for us." Liu Zong asked.

Liu Qingtian smiled calmly. However, a chill filled his eyes: "Why are you so impatient? We instructed Mang Yin Mountain to act in order to capture the Mu Territory's attention. Our father is progressing smoothly with his training. He should be able to exit his secluded training after one month. When that happens, he will become the only Three Heavens Stage powerhouse in the Northern Spiritual Realm."

"By that time, who will care about the Mu Territory? We will be able to easily destroy them. As for the other forces, it would be great if we could conquer them. However, if they're unwilling, then we can just eliminate them."

Liu Qingtian's eyes were burning eagerly as he clenched his hands tightly: "When that happens, the Liu Territory will become the true overlord of the Northern Spiritual Realm. The vast area will be controlled single-handedly by my Liu Territory!"

When Liu Zong and Liu Ming heard this, their eyes became a lot more passionate. It was finally time for the Liu Territory to rule over the Northern Spiritual Realm...

Mu Territory.

After the incident with Mang Yin Mountain was dealt with, Mu Chen had quietly stayed in the Mu Estate. This was because he spent most of his time researching the mysterious black Diagram Array inside the scroll.

He had also allowed Wen Ling to glance at the Diagram Array. The latter had already successfully advanced to a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master. However, he did not possess the Heart Array State and could not view the hidden Diagram Array within the scroll. About the Diagram Array, he did not hide it from him. After all, Wen Ling had treated him quite well. Not only did he lead him on the path of a Spiritual Array Master, he had also handed over all

the Diagram Arrays he possessed without reservation. To this stern teacher, Mu Chen felt quite grateful to him.

Moreover, when Wen Ling heard about this from Mu Chen, he was quite interested in it. After all, a high rank Diagram Array possessed great attractiveness towards Spiritual Array Master. But contrary to Mu Chen's expectation, Wen Ling was not fixated on it. He only smiled and said that he had no luck with this Diagram Array. Therefore, he could not view it.

Regarding this, Mu Chen could do nothing about it. Since Wen Ling could not see the hidden Diagram Array within the scroll, he did not have the ability to simulate it. Therefore, Mu Chen could only keep it to himself and slowly research it.

After a period of research, Mu Chen had vaguely entered the starting point and had a bit of understanding concerning the Diagram Array. If his research was correct, this Diagram Array's name was known as the "Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array". As for the overall rank of the Diagram Array, Mu Chen did not fully understand it yet. However, it was at least a Rank 3 Diagram Array. It was obvious that Mu Chen could not arrange a Diagram Array of this level with his current strength.

About this, Mu Chen felt quite helpless. He had the Diagram Array, yet he did not have the strength to attempt it. Instead, it made him itch. Thus, he could only gradually gather his thoughts and attempt the Diagram Array in the future.

After turning his focus away from this, Mu Chen began to dedicate himself fully to his cultivation. With his current strength, he had long possessed the qualifications to break through into the Spiritual Rotation Stage Middle Phase. However, he did not do that. Instead, he had constantly suppressed his Spiritual Energy and did not allow himself to reach that step yet.

It wasn't that he didn't want to advance to the Spiritual Rotation Stage Middle Phase. It was just that his ambition did not stop

there. Instead, he planned on directly breaking through to the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase.

This idea was quite unreliable. After all, it required a large amount of Spiritual Energy to breakthrough to a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase from the Spiritual Rotation Stage Middle Phase. If it was before, Mu Chen would not have this idea. However, he possessed the “Nine Truths Blood Ginseng” right now. Therefore, he had this thought.

The “Nine Truths Blood Ginseng” possessed a pure and violent Spiritual Energy. As long as Mu Chen could ingest this Spiritual Energy, he could rely on the Spiritual Energy that he suppressed within his body and release it all out during the peak density. This would definitely be like a pent up volcano. The eruption would be extremely terrifying.

By relying on this energy, Mu Chen was certain that he could breakthrough to the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase.

Thus, Mu Chen could only wait for the correct timing.

And this wait lasted for nearly half a month…

After half a month, Mu Chen sat cross-legged on a stone platform inside the Mu Estate’s courtyard. At this moment, Spiritual Energy continued to leak out endlessly from the surface of his body. It represented that the Spiritual Energy within his body had reached an extreme.

At every level, there was a limit how much Spiritual Energy could be stored within the body. Currently, Mu Chen was only at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase. However, the amount of Spiritual Energy within his body had surpassed the limits of a Spiritual Rotation Stage Initial Phase.

If he failed to deal with the situation accordingly, it could easily cause damage to the meridians as the Spiritual Energy was too abundant.

Hu.

Mu Chen let out a deep breath. A hint of black light leaked out from his breath as well. It was evident that it was mixed with Spiritual Energy.

“It’s about enough.”

Mu Chen felt a slight pain within his body and smiled slightly. This act was extremely dangerous. Fortunately, the Great Pagoda Art was exceptionally domineering and could control the abundant Spiritual Energy. It stopped the Spiritual Energy from causing damage recklessly within his body. Otherwise, he would not dare to do such a bold act.

Mu Chen gripped his hand and a jaded box emerged. He opened the box and the “Nine Truths Blood Ginseng” appeared from within it. A rich scent poured out. Then, he inhaled and instantly felt the Spiritual Energy within his body expand once again.

“Amazing.”

Mu Chen secretly let out a praise. However, his eyes quickly turned serious and he threw the “Nine Truths Blood Ginseng” into his mouth.

The scalding juice emitted out within Mu Chen’s mouth and instantly turned into surging amounts of Spiritual Energy. It flowed into Mu Chen’s body like a torrent and instantly caused his body to turn red.

Mu Chen felt the Spiritual Energy that was about to rampage within his body and did not dare to act slowly. He quickly closed his eyes and entered a state of cultivation. He circulated the Great Pagoda Art madly in order to ingest the violent Spiritual Energy.

Right now, it was time to breakthrough!

Chapter 97 – Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase

Boom!

Surging Spiritual Energy rushed out like a flood and roared past Mu Chen's limbs. Due to the abundance of Spiritual Energy, Mu Chen felt a pricking pain in his meridians. It was evident that his meridians had reached the limits of enduring it.

At the same time, Mu Chen was clear about the condition of his body. He immediately circulated the Great Pagoda Art in order to drive the dense Spiritual Energy through the Spiritual Art's circulation route.

Waves of Spiritual Energy were ingested by the Great Pagoda Art and were turned into numerous dark black Spiritual Energy before it fused into the Spiritual Energy Wheel within his aurasea.

Accompanying this influx of dense Spiritual Energy, the originally pigeon egg-sized Spiritual Energy Wheel slowly grew. The Spiritual Energy lights flashing on the surface also became brighter.

Hu.

The entire aurasea seemed to have rumbled at this moment. This commotion awakened the Nine Netherbird, who was trapped inside the dark purple mandala flower within his aurasea. It watched this scene with a cold and cruel gaze.

Then, it suddenly stood up when it witnessed the scene. The burning black flames within his black wings suddenly enshrouded the cage which trapped it.

Buzz!

However, against the impact, the light barrier cage formed by the mandala flower rippled. It did not show even the slightest signs of

shattering. A hint of hatred flashed through the Nine Netherbird's eyes. Right now, it was an excellent chance for it to attack Mu Chen. But this abominable cage had sealed it to the extent that it couldn't even display any means of attacks towards him.

Regarding the Nine Netherbird's actions, Mu Chen did not have the time to care about it. He was completely focused on controlling the surging Spiritual Energy within his body. At this moment, he could not afford even the slightest error.

The Spiritual Energy within his meridians howled endlessly. This high-speed circulation made Mu Chen's meridians ache. This time, there was way too much Spiritual Energy entering his body.

However, it was clearly useless to be thinking about this right now. Therefore, Mu Chen could only concentrate and he circulated the Great Pagoda Art to the extreme. He ingested the violent Spiritual Energy constantly.

Time quickly passed by and in the blink of an eye, two hours had passed. During this period of time, the Spiritual Energy Wheel within Mu Chen's aurasea had expanded by an entire size. Right now, he had already reached the Spiritual Rotation Stage Middle Phase.

But there was still a considerable amount of Spiritual Energy surging endlessly within his body.

It was time to charge at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase.

This idea flashed through Mu Chen's mind. He immediately took a deep breath. The surging Spiritual Energy within his meridians accelerated as it flowed through the Great Pagoda Art's circulation route.

This speed made his meridians contract slightly. However, Mu Chen ignored it. The domineering Great Pagoda Art would be enough to control the violent Spiritual Energy. The violent Spiritual Energy that others might not be able to deal with was like

a tamed sheep inside his body.

“All of you should just become part of my Spiritual Energy!”

Mu Chen muttered within his heart. Above the Spiritual Energy Wheel, lights condensed and turned into an illusory light tower. This light tower swayed and absorbed the flooding Spiritual Energy like a whale. Then, with the empowerment of the massive amount of Spiritual Energy, the illusory light tower seemed to have turned slightly material.

Buzz.

The absorption speed of the light tower was extremely terrifying. In a matter of just a dozen minutes, the dense Spiritual Energy within Mu Chen’s meridians was completly absorbed by it.

Moreover, the illusory light tower seemed to have become more corporeal after absorbing this dense Spiritual Energy. This made Mu Chen exclaim loudly. If he wanted to turn the illusory light tower into a corporeal light tower, wouldn’t the amount of Spiritual Energy he required be terrifying?

Mu Chen smacked his lips in shock. He immediately concentrated and the light tower slowly faded away into lights as it entered the Spiritual Energy Wheel.

Dong!

As the lights entered his Spiritual Energy Wheel, the light wheel shook violently. Waves of dense Spiritual Energy fluctuations emitted out constantly and the size of the Spiritual Energy Wheel expanded at a visible speed.

In a matter of seconds, the Spiritual Energy Wheel had expanded to the point where it was the size of an infant’s fist. Around the light wheel, Spiritual Energy lights would emerge. It looked rather abstruse as if it was enveloping the stars outside of the galaxy.

A dense Spiritual Energy fluctuation emitted out from within Mu Chen’s body. This sense of power made his pores open up. It was

an indescribable and comforting feeling.

Mu Chen sensed the Spiritual Energy Wheel with a bit of joy. With its degree of strength, he had truly reached the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase!

After suppressing his Spiritual Energy during this period of time, he had finally reached this level with the help of the Nine Truths Blood Ginseng and the Great Pagoda Art. As long as he advanced one more step, he would become a Spirit Stage powerhouse!

That level would be a qualitative change to his cultivation. In the Northern Spiritual Realm, a person at the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase was quite powerful. However, to tell the truth, there are many of them. If they wanted to truly become a leader of a force, they could only do it if they possessed the strength of a Spirit Stage powerhouse.

This was because everybody knew that the capability of a Spirit Stage powerhouse was simply not something that a Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase could compare with. No matter how many Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase men you had, it was not as convincing as you, yourself, being a Spirit Stage powerhouse.

They were two completely different levels. The prestige that they represent was also completely different.

Mu Chen nodded in satisfaction when he felt the density of the Spiritual Energy within his body. Then, he focused his consciousness on the Nine Netherbird which was trapped within the aurasea.

Although he was completely focused on ingesting the Spiritual Energy previously, he did not ignore the actions that the Nine Netherbird did.

The Nine Netherbird also noticed Mu Chen. However, it only glanced at him coldly before lying down lazily.

“Damn feathery bird, you’ve already lost your influence and

position right now. Can't you act sincerely?" Mu Chen said with a cold smile.

"Go to hell!"

Hearing Mu Chen call it a damn feathery bird, the Nine Netherbird bursted into a rage. The blazing wings fiercely flapped and a cold intent was conveyed over.

"You wouldn't benefit if you were to kill me. Therefore, you should act more sincerely!" Mu Chen said heartlessly.

"With your Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase strength, you are worse than an ant in my eyes. You dare scold me?" Thoughts surged out from the Nine Netherbird. Within it, a cold murderous intent was conveyed out.

"You think that it's your victory because you've trapped me within your body? This mandala flower isn't something that you can control!"

Hearing this, Mu Chen flew into a rage. His consciousness moved and actually floated towards the cage formed by the mandala flower. Then, his consciousness slowly touched it.

When it was touched, Mu Chen was exceptionally nervous. It was true that he didn't have a way of controlling the mysterious mandala flower which had emerged from the black paper. But no matter what, this was the only thing that was capable of restraining the Nine Netherbird. He must attempt it. Otherwise, the Nine Netherbird would never listen to his words.

As Mu Chen timidly touched the mandala flower, he was stunned. The rebound that he expected to come did not appear and, instead, his consciousness also integrated into the mandala flower a little bit.

At that instant, Mu Chen felt that he could control the mandala flower a little bit.

This feeling instantly made Mu Chen froze. Shortly after, a surge

of ecstasy filled his mind. Afterwards, he stared unfavorably at the Nine Netherbird.

The Nine Netherbird also detected something. It folded its black wings uneasily and was on alert.

“Damn feathery bird. I’ll make it so that you’ll want to hurt me!”

Mu Chen snickered and moved his consciousness. The massive flower petals of the mandala flower actually spread out slowly and whacked fiercely at the Nine Netherbird.

Boom!

The Nine Netherbird, who was caught off-guard, immediately issued a cry of pain when it was hit by the flower petals. The black flames on its body dimmed slightly. Then, a hint of fear finally emerged within its eyes.

It was evident that it never expected that Mu Chen would be capable of activating this mysterious mandala flower.

Seeing this, Mu Chen’s heart was filled with delight. During this time, he had to endure the Nine Netherbird’s attitude and could not do anything to get back at it. Now, he finally had a mean to counter back. He immediately activated the mandala flower in order to smack at the Nine Netherbird endlessly.

The Nine Netherbird evaded it awkwardly. Every time it was hit by the mandala flower’s petals, the black flames on its body would dim. This made it a bit frightened. The mandala flower was quite mysterious as it was actually capable of absorbing its energy.

“Mu Chen, don’t go overboard now. Believe it or not, I’ll fight to the bitter end with you!” After avoiding repeatedly, the Nine Netherbird also entered a rampage and the feathers on its body stood up. Within the thought that was conveyed over, it was full of rage and horror.

“Hmph, this is a punishment that you deserve. Since you’re staying in my body, you should act more honestly. Otherwise,

don’t blame me for not holding back if you hold some ill desire towards me.” Mu Chen said ruthlessly. He did not dare to push the Nine Netherbird too hard. After all, the latter was not an ordinary existence. Even though it was weakened a lot, who knew if it had some sort of last resort or not? If he made the Nine Netherbird feel anxious and it decided to fight him to the death, Mu Chen might not be able to endure it.

Fury filled the Nine Netherbird’s eyes. However, it stopped scorning and ridiculing Mu Chen. Instead, it shook the feathers on its body and slowly lay down. Now that Mu Chen was capable of controlling the mandala flower, it was best not to provoke this person.

Noticing that the Nine Netherbird finally caved in, Mu Chen let out a sigh of relief. Then, his consciousness exited the mandala flower. But once he exited it, he felt a sense of dizziness. A feeling of fatigue emitted out and made him drowsy.

“So controlling the mandala flower actually consumes this much mental energy…”

Mu Chen was shocked and forcibly suppressed the stress that he felt. The mandala flower was indeed strange. He had activated it inaccurately, yet it nearly made him fell asleep. Then, wouldn’t he faint if he attempted to use it to do something?

“It seems that I shouldn’t use it often.”

Mu Chen muttered to himself. Then, his consciousness exited his body. Although the consumption was great, he still obtained a measure that the Nine Netherbird was afraid of.

“This damn feathery bird. Just wait until I advance to the Spirit Stage, I’ll deal with you then!”

Chapter 98 – Uneasy Silence

After Mu Chen successfully advanced to the Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase, he gradually slowed down his cultivation pace. This breakthrough was different compared to the times when he would slowly yet steadily advance and instead was a sudden leap. Although Mu Chen was thoroughly prepared for this rapid breakthrough, no matter what, it still made his Spiritual Energy a little bit sparse. Thus, he must quietly temper his Spiritual Energy. Otherwise, this sparseness would be trouble for him when he attempts to breakthrough to a higher stage.

Mu Chen selected a decent idea to temper his Spiritual Energy. The plan was to condense Spiritual Seals. Before his breakthrough, Mu Chen could only condense 19 Spiritual Seals. On the day that Yang Gui was killed, he only managed arrange the “Nine Heavenly Lightning Spiritual Array” due to the Jaded Essence Fruit. Otherwise, he would not have reached that level.

But since his strength had increased significantly, Mu Chen could easily condense 20 Spiritual Seals. He no longer required any external help to do so. This made Mu Chen quite delightful as it also means that he could successfully arrange the “Nine Heavenly Lightning Spiritual Array” with his own strength. With this powerful Spiritual Array, he would be able to fight even a Spirit Stage Initial Phase powerhouse.

However, a great obstacle emerged when Mu Chen attempted to condense the 21st seal after condensing 20 Spiritual Seals. It was difficult to form the 21st Spiritual Seal.

This phenomenon puzzled him. With the increase of his strength, it should be easy for him to condense over 20 Spiritual Seals. Why did he keep failing?

After thinking for a while without any conclusion gathered, Mu Chen, who was in confusion, could only head over to find Wen

Ling. Then, after the explanation given by Wen Ling, he finally understood that the 21st Spiritual Seal was the critical point for a Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master to breakthrough to a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master.

Although 20 Spiritual Seals and 21 Spiritual Seals only differ from 1 seal, it separated the two levels.

Wen Ling spent numerous years before he finally completed this difference of 1 Seal and became a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master. It was evident that it wasn't as simple as Mu Chen thought if he wanted to cover the gap in a short period of time, even if he had a monstrous talent.

After he heard Wen Ling's explanation, Mu Chen was enlightened. No wonder it was so difficult to condense the 21st Spiritual Seal. This was due to it actually representing the difference between the two levels. As long as he successfully condensed the 21st Spiritual Seal, he would be considered to be a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master. Moreover, he would condense numerous Spiritual Seals at an alarming speed.

For example, Wen Ling could only condense 20 Spiritual Seals before he became a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master. But after he finally stepped past the 21st seal, he managed to condense 29 Spiritual Seals within half a month. Furthermore, the number of seals was still growing slowly...

Thus, this was the difference between a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master and a Rank 1 Spiritual Array Master.

After identifying the cause, Mu Chen slowed down the speed of condensing Spiritual Seals. Although it would still be a compulsory lesson every day, he split up the time so he could complete other matters.

As Mu Chen relaxed, a dozen days or so passed by.

During this period, Mu Chen would split up his time into four

parts. One part was for condensing Spiritual Seals, another part for cultivating Spiritual Energy, another part for researching on the complex and mysterious “Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array and the last part was for talking with the Nine Netherbird within his body. The Nine Netherbird was an extremely powerful existence and was currently within Mu Chen’s body. Although it was trapped, Mu Chen was quite tempted towards its strength. Therefore, he did not want their relationship to be filled completely with hatred. However, the Nine Netherbird ignored his actions for a conversation. The viciousness within its eyes did not fade at all. Instead, the gaze that would occasionally look at Mu Chen was like how it would view a naïve fool.

This foolish person actually believes that he could make it obedient just like this?

Although there were minimal effects of the talk, Mu Chen did not get bored of it. Instead, the Nine Netherbird was the one that felt it was annoying. Once it heard his voice, it would cover the cage with its wings and would not listen nor talk.

Even though Mu Chen did not obtain much significant results from the exchange he had with the Nine Netherbird, he still made a discovery regarding about the “Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array”. However, this discovery made him get a headache. This is because he discovered that the “Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array” that he saw within the black scroll wasn’t complete. Accurately speaking, it should only be a part of the complete “Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array”.

The most peculiar thing about it is that this part was still a perfect Spiritual Array. It could be arranged and activated by itself. Mu Chen was quite surprised to see that. It was his first time seeing a Diagram Array with such a perfect Spiritual Array after dissecting it out from the complete version.

As for the remaining parts of the “Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array”, it was still hidden within the black scroll. It was

impossible to detect even when Mu Chen activated his Heart Array State. This was obviously because he wasn't strong enough to see it.

However, Mu Chen did not feel dispirited. Right now, his strength wasn't enough. Not to mention the complete version of the "Butchering Demonic Lotus Spiritual Array", the part of the Diagram Array he could see required approximately 100 Spiritual Seals. Mu Chen still had a long way to go before he reached this number. Perhaps only an excellent Rank 3 Spiritual Array Master would barely reach this requirement.

After all, he had only just begun on the path of a Spiritual Array Master...

While Mu Chen was quietly cultivating, the Mu Territory was relatively quiet. Even the entire Northern Spiritual Realm was somewhat quiet. This silence made Mu Feng feel a little bit uncomfortable.

"Did the Liu Territory cause any commotions?" Within the Mu Estate, Mu Feng held a teacup and frowned as he asked Zhou Ye.

Zhou Ye shook his head and said: "It was as if those bastards had changed their personalities. They became completely quiet and peaceful. Moreover, they didn't even care about their underworld forces, which we helped the Nine Dragon City conquered."

After hearing Zhou Ye say this, Mu Feng frowned even more. He understood Liu Qingtian's personality. The latter was cunning and crafty. He was definitely not a good person. How is it possible that he would let it go after they suffered such a loss against the Mu Territory?

"Send down an order. They should keep a close surveillance towards the Liu Territory. If the Liu Territory causes any commotion, they should immediately report it back." Mu Feng placed down the teacup and said in a deep voice.

“Okay.”

Zhou Ye nodded his head and immediately turned away.

Mu Feng stared at Zhou Ye’s silhouette as his hands grinded against the armrest of his chair. His eyes turned towards the direction of the Liu Territory. Somehow, anxiety had filled his heart.

This feeling was like how a bloody storm would sweep over soon.

Ominous and terrifying...

Liu Territory.

Recently, the Liu Territory had remained rather calm. However, everybody could feel it vaguely that the patrols within the Liu City had become a lot stricter. It was as if they were preparing something.

This made many individuals a bit puzzled. Thinking about some time ago, the Liu Territory had confronted the Mu Territory, could the Liu Territory be preparing to defend against the Mu Territory? But the Liu Territory should be the strongest force within the Northern Spiritual Realm. They had always bragged about it gloriously. Why would they suddenly be afraid of the Mu Territory?

Many were puzzled. Thus, rumors spread out about how the Liu Territory was afraid of the Mu Territory. They did not dare to fight against them and etc. This harmed the reputation of the Liu Territory.

Liu Estate.

Boom!

In the meeting room, a table was completely smashed into pieces by a paled face Liu Ming. His face darkened as he said: “Those idiots think, we, the Liu Territory, would actually be afraid of the Mu Territory?”

At the seat of honour, Liu Qingtian glanced at him and said: “It’s only just rumors. Why do you care about it?”

“What big brother said is correct.” Liu Zong nodded his head and continued: “Right now, the most important thing is to wait for the old man to exit his secluded training. We should not care about anything else. As long as the old man advances to the Three Heavens Stage, the rumors would all fade away.”

Liu Ming gritted his teeth and said: “But how long do we have to wait? During this period of time, the Mu Territory and the Nine Dragon City had conquered many forces that belonged to us. Those as*holes, they actually dare to bully our Liu Territory, how bold!”

“This Mu Feng is definitely seeking his death.” Liu Zong said in a cold voice.

Liu Qingtian smiled. However, this smile was extremely cold. He said: “Be patient, there will be a time when he would have to pay for it all. When that happens, I will make him beg in front of us.”

“The Mu Territory is only an upstart force. They actually dare to compare background and history with my Liu Territory? They’re biting off more than they can chew.”

Liu Qingtian stood up and waved his hand: “Just do what you have to do. We’ll continue to wait.”

His voice faded away and he was about to leave. However, his face suddenly changed and he lifted his head up. The bright sky above the Liu Territory had actually suddenly become darker.

Buzz.

Fierce winds blew in the sky. Everybody in the Liu Territory could feel it. At this moment, the Spiritual Aura within the world seemed to fluctuate violently. Moreover, the Spiritual Aura flowed with the winds and rushed quickly in one direction.

A few people looked in that direction and noticed that location was the mountain behind the Liu Estate.

“What’s happening?” Liu Ming hurriedly walked out. He stared at the changing weather and could not help but ask.

Liu Qingtian only stared at the sky. Then, he took a deep breath. His gaze turned towards the mountain and he could see that winds were fiercely blowing in the sky. Clouds gathered as an amazing Spiritual Energy pressure emitted out in waves.

“Dad is about to exit!”

A smile emerged on Liu Qingtian’s face. However, the smile looked extraordinarily ferocious and cold within the dark skies.

Hearing this, Liu Zong and Liu Ming also revealed delightful expressions.

“Liu Ming, immediately send out news. We, the Liu Territory, will host a Nine Territory Meeting. Every single force within the Northern Spiritual Realm must be present. Otherwise, we’ll eradicate them!” Liu Qingtian said with a faint smile.

“Yes!”

Liu Ming smiled as he replied.

Facing the fierce winds, Liu Qingtian slowly opened his arms. From this point on, the Liu Territory is the overlord of the Northern Spiritual Realm…

Mu Feng, just wait for your death.

Chapter 99 – Nine Territory Meeting

The news about the Liu Territory holding a Nine Territory Meeting quickly spread like the wind throughout the entire Northern Spiritual Realm. Moreover, everyone in the Northern Spiritual Realm was astounded by it.

The Nine Territory Meeting. It was known as the most extravagant affair within the Northern Spiritual Realm. Normally, it would only be held when there was an extremely important matter. The last time a Nine Territory Meeting was hosted within the Northern Spiritual Realm, the Nine Territories had decided on their positions of power and boundaries of their domain. Furthermore, it was due to this setup, of the Nine Territories within the Northern Spiritual Realm, had continued until the present time.

And now, the Liu Territory had suddenly called for a Nine Territory Meeting. Why would they do that?

Although many factional forces were in doubt, they could feel a surging and turbulent presence coming from the Nine Territory Meeting. It was likely that peace within the Northern Spiritual Realm would disappear...

Mu Territory, Within the Mu Estate.

A serious atmosphere filled the meeting room. Mu Feng's complexion changed, as he sat on the seat of honor. At the same time, Mu Chen, Zhou Ye and a few higher-ups from the Mu Territory were present at the scene.

"Why did the Liu Territory suddenly call for a Nine Territory Meeting..." Mu Feng's eyes were sharp. He slowly lifted them up and asked, "What are they planning to do?"

Everybody at the scene was silent. The Liu Territory's actions were too abrupt. Nobody understood what they were planning to

do. The Nine Territory Meeting, this certainly wasn't something that could casually be hosted...

Mu Chen also frowned. His instincts told him that the Liu Territory must have some sort of goal. Moreover, this goal should be extremely unfavorable to the Mu Territory.

"The Liu Territory acted too suddenly, and it makes me feel a bit uneasy. Should we just ignore them and not participate in the Nine Territory Meeting?" Zhou Ye pondered for a moment before asking.

"I'm afraid that wouldn't work. The Nine Territory Meeting was set as a compulsory obligation that was personally decided by the nine territories. No matter who calls for it, all of us must attend. If we were to break the rules, there will be no benefit for us." Mu Feng shook his head and said, "Furthermore, if they were coming at our Mu Territory, it would be impossible to avoid it, even if we did not go there. Instead, the Liu Territory might use a method to alienate us from the other territories..."

Zhou Ye sighed and said, "What should we do then?"

"Gather the troops tomorrow. We will convene the strongest force we can from within the Mu Territory and participate in this Nine Territory Meeting."

Mu Feng's hands smashed onto the table as he said in a cold voice, "I do not believe that the Liu Territory could eat up my Mu Territory in one gulp. Also, please send a message to the Territory Lord, Tang Shan, and the other territory lords. I believe that they must be feeling a bit uneasy at this moment. If the Liu Territory dares to do anything funny, let's see what they are capable of when the remaining 8 territories are against it!"

Zhou Ye nodded. Although it was unclear what the Liu Territory was planning to do, they wouldn't dare offend all of the other 8 territories at once.

Mu Chen stared at Mu Feng, who was currently wearing a tense expression. His eyes also became serious. It seemed that Mu Feng could feel the danger from this situation as well. But no matter what, Mu Chen would not let the Liu Territory go that easily, if they dared to attack the Mu Territory...

The location of the Nine Territory Meeting was at a city known as Nine Territory City, located deep within the center of the Northern Spiritual Realm. The previous Nine Territory Meeting had also been held at this location, and thus this city held the perfect precedent for playing the host.

This area was considered neutral territory. It did not belong to any particular force, so, whenever a force calls for a Nine Territory Meeting, they will become the host and entertain the other forces.

Normally, this city was not that festive. However, it had instantly been thrust into the limelight, after the Liu Territory had sent out news about the Nine Territory Meeting. It was even livelier when compared to the Entry Competition held by the Northern Spiritual Academy a while ago.

After all, only a few people were eligible for the Entry Competition. Although many would yearn for entry, the notion of victory or defeat would be meaningless to most of them. Therefore, they were really only seeking a kind of fantastic and lively entertainment, when they headed there.

However, the Nine Territory Meeting was different. It was a setup related to the Northern Spiritual Realm. Once any kind of turbulence broke out, it would be impossible for all the forces within the Northern Spiritual Realm to avoid it.

Thus, it was likely that everyone within the Northern Spiritual Realm would be paying attention to this matter, as it would affect them personally.

When Mu Feng and his troops arrived at the Nine Territory City, the city was already flocking with people. They could vaguely see

numerous forces bring their men and surge within the city in waves.

This time, all the elites within the Mu Territory were sent out. Not only did Mu Feng lead the team personally, Zhou Ye, Mu Chen and the other 4 City Lords had followed as well. Even Wen Ling, who had recently advanced to a Rank 2 Spiritual Array Master, had followed along. Coupled with the hundreds of men, their imposing manner was quite powerful and mighty.

And just like that, a commotion broke out through the entire Nine Territory City due to the Mu Territory's troops arrival. Countless forces quickly moved to greet them, while Mu Chen returned the greeting as he laughed.

The Mu Territory's men stopped when they arrived at the stone temple located in the center of the city. Then, the 4 City Lords personally kept them in check as Mu Feng's gaze swept around. Afterwards, he seemed to have noticed other squadrons of elite troops. They were probably brought by the other Territory Lords. So it seems that those guys were also quite vigilant.

"Brother Mu."

As Mu Feng looked around, sounds of laughter rang out nearby. Mu Feng quickly turned his head around and saw Tang Shan coming over with his most trusted group of men.

"Brother Tang." Seeing this, Mu Feng quickly headed forward. At the same time, Mu Chen also followed and glanced behind Tang Shan. He was immediately startled. This was because he noticed that Tang Qian'Er had also followed Tang Shan over.

When Tang Qian'Er noticed Mu Chen, delight emerged instantly within her eyes. She blinked at him in amusement.

Mu Feng and Tang Shan quickly grouped up together. They whispered to each other with a serious expression.

"Why did you come as well," Mu Chen who was following behind

Mu Feng asked the girl beside him.

“Dad seemed to place a great importance on the Nine Territory Meeting, this time. Since I would have been bored if I stayed in the Tang Territory, I followed him out here.” Tang Qian’Er smiled. However, she immediately frowned. She glanced at the surroundings, before leaning over to Mu Chen and whispered, “I heard that the Liu Territory is planning something.”

“En. Otherwise, why would they spend so much effort to call for a Nine Territory Meeting?” Mu Chen smiled and said, “Although the Nine Territories all possess the right to call for a Nine Territory Meeting, no territory has ever called for it, since they established the Nine Territory’s power structure.”

“Have you heard of the name, Liu Jingshan, before,” Tang Qian’Er whispered. “My dad seemed to speak in earnest about him…”

“Liu Jingshan?”

Mu Chen’s heart jumped as his eyes narrowed. He whispered, “Liu Jingshan is Liu Qingtian’s father. Back in the day, he was the strongest person within the Northern Spiritual Realm. However, he seemed to have disappeared 3 years ago. Why would your father suddenly be mentioning him?”

Tang Qian’Er shook her head and said, “I don’t know either.”

Mu Chen frowned. An uneasy feeling filled his heart. Liu Jingshan was the strongest person within the Northern Spiritual Realm back then. His strength was at the Spirit Stage Late Phase. Moreover, it was said that he had been only a step away from advancing to the Three Heavens Stage. However, before that could happen, he suddenly disappeared one day. Rumors were spread about how his cultivation had gone wrong, and he had died due to serious injuries.

“Could that old man still be alive?”

Mu Chen's heart shook. If Liu Jingshan was still alive, wouldn't the Liu Territory have 2 Spirit Stage Late Phase powerhouses if he came? If he included Liu Zong, there will be 3 Spirit Stage powerhouses. No Territory within the Northern Spiritual Realm could fight individually against this obscene strength.

Furthermore, the most disturbing fact was that Liu Jingshan already possessed Spirit Stage Late Phase strength 3 years ago. If he was still alive... no...If he improved, wouldn't he have advanced to the Three Heavens Stage by now?

Thinking about this point, Mu Chen sucked in a breath of cold air. Three Heavens Stage. It had not been seen within the Northern Spiritual Realm in many years. If a powerhouse at this stage appears within the Liu Territory, no force could compete with them within the Northern Spiritual Realm.

Thoughts rapidly filled Mu Chen's mind, and he didn't look good. Seeing this, Tang Qian'Er secretly stuck out her tongue. She placed her hands behind her back and did not dare to say anything more.

When they entered the stone temple, Mu Chen saw Mu Feng looking over towards him. The latter's eyes were quite serious. Beneath that seriousness, there was a even a hint of uneasiness. It had been many years since Mu Chen had seen Mu Feng reveal such an expression.

It seemed that he too had obtained a bit of information from Tang Shan as well.

Within the stone temple, the area was extremely spacious. Numerous important figures were walking around. At the same time, the other territory lords had already arrived and were talking with each other. However, Mu Chen could detect that the atmosphere was a bit unnatural from their laughter sounds.

It seemed that this news had already been secretly spread out...

Mu Feng sat down on one of the stone seats as well. Mu Chen and Zhou Ye stood behind him. Then, Mu Chen glanced at the opposite side. At that location, there was a beautiful woman wearing a red dress, and her smile attracted numerous gazes. Moreover, Mu Chen was able to see a familiar figure behind her. It was Hong Ling. He had never expected that even she would follow her mother over to this place.

Hong Ling smiled when she noticed Mu Chen. Her peach-like eyes were moist and she displayed the enchanting aura that she inherited from her mother.

“Little girl, did you take a liking to the boy from the Mu Family?”

The beautiful woman’s gaze had fixated on Mu Feng ever since he entered. She gently gritted her teeth before glancing at the handsome boy beside Mu Feng. Then, she directed a question to Hong Ling.

“Mom, what are you saying,” Hong Ling blushed wildly as she said in embarrassment.

“That Mu Feng isn’t a good person. Thus, his son cannot certainly not be much better. If you don’t like him, then it’s best not to have any dealings with him,” The beautiful woman said in faint voice. A trace of resentment was slipped into her tone.

“You have obtained the entry to the Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy ,and you will have a promising future. When the time comes for you to attend, you will meet many youths that are far more outstanding than that boy from the Mu Family.”

Hong Ling glanced strangely at her mother. She was vaguely aware of her mother’s affair when she had been young. Back then, her mother seemed to have pursued Mu Feng, yet she never succeeded. In the end, her mother became too discouraged and married her father as she was disheartened. However, her father had died, due to a grave injury from a battle. After all these years, her mother had maintained being single. Although time could

change a lot of things, her mother still possessed a little bit of resentment towards Mu Feng.

“Mom, I just want to enter Myriad Phoenix Spiritual Academy, so I can train properly. As for the other affairs, we’ll talk about it later,” Hong Ling said in a faint voice. She glanced once more at the handsome boy beside Mu Feng, yet she had complex feelings within her heart.

The beautiful woman patted Hong Ling’s petite hands. Then, she stared bitterly at Mu Feng, who avoided looking over to that location, before retracting her gaze.

“Dad, that side has been looking at you ever since you’ve arrived.”

Mu Chen was also aware of the situation over there. He gently coughed and spoke.

“Shut up.” Mu Feng glanced fiercely at Mu Chen. This boy, he really is being insensitive.

Mu Chen smirked. It seems that his father was quite popular when he was young.

Within the temple, other territory lords gradually arrived as time passed. Aside from them, a few well-known forces within the Northern Spiritual Realm had also arrived.

As more troops arrived, the scene within the temple gradually quieted down. Then, sounds of footsteps came from behind the temple. At that location, the curtains were raised and numerous figures walked out from behind it. At the same time, laughter rang out from Liu Qingtian.

“Haha, I would like to thank everybody for giving face to my Liu Territory. Since everybody has arrived, I feel extremely honored!” Liu Qingtian had a big smile plastered on his face as he walked into the temple. Then, he sat down on the seat of honor. Behind him, Liu Zong, Liu Ming and Liu Mubai followed him closely.

When Liu Mubai entered, his gaze fell on Mu Chen’s form. A hint of coldness emerged within his eyes, and he curled his lips at Mu Chen.

Mu Chen. Today, this place will become the burial ground for both you and your father!

Chapter 100 – Liu Jingshan

Mu Chen was aware of Liu Mubai's cold gaze. He narrowed his eyes slightly, as his gaze gradually turned malevolent.

No matter what your Liu Territory is planning to do, I will not forgive you that easily if you dare to cause trouble for our Mu Territory!

Liu Mubai also understood the meaning within Mu Chen's eyes. The corner of his lips turned even colder. By you? Who do you think you are? I want to see just how pitiful you and your father will be later on.

Within the temple, everybody immediately cupped their hands, when Liu Qingtian appeared. Although the Northern Spiritual Realm was divided into nine territories, everybody knew that the Liu Territory was the force with the grandest background within the Northern Spiritual Realm. Moreover, they were probably the strongest force as well.

Mu Feng smiled faintly at Liu Qingtian as he cupped his hands. Nobody could tell whether or not he was angry.

"Ohoho, so Territory Lord Mu Feng also came? It's a pleasure," Liu Qingtian directed a smile towards Mu Feng. This smile seemed rather kindhearted. It seemed as if he had forgotten all about the conflicts they had in the past.

"Our ancestors were the ones that decided on the rules concerning the Nine Territory Meeting. Since the Liu Territory called for a meeting, it is only natural that I would come," Mu Feng smiled and replied.

Liu Qingtian nodded as he smiled.

Inside the temple, the other Territory Lords and the leaders of the forces all held a strange expression when they saw the two rivals' attitudes towards each other. Everybody in the Northern

Spiritual Realm knew that the Mu Territory and Liu Territory were enemies. These two territories were truly seeking to eliminate one another. Thus, this act of theirs was quite amusing.

However, underneath that amusement, they felt the anxiety within their hearts slowly growing. Liu Qingtian's behavior was somewhat abnormal.

"Ohoho, Territory Lord Liu. So why did you suddenly call for a Nine Territory Meeting and summon all of us? Are you going to announce a major event," Tang Shan asked as he smiled faintly.

The atmosphere within the temple instantly grew tense. Everybody's gaze shot towards Liu Qingtian, who was at the seat of honor. It was evident that Tang Shan's question was the question they all wanted to ask.

Liu Qingtian stared at the nervous gazes that were projected over the room. However, he smiled and gently patted the armrest. Then, he said calmly, "It's nothing much. I just have a proposal, so I wanted to seek everyone's opinion."

"Oh? What's the proposal?" Tang Shan smiled as he asked.

Liu Qingtian smiled and said, "Everybody should know this as well. The Northern Spiritual Realm is a rather weak realm within the Hundred Spirit Heavens. Therefore, we have no say in most situations. Putting it crudely, if another realm invades us in the future, the Northern Spiritual Realm won't be able to fight back. In the end, we would have to hand over our estates."

The temple was completely quiet. Everybody's gaze was sparkling, yet nobody followed up to speak. It was evident that they weren't sure what Liu Qingtian was planning to do.

"Ohoho. Territory Lord Liu is probably overthinking the situation. Our Northern Spiritual Realm is located at a remote place within the Hundred Spirit Heavens. Why would the other large realms take a liking to our place and spend great efforts to

seize the Northern Spiritual Realm?" Tang Shan said jokingly.

"But what if...," Liu Qingtian said faintly.

"If Territory Lord Liu has something to say, then just say it. Stop teasing us with platitudes," Mu Feng smiled and interjected.

Liu Qingtian glanced deeply at Mu Feng. He lifted the corner of his lips and responded, "What I wanted to suggest is actually quite simple. The Northern Spiritual Realm does not have a position within the Hundred Spirit Heavens , because we are not strong enough. And we do not have the strength because the Northern Spiritual Realm is completely divided. If we unite all the forces within the Northern Spiritual Realm, we would possess some ability even within the Hundred Spirit Heavens. Not only would nobody dare to invade us, we would even be able to expand our territory and obtain more resources. By then, who within the Hundred Spirit Heavens would dare to underestimate our Northern Spiritual Realm?"

The temple was silent. Shock flashed through numerous leaders' eyes. Liu Qingtian actually wanted to unite all the forces within the Northern Spiritual Realm? Is he crazy?

"How ambitious," Mu Chen mentally snorted. Could it be that Liu Qingtian was not satisfied with his own territory and wanted to become the overlord of the Northern Spiritual Realm?

Mu Feng and the other Territory Lords had calm expressions. At the same time, the leaders from famous forces did not speak a word either. All of the people here were crafty and cunning individuals, so how was it possible for them to not detect the hidden agenda underlying Liu Qingtian's plan?

"Ohoho, I wonder what everybody thinks about my proposal? If you think that it would not work, you could care to mention it. After all, we are thinking of the entire Northern Spiritual Realm's future," Liu Qingtian did not care about the strange atmosphere within the temple as he asked this.

“Territory Lord Mu Feng, what do you think,” Liu Qingtian’s gaze turned towards Mu Feng as he inquired.

Mu Feng’s eyes narrowed. He stroked the table in front of him and chuckled, “I wonder how we would decide on the rules for the union? For a union like this, there should be a chieftain who controls the entire situation, right? Who would this chieftain be?”

Since Mu Feng was able to confront Liu Qingtian without being in a disadvantageous position, he was naturally not a simple person. When this question was asked, everybody’s eyes turned sharp.

Who here wasn’t a leader within their own territories right now? Wouldn’t they be suppressed by others after the union? There is a saying, that one should prefer to be the head of a dog than the tail of a lion. They do not want to turn from being the leader to someone inferior...

“The union is simple. We will form a Northern Spiritual Alliance. We will attack and defend together with everyone. As for the position of the chieftain, I believe that Territory Lord Mu Feng is the most appropriate,” Liu Qingtian smiled.

At this moment, countless gazes instantly shifted towards Mu Feng. However, the latter’s expression did not change. He denied this claim, as he shook his head, “I am well aware of my abilities, and I am not capable of being the chieftain.”

Then, Liu Zong, who was standing behind Liu Qingtian, suddenly directed a wink at a certain direction. A force from over there immediately stood up and suggested, “I think the rules for the union suggested by the Liu Territory Lord may work. My White Horse Clan agrees to it. As for the position of the chieftain for the Northern Spiritual Realm, I believe that Territory Lord Liu would be suitable for it. After all, everybody is aware of the Liu Territory’s strength. Moreover, he is quite persuasive. What do all of you think about this?”

Mu Feng secretly cringed, and his eyes sank.

The other 7 Territory Lords looked away and exchanged gazes with one another. Although the Liu Territory was the most powerful force within the Northern Spiritual Realm, it wasn't strong enough to suppress them all. Thus, it was impossible for them to recognize Liu Qingtian as the chieftain.

Seeing none of the other Territory Lords follow along with that advice, the smile on Liu Qingtian's face faded away as he said faintly, "Or do you all of you believe that the Liu Territory isn't prestigious enough?"

"Territory Lord Liu. I, Lie Yan, have always respected you. However, I worked hard to obtain the Lie Territory. As for the union, I am not interested in it. Therefore, if Territory Lord Liu insists on forming a Northern Spiritual Alliance, I, Lie Yan, will not accompany you. I'll take my leave here." A middle-aged man suddenly stood up within the temple and cupped his head at Liu Qingtian as he spoke.

"Lie Yan, you dare disrespect our Liu Territory?!" Seeing this, Liu Ming immediately barked out in anger.

"Hmph, although I have always been polite to you, that does not mean that the Lie Territory is afraid of you!" Lie Yan originally had a fiery temper. Once he heard Liu Ming's words, he immediately retorted. Then, he waved his sleeves and walked away without saying another word.

Seeing this, everybody within the temple began to whisper. With Lie Yan as the lead, Liu Qingtian's wishful thinking had failed completely.

Mu Chen glanced at Liu Qingtian. However, he noticed that the latter had a faint smile on his face. The eyes that stared at Lie Yan were as vicious as a poisonous snake.

"Lie Yan, don't blame me for not reminding you. Once you exit

this place, you won't have another chance." Liu Qingtian lowered his head and organized his sleeves as he spoke.

"Haha. Liu Qingtian, I might be a little bit afraid of you, but you're not qualified to say those words to me," Lie Yan laughed scornfully. He was at the Spirit Stage Middle Phase. Although he was weaker than Liu Qingtian, it was simply a joke if the latter thought he could suppress him like this.

As his laughter faded away, he took a step out of the temple.

Boom!

Just when Lie Yan took a step out of the temple, a deep sound rang out from the entrance of the temple. Then, everybody noticed a figure flying backwards. It flew back and destroyed countless stone pillars before landing at the center of the temple.

Puchi.

Fresh blood sprayed out from the figure when he landed. A horrified expression emerged on his face.

WAHH.

Uproars immediately resounded out inside the temple. Numerous gazes stared in shock at Lie Yan, who was awkwardly splayed across the ground. Who could have hurt Lie Yan, who was at the Spirit Stage Middle Phase, in one move?

Mu Chen and Mu Feng's eyes narrowed instantly. They fixated their gaze on the entrance of the temple as a hint of uneasiness filled their hearts.

Liu Qingtian's face remained calm. However, a mocking smile appeared on his face.

Rustle.

The rustling of footsteps was heard from outside the temple. The commotion within the temple immediately quieted down. At this moment, everybody's gaze was focused at the entrance.

Under everybody's gaze, a thin, old figure slowly emerged at the entrance. He wore a grey robe and had an aged face. His eyes appeared as if they had sunk in deeply, like those of a withered corpse.

The grey-robed old man stood at the entrance with an expressionless face. His murky eyes slowly surveyed the people inside the temple. Then, he extended a pale hand out from his robe and coughed twice. He said with a hoarse voice: "Nobody can leave here without my permission today. The ones that leave here will-"

The grey-robed old man took another step forward. An extraordinary Spiritual Energy pressure that surpassed that of a Spirit Stage powerhouse emitted out from his bent body like a storm.

Bang Bang Bang!

The ones that were nearby could not withstand the Spiritual Energy pressure and shot back awkwardly.

"Die!"

Once the grey-robed old man spat out this word, the Spiritual Energy pressure was completely released. Cracks quickly spread out on the ground within the temple.

Outside of the temple, a fierce wind blew while the clouds gathered. At the same time, the Spiritual Aura within the world seemed to rampage.

At this moment, everybody's faces changed dramatically.

Mu Feng's hand gripped the armrest tightly. He clenched his teeth and a hoarse voice exited from the gaps of his teeth. With a bit of shock, the words creeped out one after another.

"Liu Jingshan...Three...Heavens... Stage!"

Table of Contents

- The Great Ruler
  - Synopsis
  - Acknowledgement
  - Chapter 1 – Northern Spiritual Academy
  - Chapter 2 – The Boy Kicked Out From the Spiritual Road
  - Chapter 3 – Mu Territory
  - Chapter 4 – The Great Pagoda Art
  - Chapter 5 – The Great Thousand World
  - Chapter 6 – Spiritual Energy Amplification
  - Chapter 7 – Mu Yuan
  - Chapter 8 – Liu Yang
  - Chapter 9 – Confrontation
  - Chapter 10 – Academy Competition
  - Chapter 11 – Tan Qingshan
  - Chapter 12 – Action
  - Chapter 13 – Fighting Against Liu Yang
  - Chapter 14 – Spiritual Movement Stage Middle Phase
  - Chapter 15 – Spirit Destruction Bead
  - Chapter 16 – Heaven Class
  - Chapter 17 – Rank 3 Spirit Convergence Array
  - Chapter 18 – Foundation
  - Chapter 19 – Limitless Death Seal
  - Chapter 20 – Seal Formed
  - Chapter 21 – Disturbance at the Training Grounds
  - Chapter 22 – Might of the Death Seal
  - Chapter 23 – The True Power of the Limitless Death Seal
  - Chapter 24 – Promise
  - Chapter 25 – Spiritual Beast's Soul Essence
  - Chapter 26 – Veteran Hunter
  - Chapter 27 – Plunder
  - Chapter 28 – Cooperation
  - Chapter 29 – Jaded Essence Tree
  - Chapter 30 – Hunting Apes in Valley
  - Chapter 31 – Rouse the Tiger to Eat the Wolf
  - Chapter 32 – Spoils of War

Chapter 33 – Returning to Camp
Chapter 34 – Liu Ming
Chapter 35 – The Second Limitless Death Seal
Chapter 36 – Predicament
Chapter 37 – Setting a Trap
Chapter 38 – Revenge Kill
Chapter 39 – Mustard Seed Bracelet
Chapter 40 – Result
Chapter 41 – Cheating
Chapter 42 – Interception
Chapter 43 – The Person within the Rain, Ji Zong
Chapter 44 – Breaking the Array
Chapter 45 – Nine Netherbird
Chapter 46 – Seal
Chapter 47 – Spiritual Array
Chapter 48 – Talent
Chapter 49 – Taking Action
Chapter 50 – Black Eerie Swamp
Chapter 51 – Devouring Spirit Bee
Chapter 52 – Spirit Bug Flute
Chapter 53 – Collision
Chapter 54 – Black Poison Marsh
Chapter 55 – Plan
Chapter 56 – A Vicious Scheme
Chapter 57 – Seizing an Opportunity
Chapter 58 – Luring Bees
Chapter 59 – Arrival
Chapter 60 – The Strange Rock
Chapter 61 – The Mysterious Black Egg
Chapter 62 – Unusual Change
Chapter 63 – Divine Black Thundercloud
Chapter 64 – Evolution
Chapter 65 – Self-Destruct
Chapter 66 – The Change within his Body
Chapter 67 – A Page of Black Paper Seals the Spirit Bird
Chapter 68 – Spiritual Flame Array
Chapter 69 – Rank 2 Spirit Convergence Array
Chapter 70 – Participation
Chapter 71 – Joint Array Arrangement

Chapter 72 – Heart Array State
Chapter 73 – Seeded Entry
Chapter 74 – Chen Fan, Huo Yun
Chapter 75 – Spiritual Arts Room 3
Chapter 76 – Two Spiritual Arts
Chapter 77 – Harsh Training
Chapter 78 – Shape-Condensation
Chapter 79 – Results
Chapter 80 – Spirit Stage as a Sparring Partner
Chapter 81 – Entry Competition
Chapter 82 – Complete Victory
Chapter 83 – Battle for the Entries
Chapter 84 – Fierce Struggle Between a Tiger and a Dragon
Chapter 85 – Hidden Cards Revealed
Chapter 86 – Victory or Defeat
Chapter 87 – Selecting the Spiritual Academies
Chapter 88 – Conclusion
Chapter 89 – Failed Negotiations
Chapter 90 – Mang Yin Mountain
Chapter 91 – Persuasion
Chapter 92 – Teaming Up
Chapter 93 – Bloody Battle
Chapter 94 – Nine Heavenly Lightning Spiritual Array
Chapter 95 – Black Scroll
Chapter 96 – Suppression and Breakthrough
Chapter 97 – Spiritual Rotation Stage Late Phase
Chapter 98 – Uneasy Silence
Chapter 99 – Nine Territory Meeting
Chapter 100 – Liu Jingshan